



RED PACKET SERVER

BOOK 07

Zhi Xin

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Red Packet Server

(超级红包群)

by

Zhi Xin

(知新)

Synopsis

On a certain day, Ye Zichen was dragged into a deities' chat group. These deities liked to brag, and also liked to send red packets.

Ever since then, Ye Zichen's life has had unbelievable changes.

The God of Fortune sent a red packet. I'm going to snatch it! Wow, I got a large gold ingot.

Taibai Jinxing sent a red packet, I'm going to snatch it as well! Wow, I got a thousand years of cultivation.

Super WeChat Red Envelope Group, with a swipe of my hands, I got them red packets.

Stop messing around, I'm going to snatch red envelopes now!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Selutu @ [Volare Novels](#)

Translation Editing by Khuja & etvolare @ [Volare Novels](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 601 – Bribery and Threats

Ye Zichen fell into silence when he saw the message.

Someone would have protected me in the hall...

Who could it be!?

The only possibility he could think of was Su Yiyun. However, he quickly erased that thought. If it was Ol' Three from before, he might do that, but now, he's the Formation Grandmaster of the Demon Realm.

He is no longer the him of the past.

"Never mind, I don't want to know who that person is. Oh, I heard about the ley line from Black Dragon. Do you know what that is?" Ye Zichen asked.

System Notification: The Ley Line is the heart of the Three Realms.

"Explain it properly so I can understand," Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

System Notification: The Ley Line can be described as the node tying the Upper Three Reams and Lower Three Realms together. The Jade Emperor of the Heavenly Court and the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven of the Underworld had already reached a level where they could ascend over ten thousand years ago. The reason there was no tribulation for them to ascend is mainly because this 'heart' of the Three Realms was sealed.

"Why did the Yellow Emperor seal it back then?" Ye Zichen frowned as he considered the information.

System Notification: It's so that those of the Upper Three Realms would be unable to easily torment those of the Lower Three Realms. You might not know, but those of the Lower Three Realms are essentially insects in the eyes of the ones in the Upper Three

Realms. Countless clans were harmed in the Endless Beast Realm, and the strongest amongst them were captured as pets. The better-looking men and women merely became their sex toys. The Yellow Emperor went and searched for the Ley Line because he could not accept all that anymore. He used the Great Technique of the Stars to seal it. Xuan-Yuan Xiang knows all of that. You can just ask her about it later.

Ye Zichen nodded. If I was faced with that sort of situation, I might have done the same.

“Wait, no! I’m clearly the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, why do you seem to know even more than me!?”

System Notification: Who knows...

Seeing the system give such an ambiguous answer, Ye Zichen merely squinted his eyes and put it aside for the moment.

“Then what should I do after these three days. Black Dragon wants to know about where the ley line is, and he is certain that I know where it is. If I don’t tell him, then he’ll torture me to death. What do you think I should do?”

System Notification: I know, but I can’t tell you.

“You’re f*cking screwing me over,” Ye Zichen cursed the system with a glare.

System Notification: This isn’t the time for the ley line to be shown to the world yet. Just do what you’re supposed to do these coming days. We’ll see about the rest later.

“Ugh...”

Yet, before Ye Zichen could form a reply, the system notifications began to disappear.

Judging from my past experience of chatting with the system, the guy doesn’t want to talk anymore.

He chucked his phone to the side bitterly. Ahh, although the

system seems unreliable, the only choice I have is to rely on it.

...

“Who!?” Su Yiyun, who was within a spiritual stone filled room and figuring out spiritual formations, looked up vigilantly, then instantly put up several defensive formations in the room.

A figure walked out of the corner of the room. It passed through the formation seals without any problems, and sat down on a chair near Su Yiyun.

“Black Dragon will execute Ye Zichen three days later. Please help me delay it for a while.”

“What a joke. The Yellow Emperor is the arch nemesis of our Demon Realm. You want me to help you delay it for some time? Don’t be delusional,” Su Yiyun laughed coldly. “Who are you to act so outrageously here. Hurry up and leave, otherwise, I’ll kill you!”

“I’ve been occupied with some matters recently, so I can’t spare the effort to come around. I might not be able to arrive the moment Black Dragon decides to execute him. I’ll leave everything to you.”

With that, the black figure slowly disappeared from the room once more.

Su Yiyun watched the figure leave with a dark look. At the same time, a squad of demon guards also arrived outside his room.

“Lord Su, was it you who shouted just now...?”

“Go patrol elsewhere. I was just seeing things,” Su Yiyun replied faintly.

After sending the guards away, he shook his head and looked down, only to find the formation he was working on for more than half a month had already been completed. Just who was that!?

Three days passed in the blink of an eye, and Ye Zichen arrived at the Demon Dragon Palace once again.

Black Dragon was smiling as if spring had come once more. He had waited for this moment for far too long. It was the day the ley line was going to be shown to the world once more.

The reason that he was so certain was because he refused to believe Ye Zichen would rather die.

“Little friend Ye, long time no see. Have you gotten used to living in our demon realm?”

“It’s alright,” Ye Zichen smiled. “Lord Black Dragon should know that I have the blood of demons within me as well, so I don’t have an issue with the demonic energy.”

“I actually forgot that little friend Ye is a Fallen! It seems like you are fated to be with us demons. I promise right now that as long as you tell me the location of the ley line, you will gain the position of the Demonic Son.”

What!?

Everybody was shocked.

The position of the Demonic Son was incomparable, and which is essentially equal to that of Black Dragon’s.

Gu Li clenched his fists sullenly. Even I, the reincarnation of Chiyou, did not end up in that position, the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor actually...

“Demonic Son. Wow, that sounds rather cool,” Ye Zichen chuckled.

Black Dragon smiled at Ye Zichen’s reaction.

“Naturally. The Demonic Son is a supreme existence amongst the Demon Realm. Even I would have to treat you with respect. What’s more, the entire Demon Realm would be yours in the future. Little friend Ye, you have to remember, the Demon Realm is one of the Upper Three Realms. Think about just how glorious it would be for you to become the master of one of the Upper Three Realms!” With

that, Black Dragon smiled once again. “If you want, then everything in the Demon Realm would be yours. Everybody in the Demon Realm would have to obey you. You can also bring your friends and family over. You would be king here, no one would dare to defy you. But... If you don’t tell me, then you should know just how merciless the Demon Realm is. You, and your women, your family, your friends, and everyone who has been in contact with you would die!”

“Then if I want Gu Li to commit suicide, he has to do that as well?” Ye Zichen glanced at Gu Li.

“Of course,” Black Dragon answered without any hesitation.

Gu Li clenched his fists tightly under the cover of his robe. If Ye Zichen truly becomes the master of the Demon Realm, then he would have no place in the Demon Realm any more.

I have to stop him...

“Lord Black Dragon!”

“Shut up!” Black Dragon’s eyes gleamed with coldness. “This is no place for you to speak.”

Gu Li lowered his head sullenly. Black Dragon also revealed a warm smile towards Ye Zichen, “I wonder what do you think? The location of the ley line...”

“The location of the ley line...” Ye Zichen smiled naughtily and raised his eyebrows. Everyone in the hall looked towards him, and Black Dragon’s eyes were actually filled with clear interest.

He has already been at the complete stage for too long. He wanted to become stronger.

The sealed ley line was the only thing stopping him. He had to find the ley line.

“Where is it!?” Black Dragon interrogated Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen smirked and said, “I don’t know!”

Chapter 602 – Delay

Time seemed to stand still within the Demon Dragon palace.

However, Black Dragon's expression seemed to have changed over ten times within a time of thirty seconds.

“Little friend Ye, this joke isn't funny at all,” Black Dragon maintained his warm smile, and looked towards Ye Zichen. “Don't forget, this is the Demon Realm you're in.”

“Of course I know that,” Ye Zichen shrugged. “But I really don't know where the ley line is. I've been trying to contact the Yellow Emperor these past three days, but he's been ignoring me!”

“Don't blame me for not giving you a chance. Tell me! Where is the ley line!?” Black Dragon's tone had already turned sullen. He stared at Ye Zichen, and tried to pressure him into saying it.

“I wouldn't know even if you give me ten thousand more chances. Seriously, I'm not lying, I really don't know where the ley line is!” Ye Zichen sighed. Why doesn't anyone believe the truth these days. “How about giving me two more weeks, and let me try to see if I can contact the Yellow Emperor?”

“Someone come!” Black Dragon roared angrily. Two men amongst the Twelve Demon Sovereigns walked over, and grabbed hold of Ye Zichen. “Grant him death!”

Black Dragon had already lost all his patience, but he still wanted to make a final gamble.

In his opinion, everyone would choose to submit when faced with death. He wanted to use this way to get the information he wants from Ye Zichen.

However, he was still going to be disappointed...

Ye Zichen truly didn't know the location of the ley line.

A dark sphere of light had already appeared in the baldie's hand.

The sphere seemed to possess a bit of devouring ability, so several cracks appeared in the space around it.

“Wait!”

At that very moment, Su Yiyun stood up from his chair.

Everyone looked towards him. Ye Zichen’s eyes also twitched, and he began to wonder.

Could it be that...

“Master Su, what do you mean by this?” Black Dragon’s expression was still sullen. He was in a terrible mood as they have not yet located the ley line.

“Since Lord Black Dragon wants the ley line, killing him isn’t going to help with anything. In the end, you still wouldn’t find the location of the ley line,” Su Yiyun smiled.

“Then is Master Su saying that I have to worship him? Heh, I’m not that sort of person,” Black Dragon squinted his eyes as he gave a cold laugh.

“Hmm, Brother Su was university roommates with Ye Zichen in the Modern Realm, they were like brothers there. Brother Su, you should explain what you’re doing, right?” Gu Li smiled sinisterly.

Black Dragon also looked towards Su Yiyun.

“Gu Li, what do you mean by that!? Su Yiyun is my man! He’s the formation master I brought over to the Demon Realm. What right do you have to randomly slander him!?” Li Min’e stood up angrily.

“Heh, only Brother Su knows what he’s thinking. None of us can read minds. People all have their secrets. If Su Yiyun doesn’t want to save Ye Zichen, then why did he stop us from capturing the Yellow Emperor so many times, and even go as far as to plead mercy for him right now?” Gu Li smiled.

LI Min’e bit her lips, and walked beside Su Yiyun to grab his arm, “Su, tell them that you aren’t doing it to save him!”

“Who says I’m going to save him!?” Su Yiyun laughed coldly, then took out a sharp dagger. “Brother Bael killing him with a Darkness Devouring Sphere is being too nice to him. There is a torture technique called Lingering Death in the Modern Realm. It is one that involves slicing across his body using a small knife, causing him to be unable to die, yet feel pain that is beyond death. Perhaps, he might tell us the location of the ley line while begging us to kill him off. Isn’t that great for everyone? What’s more, even if he doesn’t say anything, and just bleeds to death, we don’t lose anything, and it’ll make us feel pretty good!”

“It seems like we are indeed too kind compared to Master Su,” Bael couldn’t help but shake his head with a smile.

“I really didn’t think that Master Su had this up his sleeve,” Black Dragon smiled faintly. “Then we’ll do as Master Su said. If you please!”

Su Yiyun nodded, then walked in front of Ye Zichen with the knife.

At that moment, Ye Zichen’s spiritual energy was already sealed. He couldn’t use any spiritual techniques and couldn’t even summon his armor.

He stared straight at Su Yiyun who was smiling devilishly, and watched on as Su Yiyun slapped the dagger against his face.

“Meeting me is your misfortune!”

“Ol’ Three!” Ye Zichen frowned.

Su Yiyun slapped him and cursed, “Who’s your Ol’ Three!? Don’t try and curry favor with me.”

Ugh.

Su Yiyun pierced the dagger into Ye Zichen’s arm, causing a bit of blood to spurt out.

Ye Zichen grit his teeth, while a huge droplet of sweat fell down

from his face.

“Lord Black Dragon asked you about the location of the ley line. If you don’t want to suffer so much, then say it. That stab was merely the beginning, so consider properly,” Su Yiyun wiped the blood from the dagger on Ye Zichen’s face.

Ye Zichen looked up at Su Yiyun, “I don’t know.”

“That’s strong, but that’s useless here!”

Ugh.

Su Yiyun stabbed into Ye Zichen’s arm once again, and it was the exact same place where the first stab was. The dualism of the pain was more than he could handle, causing him to scream out.

“You’re going to speak?”

Su Yiyun maintained his coldness.

All of the Demon Sovereigns felt a chill down their spine. They never expected Master Su, who was normally rather easy-going, to actually show such a vicious side.

Only Gu Li maintained his mocking smile of disdain.

“I have no idea. Ahhh!”

The moment Ye Zichen finished his response, Su Yiyun stabbed into his other arm.

Blood continuously flowed down Ye Zichen’s arms and down to the floor. Not long later, a pool had surfaced on the ground.

“You sure you aren’t going to say it? I won’t pierce it into you where it’ll be critical. I’ll mess with you slowly. We have plenty of time to spend.”

Ye Zichen was already covered in sweat. It looked as if he was just dragged out of water. He panted heavily, while he glanced at Su Yiyun with his bloodshot eyes.

“Peh.”

Ye Zichen spat on Su Yiyun's face.

Su Yiyun wiped the saliva off his face darkly.

“Spit on me, spit on me. Try spitting on me again!” Su Yiyun stabbed into Ye Zichen's thigh thrice.

Ye Zichen opened his eyes wide and cried out in pain.

Even Bael couldn't stand it anymore. The scene was too pitiful...
“Master Su, let Old Bael end him!”

“Back down!” Su Yiyun glared at him. ‘He actually dared to spit on me. Only by messing with him until he dies can I satiate my rage.’”

Then, just as he was about to stab down once more, a white-robed man appeared in the hall.

“I'm here!”

Chapter 603 – Unable to Withstand Even a Single Blow

Su Liu'er frowned as she looked at the fatty who stood in front of the portal to the Demon Realm. It had already been several days since Ye Zichen had gone through the portal. As she thought more about it, she did feel a bit bad for making him go to that sort of dangerous place all alone.

Yet, when she decided to go to the Demon Realm, Fatty Yin had appeared in their lands and stopped her and her group.

“Senior, just what are you trying to achieve by stopping us!?”

Yuan Hong, the Great Sage and co. also stood beside Su Liu'er. They were planning to go to the Demon Realm together, but they were stopped by Fatty Yin.

“Are you trying to seek your death by going to the Demon Realm?” Fatty Yin glanced at them with a solemn look on his chubby face.

“Hey, you're friends with Ye Zichen, right? We're going to go save him,” Su Zhu said.

Fatty Yin glanced at her, then smiled randomly. “Of course I believe you. I, Lord Fatty, actually managed to get such a pretty wife. I hope that guy didn't trick me, otherwise, I'll beat him up no matter where he is.”

“Why are you looking at me like that?” Su Zhu held herself by the shoulders, then stepped backwards.

Fatty Yin rubbed his chin with a smile, “Don't be so scared of me. You're my wife in the future. We don't know each other too well right now, so let's get to know each other better?”

“If you want to get to know her, then go on. Don't try stop Old Sun from saving my bro!” The Great Sage stepped forward, and

slammed down his staff onto the ground. “Hurry up and move aside before Old Sun attacks.”

“Don’t even think about it. Nobody here can go there,” Fatty Yin strengthened his tone, and stared at everyone with his green pea-like eyes.

That guy emphasized that the Great Sage, who was in the golden armor, and Yuan Hong, as people I cannot allow to go over at any cost.

Actually, Fatty Yin had asked that guy why that was the case. He was still able to recall the wry and self-mocking smile on that person’s face.

“I finally returned here to change history.”

That was all that person had said before patting Fatty’s shoulder and leaving. The reason Fatty Yin had come to the land of the fox yaos, was to fulfill what that guy had asked him...

To stop them!

“I, Old Sun, have a terrible temper...” Great Sage Sun scratched his face, then pointed forward with his Ruyi Jingu Bang. “Hurry up and move out of the way, or I’m going to be merciless!”

...

At the Demonic Dragon Palace.

The appearance of the white-shirted man surprised everyone.

Su Yiyun frowned, then subconsciously moved backwards.

“Zeze, you’re in a rather pitiful state,” the man helped Ye Zichen sit up, he then took out a jade vial. From it, he took out a jade green pill and pushed it into Ye Zichen’s mouth.

Then, he looked up towards Black Dragon up on the throne, and smiled, “Black Dragon.”

“Who are you!?” Black Dragon glared at the person. Yet, the face

of the man was a blur, so he couldn't tell that the man looked like at all.

However, from the man's tone, Black Dragon could tell that the man was very familiar with him.

"Do you know where this is? You actually dared to come here to act so outrageously."

"It's the Demon Realm, I've been here quite a few times," the white-robed man smiled, then looked towards Gu Li with squinted eyes. "I wanted to point you in the right direction, but it seems like I thought too much into it."

Black Dragon looked at Gu Li with a confused frown. He haven't been here for long, and no one else had come to the Demon Realm recently.

This man actually knows me, as well as Gu Li.

"Ahhh..." Ye Zichen, who had his eyes closed, begun to cough intensely. Not long later, he opened up his eyes. His wounds had already fully healed, and it was only because of the blood on his clothes that he looked absolutely terrible.

"You're awake," the white-robed man smiled.

Ye Zichen looked up in confusion at the man, "You..."

"Came to save you," the white-shirted man patted his shoulders, then smiled towards Lord Black Dragon. "I'm going to take him away. You got a problem with that?"

"Ridiculous!" Black Dragon stood up from the chair and laughed mockingly. "You want to take him away just like that? Are you taking us, the Demon Realm, seriously!?"

"I really am not," the man shrugged with a smile. He grabbed Ye Zichen by the shoulder and began to walk out. "Don't get in my way. If anyone dares to attack me, then this won't end as easily as this."

“Outrageous! Get them!” Black Dragon shouted the moment the white-shirted man finished speaking.

The Twelve Demon Sovereigns left their seats at once, and blocked off the door to the palace.

“Ridiculous,” the white-shirted man curled his lips, and snorted. “Scram!”

Bang.

The Twelve Demon Sovereigns standing in front of them, were sent flying, then fell onto the floor and coughed up blood. Both the Twelve Demon Sovereigns and Black Dragon had expressions of absolute shock.

These are the strongest of our demons’ fighting force, yet, they were defeated by a mere word....

They couldn’t even withstand a single hit!

Just how strong is this person!?

Even the Jade Emperor nor Great Emperor Equalling Heaven wouldn’t be able to do that!

“You’re a person from up there,” Black Dragon gripped the armrests of his throne with a tremble.

The white-shirted man turned around and shrugged, “Perhaps, but regardless of where I’m from, I can tell you very clearly that you won’t be able to stop me.”

“It seems like there’s something interesting going on here.”

At that very moment, a short young man with a strand of dog-tail grass in his mouth suddenly appeared in front of the Demonic Dragon Palace.

The young man had pitch black skin, curly purple hair, and eyes in the shape of crescent moons.

“Mo Di!”

Ye Zichen was surprised. This person was someone he had met in the Modern Realm, he never expected to see him here.

“Oh, it’s the son of a saint and a demon. What a coincidence,” the young man spat out the strand of grass and waved towards Ye Zichen. “Why did you come here to the Demon Realm? Oh wait, I forgot to comfort you. The place you lived seems to have been frozen, right?”

“Kui Yin!” the white-shirted man smiled. However, Ye Zichen could sense that he was not as calm as he was while facing Black Dragon and the demons.

“You’re calling me?” the young man squinted his eyes and looked towards the white shirted man in confusion. I’ve never used this name before, but...

It sounds pretty nice.

“Sure, you like it, right? I gave you the name back then as well.”

“Although I don’t really remember you, but I like this name quite a lot. Alright, then I’ll be called Kui Yin from now on,” Kui Yin shook his head with a smile. Then, he slid his right foot backward, and released a suppressing aura from his body. “Even though you gave me my name, you... still have to die!”

Chapter 604 – Unchangeable History

“Lord Black Dragon, I’ve never seen him in the Demon Realm before,” one of the Twelve Demon Sovereigns spoke up.

Black Dragon nodded.

He had already been the master of the Demon Realm for over a thousand years, yet he had never even heard of someone like that.

Yet, judging from the person’s aura, he surpassed the Twelve Demon Sovereigns, and even Black Dragon, the master of the Demon Realm.

“Can he equal the white-shirted person?” Su Yiyun couldn’t help but ask Black Dragon.

Black Dragon raised his eyebrows as he thought, “He might be able to.”

“I see!” Su Yiyun nodded faintly, then stopped speaking with a dark expression.

Meanwhile, the white-shirted man was smiling wryly in self-mockery when he saw Kui Yin getting ready, “Ahh, it was like this back then as well. Although you do not have a good impression of the Demon Realm, it is still your home.”

He slowly raised his hand, and as he did so, the laws of the entire universe seemed to swirl around him.

“I could not match you in strength back then, but now...”

He flicked his hand and reached towards Kui Yin before he finished, “You can’t stop me!”

Kui Yin, who had already gotten ready, felt the air of the entire realm press down on his body. He tried his best to break through the restraint...

But, the white-shirted man merely pointed at him.

Kui Yin instinctively guarded with his arms.

Dong.

He slid backward as his feet dragged out two long lines on the ground. Purple blood dripped from the corner of his mouth, and his crescent-shaped eyes finally opened up, revealing a heated gaze.

“Again!”

Kui Yin, like all other demons, was someone who relied on brute strength.

They were a race that was created with a powerful physique. They believed that raw physical power gave them strength, and in from their perspective, only the hypocritical scum of the God Realm relied on spiritual arts and techniques instead of physical strength.

They only believed in their own physical strength...

Physical power above all else!

No matter what spiritual technique the enemy may use, just shatter it with one punch.

Every step Kui Yin made created a new crack in the ground. Yet, the white-shirted man merely watched on indifferently as Kui Yin ran towards him.

Boom.

The white-shirted man's fist met Kui Yin's.

Crack.

Kui Yin's arm bent out with a loud sound, while it instantly seemed to distort as he flew backward.

Dong. Dong. Dong.

His body collided and broke through the structures outside the Demonic Dragon Palace, before he finally landed, he had fainted in

the ruins of the buildings.

Black Dragon and the Twelve Demon Sovereigns felt their eyes twitch at the sight before them...

Is he even human!?

“I love using my fist as well.”

The white-shirted man shook his head and the golden aura behind him began to fade. Ye Zichen frowned. For some reason, he could feel a hint of familiarity when the man swung his fist.

That feeling...

Ye Zichen looked down at the Bone Ring on his own finger. The image behind that man seems to be from the dragon race's secret manual, which the old dragon god taught me.

Could he be a dragon?

Whoosh...

At that very moment, a flash of golden light sparked in the distance.

The man looked up in confusion as the spot of light neared.

“Great Sage!”

“Bro, I, Old Sun, have come!” The Great Sage soared over on his cloud, with Yuan Hong, Su Liu'er and co. behind him.

“Who told you all to come over!? Did Fatty reach the portal too late?” The white-shirted man shouted in his frustration.

The Great Sage rolled his eyes, then ignored the man and walked over to pat Ye Zichen's shoulder. “Thank god you're fine! What's with the blood on you?”

“It belongs to others,” Ye Zichen smiled at the Great Sage.

The Great Sage nodded in satisfaction, “Good, good.”

“Why did you come here!?” The white-shirted man seemed a bit

worried as he looked around to search for Fatty Yin.

“My lil’ sis made the fatty stay behind in the back mountains of the fox yaos.”

Dong.

The white-shirted man stomped on the ground, then turned around to look darkly at Black Dragon and co. The demons all lowered their heads. They really couldn’t do anything against him.

“Liu’er-jie.”

“Where’s my little sis?” Su Liu’er swept her gaze around, but did not see Su Yan anywhere.

“She...” Just as Ye Zichen began to speak, the white-shirted man walked over in front of the group with a frown.

“Go on back first. I’ll save Su Yan later!”

“No!” Su Liu’er refused determinedly. “I have to bring my lil’ sis back now.”

With that, nine white tails appeared behind her, while her clothes slowly began to turn a pale blue.

Whoosh...

Cold wind swept up the sand and pebbles from the ground and rushed into the Demonic Dragon Palace.

Su Liu’er stepped forward as she stared coldly at Gu Li, “Return my little sister to me.”

“Can you guys stop messing around now? Come with me,” the white-shirted man grabbed Su Liu’er’s arm and tried to drag her backwards.

“Let go of me!” Su Liu’er glared at him. Although she clearly knew that he was not someone she could compare up to, she would allow nobody to stop her from saving her little sister!

“Liu’er-jie, can you just listen to me for once? Leave quickly! I’ll

definitely save Su Yan, and I won't let her face any danger!" The white-shirted man pleaded with Su Liu'er.

Su Liu'er struggled out of his grasp, "I'll save my own little sister myself since Ye Zichen didn't!"

Ye Zichen stood off to the side and watched the situation unfold speechlessly. What's going on? That man can clearly destroy everything.

Wouldn't it be over with him just killing all the demons? Why is he dragging Su Liu'er back?

Also, why is he calling Su Liu'er Liu'er-jie? What the hell is up with that?

Also, why does he have that censor on his face? Is he that scared of being seen?

"Hurry up and hand my little sister over," Su Liu'er glared at Black Dragon, Gu Li, and the other demons as the temperature dropped further. At that moment, there was already a layer of frost coating the inside of the palace.

Su Liu'er's nine tails danced in the howling winds.

Black Dragon squinted his eyes.

"Nine Tail Heavenly Fox, isn't this a primordial divine beast from the upper Yao Realm? Why did you come down to these lower three realms?"

But oh well, she's merely halfway into the Immortal King stage, that isn't really that much of a threat to me. Only the white-shirted man feels dangerous.

"Gu Li, let the girl go."

Yet, just as Black Dragon was about to give in, the Great Sage couldn't endure it anymore, "Why waste our breath with talking to the demons? Just smack them all down!"

With that, he immediately charged into the Demonic Dragon

Palace, and Su Liu'er also followed closely without any hesitation.

“Don’t!” The white-shirted man shouted. He reached out in an attempt to bring them back...

“A puny yao actually dares to step into the Demon Realm? You must have a death wish!”

“Su Liu'er,” Yuan Hong immediately charged in front of Su Liu'er and used his body as a shield.

The white-shirted man took a step back, looking very dejected.

For some reason, two huge bloody holes appeared on both the Great Sage and Yuan Hong. They stumbled, then fell to the ground as the light in their eyes went out.

“Why!? Why did it end up like this!?”

Chapter 605 – Escaping from the Demon Realm

“Yuan Hong!”

Su Liu'er cried out as she saw Yuan Hong, who had defended her, fall down in a pool of blood.

“Su Liu'er is the woman I, Yuan Hong, have my eyes on. Whoever dares to attack her is making an enemy out of me!”

“Hey, Liu'er, we've known each other for so long already. Give me a chance.”

“Don't be so mean to me. I'll listen to you even if you don't scold me.”

...

Scenes flashed through her mind. She is the clan chief of the fox yaos, and everything she did was related to whether the clan would decline or prosper.

She had given up on her personal life for the sake of her clan.

Yet, he had never complained, not even once, and he had merely guarded silently by her side.

It had been over ten thousand years, and even an ice-cold heart would have been melted by Yuan Hong's fire-like passion.

“Yuan Hong, don't die,” Su Liu'er hugged his neck, while droplets of tears dripped onto his face.

“Why are you crying? I feel like I'm rather lucky. Although I'm dying, I'm dying for you,” Yuan Hong slowly lifted his hand to try and wipe away the tears from her eyes, but the light in his own eyes slowly began to dim.

“Yuan Hong, I'll promise you. If you live through this, then I'll go on a date with you. I'll put the fox yao clan aside, I'll leave it to

Lil' Zhu, I'll marry you, okay?" Su Liu'er cried uncontrollably.

Hearing that, Yuan Hong chuckled, "Sure, if I don't die, then I'll make the entire three realms know that you're my wo..."

Clap.

The hand which was caressing Su Yan's face fell limply onto the ground.

Su Liu'er's pupils contracted as she hugged Yuan Hong's body, which was already had started turning cold.

"Yuan Hong, you can't die! Didn't you say that you'll marry me?" Yuan Hong..."

"Great Sage," Ye Zichen had scrambled to Sun WUkong's side frantically. He took out some healing pills and stuffed them continuously into the Great Sage's mouth. "Great Sage, you're the Victorious Fighting Buddha! You're supposed to know the Seventy-Two Transformations and have seventy-two lives!"

"I, Old Sun... Didn't expect to be caught off guard here," the Great Sage chuckled, then he looked towards the sky with a wry smile. "I... really want to see you again."

"Why did this happen!? I clearly came back to change the future! Why!? Am..Am I really the scourge!?" The white-shirted man stared dumbly at the two people who had fallen down before him. This scene...

The same place, the same event.

Even what they said sounded so similar.

"Why..."

"Hmmph, yaos actually dare to act out of line in the Demon Realm. You must have a death wish."

A white-haired elder walked out of the palace. The elder wore a long purple robe with the images of poisonous insects embroidered on it. He also had a small beard, which he would caress whenever

he spoke.

“You...”

Su Liu'er and Ye Zichen looked towards the elder together with spiteful rage.

“Oh? Some yao scum are actually still alive,” the elder snorted.

Su Liu'er slowly put Yuan Hong flat onto the ground and stood up.

Her icy blue dress fluttered, while her hair also turned a pale blue.

Whoosh...

Raging winds swept forth with snowflakes, while the temperature dropped even further.

“Prepare to pay with your life for Yuan Hong!”

Su Liu'er glared at the elder.

The elder laughed indifferently, then slapped towards Su Liu'er. “You're just a mere insect, and yet you dare to talk to this old man like that? Die!”

Su Liu'er was unable to defend against the elder's slap of anger.

When Su Liu'er noticed the mountain-like difference between them, she gave up resisting.

Worst come to worst, I'll just go with Yuan Hong.

Boom.

A raging fluctuation of spiritual energy seemed to blow people off their feet.

Su Liu'er looked up and saw the white-shirted man stand in front of her.

“Go,” the white-shirted man waved at the group behind him.

Ye Zichen and Su Liu'er picked Yuan Hong and the Great Sage off

the ground, then disappeared from the Demonic Dragon Palace in a flash of light.

“Zeze, a Sky Supreme. There’s actually such a powerful being in the three realms?” the elder shook his head with a smile, then turned towards Black Dragon. “Are you the master of this realm?”

“Yes, senior,” Black Dragon nodded, but didn’t even dared to breathe.

The elder nodded, “Not bad, I can tell that you should have ascended already. Why didn’t you? Do you not want to give up the power here?”

“As a demonic junior, how would I dare to forget the teachings of my forefathers? It’s only because the ley line of these three realms was sealed, and I have been unable to locate it. That’s why I’ve remained here,” Black Dragon replied with a bow.

Although he didn’t know who the elder was, the elder’s strength was something that he could sincerely respect.

“Mm, ley line,” the elder nodded. “Don’t worry about the ley line. I’ll be staying here in the coming times. Also...”

“Senior, please,” said Black Dragon.

“I sense two auras from other realms here. Both of them are of yaos!” The elder replied.

“Yes,” Black Dragon nodded, then pointed towards Gu Li. “He caught them.”

The elder glanced over at Gu Li for a while.

“Human.”

“Senior, I am Chiyou’s reincarnation. I did stay with the humans before I awakened, but I have already turned my back on the dark side and became one of the Demon Realm’s citizens,” Gu Li hurriedly replied.

“Chiyou’s reincarnation... Turned your back on the dark side!”

The elder repeated quietly, then sighed. “Just what is right, what is wrong... Nobody can make that judgement. Go and release the two yaos. The experts earlier were here for them, right? Right now, this demon realm isn’t powerful enough, so you should not make an enemy out of an expert of that level. I already punished the reckless yaos, so release the rest.”

“Understood,” the demons nodded.

At that very moment, Kui Yin also crawled out of the ruins. He looked at the elder standing in front of the Demonic Dragon Palace with a smile, then dragged himself away silently.

...

Back in the land of the yaos, Fatty Yin was chatting with Su Zhu. However, although Su Zhu was replying to his words, she did not seem to be paying attention to him.

Whoosh.

The white-shirted man appeared with Su Liu’er and Ye Zichen.

Seeing that, Su Zhu hurried over.

When she saw the Great Sage and Yuan Hong, who Ye Zichen and Su Liu’er carried, she immediately covered her mouth to prevent herself from screaming, while her eyes filled with shock.

“Sis...” Su Zhu said. How’s this possible. Putting Yuan Hong aside from now, the Great Sage is one of the strongest beings in the Beast Region.

He’s even the Heavenly Court’s Victorious Fighting Buddha!

How could they...

Fatty Yin was also shocked. All of a sudden, he remembered the words the white-shirted man had told him, then slapped himself and cursed himself for being an idiot.

“I’m sorry,” Fatty Yin walked over with his head lowered.

The white-shirted man lifted his hand, then put it down with a sigh.

“Ye Zichen, contact the Heavenly Court!”

Chapter 606 – A Love-Hate Relationship

Report to the Heavenly Court?

Since the Great Sage is the Victorious Fighting Buddha of the Heavenly Court, then it's natural for me to find them, but I don't seem to recall his little brother Yuan Hong being related to the Heavenly Court?

What's more, this is the land of the fox yaos in the Endless Beast Region. The Heavenly Court and the Beast Region...

They don't even speak.

They fight!

Am I really going to report this to the Heavenly Court?

Ye Zichen felt a bit hesitant.

The white-shirted man immediately said to him once again, "Get Old Lord Taishang in the Heavenly Court, and Hua Tuo in the Underworld!"

With that, the white-shirted man walked beside Su Liu'er and glanced at her, before grabbing Yuan Hong from her arms.

"What are you doing!?"

"Saving him," the white-shirted man replied plainly.

Su Liu'er immediately handed Yuan Hong over and pleaded, "I beg you, please save him."

"Mm," a faint golden light enveloped the white-shirted man and the two injured people.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen got into contact with Old Lord Taishang.

"Old Lord!"

In order for Old Lord Taishang to get the message right away, Ye Zichen spammed him with several tens of messages, then directly sent a video chat request.

“I’m really busy right now. If it’s nothing special, then wait till I’m free.”

With that, Old Lord Taishang moved his hand over to turn off the chat. He still thought that Ye Zichen wanted the pill refinement secret manual for him. That was the most important thing to him, so he didn’t want to hand it over.

Ye Zichen naturally understood what Old Lord Taishang was thinking. “I don’t want the secret manual, I want to ask you to save someone.”

“Save someone? If it’s a normal mortal, then you’re enough. Why do you need me?” Old Lord Taishang raised his eyebrows. “What’s more, I specialize in pill refinement. The pills I refined aren’t suitable for mortals.”

“It’s to save the Great Sage.”

“The monkey?” Old Lord Taishang. “What happened to him? Is he dying? That’s great news. I never liked him.”

“Oh, then keep gloating. There’s no need for you then.” Ye Zichen turned off the video chat coldly, then sought out Hua Tuo of the underworld.

In terms of medical ethics, Hua Tuo was definitely one of the best people. Ye Zichen merely spoke about the situation briefly before Hua Tuo agreeing to hurry over as fast as possible.

After chatting with Hua Tuo, Ye Zichen noticed that Old Lord Taishang had sent him a bunch of messages.

“The monkey’s seriously going to die?”

“That’s impossible. He’s the monkey with the Fiery Eyes of Truth, he’s damn sturdy. How could he die?”

“Hey, is he seriously in trouble?”

“Hurry up and tell me your location. I’ll come over there immediately.”

The reason Old Lord Taishang had spoke like that during the video chat was mainly because he didn't really believe what Ye Zichen said. He knew very well just how strong the Great Sage was. The Great Sage was completely fine even in Old Lord Taishang's pill furnace, and even managed to get a pair of Fiery Eyes of Truth out of it.

He really didn't believe that the Great Sage could come into such danger.

Yet, when he saw how cold Ye Zichen was when he turned off the video chat, he felt something amiss...

That's why he sent so many messages to Ye Zichen.

"The back mountains in the land of the Endless Beast Region's fox yaos, on the Central Continent outside the Immortal Region."

Ye Zichen left the chat after sending the message, and instead sat on the ground to stare closely at the white-shirted man who was keeping the Great Sage and Yuan Hong alive.

He... should be the system, right?

Ye Zichen muttered silently. Yet, a lot of his actions confused Ye Zichen.

He calls Su Liu'er Liu'er-jie.

He seems to know everything about what I will experience in the future, as if he has been through all that.

I've never been able to see his face, since it seemed to be hidden and censored.

Just who is he!?

Ye Zichen muttered to himself.

At that very moment, a spiritual fluctuation occurred at the portal.

Everyone in the back mountains immediately looked towards the

portal vigilantly. Since we were causing trouble in the Demon Realm earlier, are they attacking now that some of us are injured?

“We meet again.”

The people who walked out of the portal were Gu Li and Su Yiyun, while Su Yan and Lu Lu stood beside them.

“Lil’ sis,” a hint of light returned to Su Liu’er’s dimmed eyes. Yet, she couldn’t help but yell coldly when she turned towards Gu Li. “What do you want!?”

As she spoke, she also subconsciously protected the white-shirted man, Yuan Hong and Sun Wukong with her spiritual energy. She understood very well that they could not afford to get harassed under these circumstances.

“Master of the Fox Yaos, you are truly amazing. But don’t fight with me, I didn’t come here for that,” with that, Gu Li shoved Su Yan and Lu Lu forward. “That senior asked us to bring them over, but don’t overthink things. We didn’t come to ask for peace.”

“Zichen,” Su Yan and Lu Lu ran towards Ye Zichen together.

Ye Zichen was momentarily surprised, before he pushed them behind his back, and squinted his eyes coldly, “It’s impossible even if you do want peace.”

“Haha...” Gu Li snorted. “No matter what you say, I’ve already brought them over. That’s that.”

“Why didn’t you bring Xiao Yumei back!?” Ye Zichen interrogated Gu Li.

“You have to ask your good bro about that,” Gu Li indicated towards Su Yiyun. “Who knows what sort of secret technique he used to actually evade that senior’s detection. But then again, Xiao Yumei is his new pet, so it makes sense for him to be reluctant to part from her.”

“Su Yiyun!” Ye Zichen looked towards Su Yiyun darkly. He could

still remember every single one of the stabs.

“Let’s go back,” Su Yiyun turned towards the portal.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist and cursed, “If you dare to touch even a single strand of hair on Xiao Yumei, I’ll never be done with you.”

“Mm,” Su Yiyun continued to answer indifferently before entering the portal.

Gu Li looked meaningfully towards Su Yiyun, then back onto Ye Zichen, before he shook his head with a chuckle, “Bye bye.”

After he stepped into the portal, the portal disappeared.

...

What they didn’t know was that...

“Do you want to die!?”

The moment Gu Li entered the portal, Su Yiyun suddenly turned around and grabbed him by the neck.

“Don’t try and challenge my bottom line again. Gu Li, it’s extremely simple for me to kill you!”

“Kill me? Don’t kid yourself. Do you want to ruin this huge plan of yours by killing me?” Gu Li pushed his hand away with a smile. “You managed to stay undercover for so long for some shocking ploy, right? But that senior isn’t Black Dragon, do you think you can continue on with it?”

“Heh, just think about yourself first,” Su Yiyun looked at him sullenly. “Don’t think that I don’t know what you’ve been doing.”

“Yeah, yeah. But, thinking about it, it really is interesting. One doesn’t know what’s going on, and the other is hiding everything. If this was a tv show, then it would definitely top the charts! What a love-hate relationship. Hahaha...” Gu Li chuckled, then twitched his mouth. “Hey, can you give me a hint of what you’re planning? Let’s be honest, neither of us are actually devoted to the Demon Realm, so it’s fine if you tell me, right?”

“You want to know?” Su Yiyun chuckled. “I’ll tell you right before you die!”

Chapter 607 – The Same Scent

Su Liu'er immediately ran over and checked the two girls over after Gu Li and Su Yiyun left.

“Lil' sis, did they do anything to you?”

“No,” Su Yan shook her head, then choked up tearfully. “Sis, I was wrong.”

“Wrong? It's good that you're fine,” Su Liu'er pulled Su Yan into her embrace.

Meanwhile, Lu Lu watched on for a moment, then wrapped her arms around Ye Zichen's shoulder. “When are you marrying me?”

“Wait a moment, when did I say that I would marry you?” Ye Zichen was momentarily stunned, then moved her hand away. “Don't just say random things.”

“What? You don't want to marry me!?” Lu Lu frowned.

At that very moment, the white-shirted man suddenly shouted from within the gold light, “Silence!”

The surrounding people all turned silent, including Lu Lu who stuck out her tongue before doing so. Then she walked near then and raised her eyebrows, “How did they get injured like that?”

“Don't worry about that,” Ye Zichen said indifferently.

At that very moment, there were a few sounds which originated from the sky. The group looked up and saw Old Lord Taishang hurrying over with two of his disciples in tow.

“What's going on!?”

Ye Zichen revealed a look of joy on his face when he saw Old Lord Taishang. He immediately dragged the latter and walked towards the white-shirted man.

After getting near them, Old Lord Taishang saw the Great Sage

and Yuan Hong, who were on the ground.

“They actually got injured so heavily that their origin spiritual energy is unable to restore itself anymore!?”

“What’s origin spiritual energy?” Ye Zichen asked.

“All Sky Immortal experts will be able to sense their origin. Sky Immortals can also be called undying. As long as they have enough time, they would be able to recover from any injury, no matter how severe it is,” Old Lord Taishang frowned. “But their origins have already stopped functioning. Even if I start to refine pills right now, the most I can do is help them hang on to their lives.”

“Old Lord, there is no need to worry. Hua Tuo is coming later as well.”

At that moment, the white-shield man walked out of the golden barrier of light. Old Lord Taishang glanced at him in confusion, then wrinkled his nose before looking at Ye Zichen.

Lu Lu also did the same.

They smell very similar.

“Little bro, we’ve arrived.”

Ox-Head and Horse-Face also hurried over with Hua Tuo. They didn’t mind any useless courtesy, before Hua Tuo walking into inside the barrier of golden light and reached out to the two people on the ground.

“Elder Hua, how is it?” the white-shirted man asked nervously.

Hua Tuo squinted his eyes, “I can save them!”

Everybody’s expression brightened upon hearing that. Yet, that was when Hua Tuo suddenly asked, “Who wounded them like this?”

“Demons,” the white-shirted man replied without any hesitation.

Hua Tuo nodded, but his expression did not reveal his thoughts

at all. “I need absolute silence while applying acupuncture, so please, everyone take your leave. Also, Old Lord, please refine two Nine Spirals Life-Continuation Pill, and two Three Yang Spirit Recovery Pills please. It’ll be for them after my treatment.”

“You damn geezer, you’re actually ordering me now?” Old Lord Taishang rolled his eyes unwillingly. “Fine, I’ll refine them as soon as possible.”

“Thank you,” Hua Tuo nodded, then walked within the barrier of light.

Since this respected elder had spoke already, the group all did as he asked, and left the back mountains.

“Get me a quiet room as well,” Old Lord Taishang spoke up after leaving the back mountains.

Su Zhu led him away with a smile.

At that moment, Ox-Head, begun to comment, “I didn’t expect the Great Sage to actually go over to the Demon Realm. Are the demons actually so strong now!?”

“Big Brother Ox-Head is right,” Horse-Face agreed.

“It wasn’t because the demons were too strong, it was mainly because... Never mind, telling you guys right now wouldn’t help with anything. Let’s wait for news of the Great Sage’s and Yuan Hong’s recovery instead,” the white-shirted man said, before turning towards Fatty Yin.

Fatty Yin subconsciously shrunk his neck when he felt the gaze. He was the main person responsible for the Great Sage and Yuan Hong getting into their current situation.

If it wasn’t because he foolishly agreed to Su Liu’er’s terms, those people wouldn’t have been able to get to the Demon Realm.

“You...!” the white-shirted man shook his head, then stopped speaking, and instead walked to the side in isolation and looked up

towards the sky.

“Who’s that?” Ox-Head indicated towards the black-robed man.

Lu Lu immediately spoke up, “That guy smells like you!”

“Smells like me?” Ye Zichen was surprised.

Lu Lu had told him that everyone smelled in a unique manner back in the Modern Realm, and she had searched him out through scent.

Now she’s saying that white-shirted man smells like me?

“Mhmm, instead of saying he smells like you. It’s actually better to say that the two of you smell identical. However, it’s impossible for two different people to smell the same. Perhaps my nose isn’t working quite right since I was poisoned,” Lu Lu shrugged.

Su Yan immediately added, “Actually, I always wanted to say this, but this white-shirted man gives me a feeling really similar to what you make me feel.”

“Uhm...” Ye Zichen was at a loss for words. However, he then shook his head with a smile. “Alright now, let’s ignore him. You guys need to get some rest, since you should be tired out after all that happened in the Demon Realm. Big Brother Ox-Head and Horse-Face, the two of you should be tired after escorting Elder Hua here.”

“And you?” Su Yan asked.

“Of course I’m going to rest as well. I’ll get Big Sister Su Zhu to get me a room later, so I can rest.”

The night fell.

The fires within the houses of the fox yaos burned brightly. However, perhaps Su Yan and co. were truly knackered, they did not come back out of their rooms after entering.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen held a bottle of Wuliangye near the back mountains and walked beside the lonely figure on the hills.

“You want a sip?” Ye Zichen handed the bottle over.

The white-shirted man hesitated for a moment, then accepted the bottle, and poured some liquor into his mouth. “I haven’t drank this for a long time.”

“You’ve drank it before?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

The white-shirted man turned silent.

“You should be the system that’s been chatting with me, right?” Ye Zichen laid down.

“Mm,” the white-shirted man smiled. “What, you want to punch me? I do seem to recall you saying that you want to punch me several times.”

“Whatever, I can’t beat you,” Ye Zichen shrugged, then raised his eyebrows. “Do you think I’m not going to hit you if I was about as strong as you?”

“Ha...” the white-shirted man shook his head with a chuckle, then glanced back at the barrier of golden light.

It had already been several hours since Hua Tuo had started the acupuncture treatment. The fact that he, one of the greatest doctors ever, still wasn’t finished only went on to show just how severe Yuan Hong and the Great Sage’s injuries were.

Ye Zichen checked out the white-shirted man, then finally formed the question that’s been on his mind the entire time.

“Hey, system. Who exactly are you?”

Chapter 608 – Should I understand?

A cool breeze blew past them.

The grass on the mountain wavered in the winds.

Ye Zichen looked intently at the white-shirted man beside him. The man yanked up a strand of grass, placed it into his palm, then turned around...

“Why are you suddenly asking me who I am?” His tone was extremely calm.

Ye Zichen let out a soft sigh, then thought back to what the others had said to him. “I’m just very curious. After all, it’s like you’ve experienced everything I’ve been through in person.”

“You should know how strong I am. I’m a Sky Supreme, someone above these three realms, and far surpassing an Immortal King. You are merely a complete stage Human Immortal. Isn’t it all too simple for me to know what you’re going to go through?” the white-shirted man continued to answer in a matter-of-fact manner.

Ye Zichen frowned, “But, Lu Lu said that your scent...”

Whoosh.

The white-shirted man turned away and ran towards the barrier of light before Ye Zichen could finish. Ye Zichen could only stared at the situation blankly, then finally follow when he considered what might have happened.

The Great Sage and Yuan Hong were still within the barrier of light, but Hua Tuo had already walked out.

“I’ve succeeded,” Hua Tuo smiled towards Ye Zichen and indicated towards Yuan Hong and the Great Sage.

Ye Zichen looked over and saw that the hole on their chest have been filled somehow, and color had returned to their faces. What’s

more, he was also able to faintly feel their breath.

“Thank god,” the white-shirted man let out a long sigh of relief.

At that moment, Hua Tuo spoke up, “It’ll be up to the Old Lord’s pills for when they’ll be able to wake up. I’ve done all I could.”

“Elder Hua, thank you for your hard work. Your room has been prepared already, so please come this way,” Ye Zichen smiled and made a please gesture.

Hua Tuo nodded with a smile, then followed Ye Zichen.

Meanwhile, the white-shirted man remained outside the barrier of light and choked as he looked at the Great Sage and Yuan Hong. “Thank goodness that you two are fine. This is... wonderful.

“Are you sure you don’t want to tell little brat Ye? Why do I feel like this is the best moment to do so?” Fatty Yin suddenly appeared with a bowl of washed grapes.

“Haha...” the white-shirted man’s chuckle became ice-cold. He turned around and reached towards his neck. “You actually dared to come and see me alone. You couldn’t even do what I asked of you. Seriously, is there anything that you can do? I really want to strangle you right now.”

That action caused the fatty’s bowl of grape to drop. Seeing that, Fatty Yin quickly used his spiritual energy to cause the grapes to stop in midair before they touched the ground.

“Don’t... These are grapes that Su Zhu washed for me.”

An hour later...

The white-shirted man and Fatty Yin sat outside the barrier of light with the bowl of grapes that Fatty saved between them.

“Lil’ Zhu-jie washed them for you?”

Fatty smiled proudly as he popped one into his mouth, “Of course, you might not have guessed this, but our relationship improved massively.”

“Oh? Do tell,” the white-shirted man’s interest in gossip awoke.

Fatty Yin smiled, “Su Zhu actually said that I’m pretty nice, but am just too fat. I didn’t tell her that I exchanged this body using some merits. I already made up my mind that I’ll get my main body over here after dealing with your stuff over here. Hmph... I’ll definitely be able to win her over.”

“Your loser main body?” the white-shirted man shook his head. “Let’s be honest, that’s not as good as this fat one.”

“How did we get together? Was it using this fat body?” Fatty Yin raised his eyebrows.

“It was with your main body,” the white-shirted man shook his head with a chuckle. “But the main reason the two of you managed to get together was because of that war. Women love heroes, and your actions were befitting that of a hero. It was normal for her to fall for you.”

“Really? Hahaha... How long is it till the war? I’ll get my main body ready to come over then and display my might!” Fatty Yin rubbed his hands in excitement.

“It won’t ever happen,” spiritual energy surged around the white-shirted man as he stared forward. “I came back to stop all of that. I will not allow that sort of devastation to happen once again. But... although changing history sounds ridiculous, I still have to try. What’s more, didn’t I succeed with the Great Sage?”

Fatty Yin was momentarily stunned. Then he patted the man’s shoulder. He was probably the person who understood the white-shirted man the most in the world.

He understood very clearly just what sort of determination the white-shirted man had when he came back to the Three Realms.

“But, I have to remind you about one thing,” Fatty Yin looked at the man. “Ye Zichen has already started to suspect something of your identity. You won’t be able to hide it for much longer.”

“He already sought me out just now,” the man smiled with a shrug. “Actually, it’s pretty normal. All sorts of disguises are pointless in front of Lu Lu. I can fake everything except my scent. That’s something which cannot be changed.”

“You’re just going to continue to hide it like this?” Fatty Yin raised his eyebrows.

“It’s not really hiding it. Just what am I supposed to say to him in this sort of situation?” the white-shirted man glanced at the fatty. “The day where Ye Zichen and I truly meet is the day I leave this place. He’s still too young. He won’t be able to handle the future. That’s why I have to stay behind, and at the very least, help him handle it all.”

“You truly think a lot for yourself!” Fatty Yin chuckled. “Then you might as well just grab him and directly give him the power? I don’t believe that anyone can match him if he had the strength of a Sky Supreme. As a Sky Supreme, he would even be an extremely valuable asset in the Upper Three Realms!”

“Stop saying something so pointless,” the white-shirted man rolled his eyes. “You clearly know that I’m incapable of doing that for him. What’s more, who said that a Sky Supreme is unmatched here? An old monster of the Sky Supreme level also arrived in the Demon Realm.”

“How’s that possible!?” Fatty Yin shot up from the ground. “You said that there are two Sky Supreme level existences in the Three Realms!?”

“Perhaps it’s because of me,” the white-shirted man smiled. “You should know that the Great Sage and Yuan Hong died of heavy injuries back then, but the old monster didn’t show himself. Perhaps my appearance broke some sort of balance, causing that monster to appear.”

“This is seriously getting more and more troublesome,” Fatty Yin was speechless. He quickly called forth the Eight Formation Origin

Chart. “I feel like I’ve been tricked. I don’t want this shitty anything anymore. Have it back!”

“You sure?” the white-shirted man smiled. “You were able to slaughter your enemies with that. Su Zhu only changed her mind about you after you used the its mirage formation to trap a hundred something thousand elite demons!”

“I didn’t say anything,” the fatty put the Eight Formation Origin Chart away.

At that very moment, the white-shirted man waved towards the area in front of him.

“Do you understand now?” the white-shirted man muttered quietly.

At the same time, Ye Zichen, who was using the mystical arts of the Great Dao of Heaven’s Birth to spy on the pair, also put his hands down dejectedly.

“Should... I understand?”

Chapter 609 – The Great Sage’s gossip

During the seventh hour after Hua Tuo walked out of the golden barrier of light, the sky began to light up and Old Lord Taishang also finished refining all the pills.

Fortunately, the Great Sage and Yuan Hong also woke up after he had placed the pills into their mouths.

Despite that, it was only natural for them to feel weak, so they both stayed in the land of the fox yaos and could only leave Mount Huaguo to the other two spiritual monkeys to handle.

“Great Sage, how’re you feeling?” Ye Zichen placed two bottles of Wahaha beside the Great Sage.

The Great Sage scratched his head with a wry smile after opening a bottle and drinking a few mouthfuls, “Not too bad. I, Old Sun, truly got screwed big time. I didn’t expect there to be such an expert in this world.”

“Yeah,” Ye Zichen sighed, while the conversation between the white-shirted man and Fatty Yin, that he had overheard, echoed in his mind.

I really was an idiot. Even the Jade Emperor could detect me using the Great Dao of Heaven’s Birth.

No, even Zuo Mo could detect it.

The white-shirted man is clearly stronger than anyone of this three realms, and I actually decided to pry on their conversation so foolishly.

Ugh, now I only got more annoyed after hearing them talk.

...

“Su Liu’er, when are we getting married?”

Yuan Hong, who was bundled up with bandages, followed Su Liu’er around the fox yao’s courtyard and yammered on about

them getting married.

According to what he said, the reason he had managed to live was purely because of his lingering thoughts for Su Liu'er.

Otherwise, he would have passed on to the afterlife ages ago.

“Who wants to marry you? I’m only ignoring you because you’re wounded, but don’t get an inch and ask for a mile. Otherwise, I’ll teach you a lesson.”

Su Liu'er, who was rather annoyed from getting followed around, stopped walking. Then, she looked at Yuan Hong, who was following her like a lost puppy, with a frown.

“Then just kill me. If you aren’t going to marry me, then I don’t want to live anymore,” Yuan Hong chased after her shamelessly still.

Su Liu'er lifted her hand with clenched of her teeth, but eventually put her hand down again and then ran away.

“They’re truly a pair of loving frenemies,” Old Lord Taishang shook his head with a smile. He walked in front of Sun Wukong and checked his pulse. “You’ve recovered pretty well. You’ll be that annoying monkey spirit that’s causing trouble for people once more soon enough.”

“You actually dared to call I, Old Sun, a monkey spirit!?” the Great Sage glared before snorting. “But seriously, thanks for all this.”

Old Lord Taishang shook his head with a smile, “It was all thanks to Hua Tuo’s medical skills. But the Underworld has been really busy recently, so he went back rather early. When you have time, go over to the Underworld and thank him properly. Oh yeah, I asked Hua Tuo earlier. He said that the reason the two of you managed to survive was all thanks to a firm thought in your minds. Yuan Hong did his best for Su Liu'er, and you...”

Old Lord Taishang smiled meaningfully.

At that moment, Ye Zichen suddenly recalled the words the Great Sage had said on the verge of his death.

This is surely a huge piece of gossip!

The Great Sage to felt rather uncomfortable when faced with the heated gazes of the pair.

“Why are you looking at I, Old Sun. If you continue to, then I, Old Sun, will....”

“Ahh, monkey, don’t get annoyed,” Old Lord Taishang twitched his mouth. “Canopy Marshal had leaked something to me before, he said that back then, you had... some... for a woman...”

“Take this!” The Great Sage immediately took out his Ruyi Jingu Bang and rushed towards Old Lord Taishang.

Ye Zichen sat down on a stone stool and watched over the lively atmosphere.

“Time’s up,” At that very moment, Fatty Yin suddenly appeared in front of Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen glanced up, then put down the bottle of Wahaha with a wry smile, “So soon?”

“You’ve been with the fox yaos long enough. He said that it’s time for you to go to where you should go,” Fatty Yin replied plainly. “C’mon.”

“Then why didn’t he come with you?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Haven’t the two of you been avoiding each other? Are you actually going to meet him if he comes? Tsk, that’s why this is all my job now,” Fatty Yin grit his teeth with disdain, then muttered. “If he could come, do you think that I would be willing to leave my darling Zhuzhu?”

...

Ye Zichen was rendered completely speechless, but he did

understand the logic behind the fatty's words.

That guy won't come to see me. Even if he does, I wouldn't meet him.

Ye Zichen patted away the dust from his pants, then looked at the area around him a bit reluctantly with a smile. "Can I say my goodbyes?"

"It would be best not to," Fatty Yin turned around and shook his finger. "That guy said that leaving after telling them would be more troublesome. He knows who you want to say your farewells to, but he told me that if you decide to do so, that person would definitely want to leave with you. However, Su Liu'er would not permit it, so that's just asking for trouble."

"Why would Su Liu'er object to Su Yan leaving with me!?" Ye Zichen frowned.

"How would I know," Fatty Yin shrugged irresponsibly. "I merely came to pass along the message. I have no idea what that guy is thinking about."

Ye Zichen nodded, then calmed down.

Since that guy said that Su Liu'er wouldn't permit it, then she definitely won't. It's clear that he has experienced that sort of situation before.

"He told me to tell you to focus on what you should be doing. He'll handle Su Liu'er."

"Then... Let's go!"

Thus, Ye Zichen and Fatty Yin disappeared from the land of the fox yaos in a flash of light.

...

"Why isn't Ye Zichen here yet? I'm going to call him to the table," Su Yan glanced at the empty seat of Ye Zichen at the table and put her chopsticks down before standing up.

The white-shirted man sitting opposite her smiled, “He already left.”

“What?” Su Yan was momentarily shocked. “Why didn’t he take me with him? I don’t want to stay here anymore!”

“Lil’ sis!” Su Liu’er slammed her palms down on the table, shocking everyone else.

“Just how many times do I have to tell you? You aren’t allowed to have any contact with him! Was this lesson not enough? You nearly died in the Demon Realm because of him. The Great Sage and Yuan Hong also got dragged into it, and yet you’re still thinking about following him!”

“I just want to be with him,” Su Yan frowned. “Big Sis, if you didn’t confiscate my phone and I could have contacted him, or been by his side, then I wouldn’t have been in any danger. And even if I did get into danger, he’ll protect me. I’m going to find him!”

“Stop messing around!” Cold air began to radiate out from Su Liu’er, causing everyone in the room to shudder.

Su Zhu pulled on Su Yan’s clothes in an attempt to get her to quiet down...

Yet, Su Yan continued to glare at Su Liu’er without backing down.

“Yes, I am messing around. I like being with Ye Zichen. So what? Is there anything wrong with that!?”

“It seems like big sis has been way too nice to you recently, you’re actually arguing with me now,” the aura of cold from Su Liu’er became even stronger. The people in the surroundings wanted to go over and tell her to calm down a bit, but since she was at the height of her rage...

The white-shirted man put down the chopsticks in his hand and smiled, “Liu’er-jie, can we talk?”

Chapter 610 – Leisure House

On a hill in the fox yaos' back mountains.

Su Liu'er walked through the wind blown grasses, while the cool breeze of dusk caused her hair to dance in the air.

The white-shirted man followed behind her.

After a while, Su Liu'er stopped and turned around, "Senior, what would you like to talk to me about?"

"Liu'er-jie, there is no need to address me as senior," the white-shirted man put his hands behind his back. Su Liu'er didn't answer, and merely continued to listen. "Actually, I asked you to come over to talk about..."

"If it's about my lil' sis, then there is no need for us to talk," Su Liu'er shook her head with a smile, then got ready to leave.

"Does Liu'er-jie hate the Yellow Emperor that much?" the white-shirted man did not stop Su Liu'er, and merely spoke as she passed by him.

Su Liu'er turned around and looked at him coldly, "If it wasn't because I was weak back then, I would never have allowed lil' sis to leave with him. It's not just hate. If he appears in front of me right now, then I might just directly kill him. That'll put an end to everything."

"Actually, some things are not as you think," the white-shirted man replied.

"Senior, I respect you because you are strong, also because you helped me quite a bit. That's why I treat you with respect. Although I am not as strong as you, but if it is about lil's sis being with that reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, then no matter what you say, I can only tell you no!" Su Liu'er turned around indifferently once more.

The white-shirted man let out a long sigh, then shook his head, “I need you to not interfere with Ye Zichen and Su Yan!”

“On what grounds?” Su Liu’er snorted. “Do you want to use violence? Don’t think that I’m afraid just because you’re strong.”

Whoosh.

Raging cold winds raged through the surroundings. Yet, the white-shirted man did nothing to shield himself and allowed the blade-like winds to sweep across his face. At the same time, he took out a white crystal coin from his pocket.

“What about now...”

“You...” Su Liu’er suddenly stopped.

The white-shirted man placed the coin into the shocked Su Liu’er’s hands, “Your mother left this behind. Your father once said that you should satisfy any request of whoever finds this. I’m going to use it now. Please do not interfere with Ye Zichen and Su Yan anymore.”

“Where did you get this coin!”

“Naturally, I got it from this world,” the white-shirted man replied.

Su Liu’er pursed her lips and gripped the coin tightly with her right hand. She didn’t want to agree to the request, but she didn’t want to go against her now deceased parents’ will.

“Liu’er-jie, I have other things that I want you to take a look at.”

With that, the white-shirted man took out a crystal sphere and placed it in front of Su Liu’er. The crystal sphere played countless scenes out. As Su Liu’er watched on, her expression gradually turned pale.

...

“Would you like to change your mind now?” the white-shirted man said after putting the sphere away.

Su Liu'er squinted her eyes and surveyed him with a meaningful look, "Who exactly are you? Where did the scenes from just now come from?"

"I experienced it myself!" the white-shirted man replied firmly, then caressed the crystal sphere with a wry smile. "This crystal sphere might be the only thing that can allow me to remember what happened where I lived."

Su Liu'er's expression drastically changed. She pursed her lips and recalled the scenes she saw in the sphere.

Could I have seen the future!?

"Who exactly are you! Why do you care so much about Ye Zichen? Could it be that... you're a mentor of one of his past lives? Or a relative of his?" Su Liu'er interrogated.

The white-shirted man shook his head, "I'm not a mentor, nor do I count as a relative. As for who I am... I can tell you, but please do not tell others."

"Alright," Su Liu'er nodded in confirmation as the layer of mist on the white-shirted man's face begun to fade.

At that very moment, Su Liu'er stood completely still in shock.

The white-shirted man, who had a long scar across his face, smiled wryly in self-mockery, "Do... you understand everything now?"

Meanwhile, at the Immortal Region...

The area outside Maple City was already died red with maple leaves, presenting a different sort of mesmerizing beauty in comparison to the land of the fox yaos.

In fact, Maple City was named after these falling leaves of autumn, and the people from the other cities, or even those from the sacred land of the Immortal Region would often visit in autumn just to look at the scenery.

Ye Zichen felt a sense of shock when he finally returned to where the Spiritual Breeze Villagers stayed.

The manor had already expanded and was already connected with all the other manors that Zuo Mo had gifted him. What's more, there was also a huge sign in front of the original manor.

Leisure House!

This was something that Ye Zichen had mentioned absentmindedly to Xue Qi before going to Mount Supreme. He had told Xue Qi that he wanted to establish a faction, and even thought of the name – Leisure House...

The reason he had chose the specific name was to show that he wanted those people who lived in seclusion to join them and represented the mindset of them being able to do their own things.

Yet, if someone was to wrong them, he would have people to call upon!

I can't believe that Xue Qi actually managed to get this all together

"Zichen-ge," Xue Lan, who was wearing a crown of maple leaves, skipped over with a look of joy in her eyes. When she got in front of him, she took off the crown and placed it on Ye Zichen's head.

"Lil' Lan," Ye Zichen rubbed her head.

At that moment, Fatty Yin spoke up, "I've escorted you here. Now, the future's on you. Oh yeah, I left a trump card for you here, use it well>"

He patted Ye Zichen's shoulder, then turned around to leave.

Ye Zichen glanced at his back and muttered, "What trump card..."

"Big Brother Zichen, where did you go? We missed you so much," Xue Lan giggled and walked into the courtyard with Ye Zichen. There were plenty of unfamiliar faces in the courtyard, and some

of them were being taught by Yellow Hair.

“I’m teaching you the social etiquette of the upper class. Us, the Leisure House, is the House amongst the outer region of the Immortal Region, understand? That means we’re equal with the Treasure Tower and the Mu Family. If you don’t pay attention to your etiquette, then that’s not just making me lose face. That’s causing the Leisure House and even my boss to lose face!” Yellow Hair put his hands on his lips and rambled.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. This guy’s strength has truly rocketed. He was merely in the mid-stage of the Human Immortal level before I left, and now he’s actually at the early stage of the Sky Immortal region. He really is an expert in the Three Realms now.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile and walked over when he saw the group turn silent from the scolding.

“Yellow Hair, you know social etiquette?”

“Of course I... Oh, Boss!” Yellow Hair quickly bowed when he saw Ye Zichen. “Boss, these brats are too dumb, so I have to teach them a lesson.”

Ye Zichen glanced at the group. Most of them were middle-aged people, and were between the early stage and complete stage of the Human Immortal level...

However...

“Why’s he here?” Ye Zichen stared at the elder amongst the group and muttered. “Is he the trump card the fatty left me?”

Chapter 611 – Zuo Zhencai

The elder in the group was wearing a commoner's hemp shirt, but that was not enough to hide his unique aura.

Ye Zichen's gaze rested on the elder, causing everyone else to glance over as well.

"Boss, this geezer just came, he's called Zuo..." Yellow Hair scratched his head and pointed at the old man. "You're Zuo what again?"

"Zuo Zhencai!" the elder replied as he bowed.

"Yeah boss, he's called Zuo Zhencai. Seriously, that name is way too lame," Yellow Hair twitched his mouth.

Ye Zichen slapped him on the head and motioned for him to go away.

Then he walked in front of the elder with a nod and a smile, "Senior, we meet again."

"I don't deserve being called Senior. You are the master of Leisure House after all," the elder took a few steps backwards and smiled wryly. "When you went to the Demon Realm and said that you were going to save someone, I really thought you were a demon. I have offended you then, please do not take it to heart."

"Senior, don't say that," Ye Zichen smiled. "When is senior going to return to the Treasure Tower? I can get someone to send you back."

"Not anytime soon," the elder sighed, while a hint of sadness surfaced in his blurry eyes. "I've stayed too long in the Demon Realm and appearing so suddenly is bad for the children. They actually didn't even know about me being captured by the demons. What's more, my body is really weak right now, so I would like to stay here for a few days and use the time to understand what the situation at the Treasure Tower is like. I wonder if..."

“Stay as long as you want,” Ye Zichen quickly replied. “Zuo Mo chipped in a lot in order for me to be able to develop everything to this degree.”

“It seems like you are very close with my granddaughter. Otherwise, she wouldn’t have given you the tower head token.”

“Indeed, but please do not misunderstand. We are just friends,” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but explain in fear of Zuo Zhencai misunderstanding the situation.

Yet, Zuo Zhencai smiled meaningfully and nodded, “No worries. I’ll let you youngsters deal with your problems. Lil’ Mo is an adult now, she has her own ideas, so I’m not going to butt in.”

Everyone was completely shocked by the pair’s conversation.

Only Yellow Hair wasn’t too shocked. He was an natural airhead, and although he could tell from the conversation that the old man might have something to do with the Treasure Tower, he felt like Leisure House wasn’t that different from the Treasure Tower.

However, the other people were unable to remain as calm...

The Treasure Tower.

That is a peak faction in the Three Realms. None of them even thought that someone from the Treasure Tower might be amongst them. If they were to think on the words more carefully, they would be able to deduce that the elder was one of the Treasure Tower’s tower head’s immediate family members.

Thus, they had no choice but to become more mindful around the elder. At the same time, all of them begun to make up their minds about finding a chance to get closer to the elder. If they were lucky and the elder took them back to the Treasure Tower with him, then their status would rise greatly.

“I heard little brother Ye came back!” A loud laugh boomed out from behind everyone.

When they turned around, they saw Stone, who was completely topless and revealing his clear eight pack, walk over with a bright smile.

Xue Qi also stood beside him as well as Lil' Lan, who was making a face at Ye Zichen.

“Brother Ye,” Xue Qi remained as calm as usual. He walked over and patted Ye Zichen on the shoulder before raising his eyebrows. “It seems like Brother Ye managed to gain a lot from the trip.”

“You guys are doing pretty well,” Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile. “You’ve already reached the mid stage of the Earth Immortal level. Brother Stone also broke through into the Earth Immortal level and seems to be reaching the mid-stage now. I can’t believe that our little village has changed so much.”

“It’s all thanks to little brother Ye’s little girlfriend...” the moment Stone began to speak, Ye Zichen quickly clamped his mouth and dragged him backwards.

At the same time, Ye Zichen also nodded towards Zuo Zhencai with a smile, who merely maintained his meaningful smile.

After they left, the middle-aged people standing around Zuo Zhencai all surrounded him, and begun to address him as Elder Zuo.

Seeing that, Zuo Zhencai let out a soft sigh. He didn’t tell the people here his identity because he didn’t want something like that to happen.

It seems like I won’t be able to get any peace.

...

“Brother Ye, why did you drag me away?” Stone complained after Ye Zichen finally released him when they arrived in a living room.

“Xue Qi, when you have time, tell Brother Stone that he has to

watch who is around when he's speaking, and that he should also use his brain more," Ye Zichen shrugged speechlessly. Stone's words never go through his brain. It was one thing normally, but that was Zuo Mo's grandfather...

"Ol' Xue..." Stone said.

"Even Brother Ye scolded you, so you really should change your habit," Xue Qi rolled his eyes. "How many times did I tell you to watch it? You just refused to listen. Think about it, that expert from before left in anger because of your words."

"Heh, don't mention him. He pisses me off," Stone couldn't help but snort. "He wants to join us, but instead chose to put on some airs. Act arrogantly my ass, I hate what he's like. So what if I cursed him. He wanted an elder position? Tsk... Is he even worthy!?"

"What's Stone talking about..." Ye Zichen blinked.

"I'm going to wash some fruit for you," Xue Lan ran away from the room with a giggle.

Meanwhile, Xue Qi replied, "You have seen it already. The Leisure House has been established. Since we have Lady Zuo Mo's support, our resources have surpassed the Six Pavilions and Three Gates, naturally causing there to be many people who want to join us."

"Mmm," Ye Zichen nodded, then sighed silently in his mind.

In the end, we still ended up using Zuo Mo's resources to support us. If this continues, then the Treasure Tower and Leisure House will only become more entwined.

It's one thing if it's just Zuo Mo, but the other members of her clan...

I guess I have to find some time to stop receiving Zuo Mo's resources. Since we're established a faction now, it's better to rely on ourselves.

At the same time, Xue Qi also spoke up once more, “A mid stage Sky Immortal expert came over. That sort of expert is a peak force to be reckoned with in the entire Three Realms, so we naturally welcomed him. But that expert’s requests were rather high...”

“Hmph, high!? It was outrageous!” Stone snorted. “A million celeste per month and we have to provide him with resources for his cultivation breakthrough. What’s more, we can’t order him to do anything and he does whatever he wants. Tsk, he wanted everything without doing any work.”

The more Stone said, the angrier he got. In the end, he even swung his fist as if he was punching that old man.

“Even so, you can’t just curse him outright. He has already said that he’ll come back and get even sooner or later. It’s one thing if it was just empty talk, but what if he really comes?” Xue Qi frowned as he lectured Stone.

“Heh, there’s no way that he dares,” Stone laughed, then wrapped his arm around Ye Zichen’s shoulder. “Also, my little brother Ye’s back!”

At that very moment, raging winds swept throughout the courtyard.

At the same time, a sinister elder in a white robe appeared in the air.

“Who said that I don’t dare to return!?”

Chapter 612 – The City Lord's Son

A white-robed elder stood on top of a huge green geomantic compass floating in the air and glanced down as he caressed his beard with his right hand.

Seeing him, Xue Qi's expression drastically changed as he whispered to Ye Zichen, "That's him."

Ye Zichen nodded with a smile and looked at the elder.

Judging from the fluctuation of spiritual energy emanating from him. He is a mid-stage Sky Immortal, but it seems like it's spiritual energy is not quite there yet. It's clear that he reached this stage with pills or perhaps due to getting into some sort of fortunate event which pushed his level up.

Basically, he's pretty much just at the level of an early stage Sky Immortal.

The elder had an arrogant expression and clearly did not take Stone, Xue Qi and the rest seriously.

"I said I will come, so naturally, I came. Puny Leisure House, you're nothing without the Treasure Tower's support."

The citizens of Maple City all looked over and couldn't help but wonder why the elder was so daring as to fly so high in Maple City.

The City Lord had already forbidden flying over a hundred meters above ground within the city.

That elder was clearly a lot higher up than a hundred meters...

Bang.

At that very moment, a huge palm appeared in the sky and rushed downwards. The elder's eyes twitched, then immediately took out a sword to defend against the blow.

Dong.

The collision caused a huge wave of spiritual energy to spread out. Ye Zichen put up a defensive barrier without any hesitation and protected everyone in the courtyard.

At that very moment, a young man in fiery red armor walked over with a lance in his hand.

Ye Zichen glanced at the young man's set of equipment, then turned towards Xue Qi, "Who's this guy?"

"Luo Yang, the son of Maple City's city lord!" Xue Qi replied. "Rumors have it that Luo Yang is called an extremely rare prodigy. Even the Azure Sky Pavilion's Pavilion Head Ruan Qingtian cannot match up to him. He achieved the complete stage of the Human Immortal level when he was nineteen, he chose to go on a journey to try and break through once more. Now that three years have passed, he probably broke through already."

Ye Zichen nodded. So he's a child of an official.

No wonder he's so rich.

Man, look at that equipment. Let's ignore the weapon and armor for now, even the accessory on his wrist seems to be a divine artifact.

I guess he's an only child, so he has all the love of his family!

Of course, he wasn't a disappointment at all. The fact that he entered the Sky Immortal level at such a young age means that his future is unmeasurable. Now, if you compare him to Qiu Yuan from Pool City...

They're both sons of a city lord and an only child.

But that kid just doesn't like cultivation. I think he did manage to get Mount Supreme's inheritance, but I wonder just how strong he'll be when he comes back out.

"Maple City had forbidden flying within the city a thousand years ago. Do you want to challenge the city lord's manor!?"

The elder squinted his eyes as he glanced at the young man before feeling his eyes twitch.

Although the young man was young and merely just reached the Sky Immortal level, he was armed from head to toes with divine artifacts. Even a mid stage Sky Immortal like the elder was unable to do anything. What's more...

The elder understood very well how he himself had even managed to reach the mid stage of the Sky Immortal level.

"Apologies, I have always been alone in my travels. It is my first time here, so I did not know the rules. I will land," the elder forced a smile and landed.

The young man snorted coldly and walked beside him, "Show me your residence permit."

The elder quickly did as he asked.

The young man took a glance at the permit, "It's not forged, so you are a guest here. Let me remind you one more time, flying is not permitted. It won't be resolved so easily the next time I see you doing that."

"Yes, yes," the elder forced another smile and put away the permit. "I would like to know, if I would like to teach your citizens a lesson, would..."

"A lesson? Ahh, I get it," the young man glanced over at Ye Zichen and smiled. "Maple City forbids combat, but you can deal with your grudges in private. The city lord manor will not care about you outside Maple City, nor would we even be bothered to. However, do not fight in the city. The guards might not get involved with battle involving Sky Immortals, and my father would also turn a blind eye to it, but you were unfortunate enough to meet me... I love getting involved in these situations!"

With that, he glanced over at Ye Zichen once more and muttered silently to himself. So this is the Ye Zichen lil' sis Mo mentioned.

Zeze, I don't see anything special about him. Can he... get involved with her engagement? She might as well let me just kill the Mu family's sickly bastard directly.

A complete stage Human Immortal against a Sky Immortal... This old man's not too strong, he has the strength of an early stage Sky Immortal at best, but even so, that's not something that a Human Immortal can handle. This is going to be all I can do. As long as Ye Zichen is in the city, I can ensure his safety.

But then again, I do want to see them fight. Lil' sis Mo pretty much praised him like a god, so I really am curious.

Ye Zichen couldn't read minds so he had no idea what Luo Yang was thinking. However, the young man's gaze completely unnerved him, causing him to shrink his neck.

At the same time, the elder snorted, "Brat, you should be the Leisure House's chief that's always missing, right?"

"That's right," Ye Zichen nodded.

Leisure House? What the hell is Leisure House!? Did the factions and powers change in the years that I wasn't here? Luo Yang muttered silently to himself.

"That's good. Your people were disrespectful towards me."

"So?" Ye Zichen smiled.

"I'm not an unreasonable person. Pissing me off was unfortunate for a newly established power like yours. Now, compensate me with ten million celeste, then I'll leave it at this. How's that?" the elder snorted sinisterly. "of course, you can choose to not compensate me, but then your people can only turtle inside Maple City. If you leave the city, do remember that the area outside is unsafe, so you shouldn't blame others if they die. Since you have the Treasure Tower's support, it means that you don't lack money, so just treat it as paying for your safety. How's that? Chief!"

Stone couldn't stand it anymore, and begun to curse, "If you dare

to do anything to the people of Leisure House, then I'll kill you."

"I never said that I would do anything to the people of Leisure Hose. What's more, you? Even if you come at me with full force, do you think can you even threaten me?" The elder smiled fearlessly. In his opinion, these people were merely some puny Human Immortal fries.

The only person who could threaten him was Luo Yang and as long as Luo Yang did not act biasedly, he was unmatched here.

"You..." Stone wanted to walk forward, only to get stopped by Ye Zichen.

At the same time, the elder also spoke, "What do you think, chief?"

Luo Yang also looked over curiously. He really wanted to see if Ye Zichen was as strong as Zuo Mo said.

He even made up his mind that if Ye Zichen refuses to compensate the elder, then he'll just stab the old man with his lance!

Yet, Ye Zichen's response was not what he expected at all.

"Compensation... That sounds nice."

Chapter 613 – Bloodthirsty Old Man

This guy's way too cowardly!

Luo Yang frowned. Man, Zuo Mo praised his guy so much in at the Zuo household. Seriously, you really need to take a look at things yourself to see the truth. I can't believe he agreed to compensate the old man.

I can't let Zuo Mo continue to be with him.

Also, what did that old man say just now? Leisure House only established through Treasure Tower's support? Doesn't that mean that this guy's leeching off Zuo Mo...

Dingdong.

Luo Yang's intimacy level decreased by 100. Current intimacy level: 0.

Dingdong.

Intimacy level leveled down. Current intimacy level: Cold.

Ye Zichen, who was pondering how to mess with the old man, was momentarily stunned by the system notification. He looked towards Luo Yang in confusion and raised his eyebrows...

How'd I piss him off?

"Heh," Luo Yang snorted coldly when he saw Ye Zichen's gaze.

The elder naturally noticed the hostile look Luo Yang gave Ye Zichen, which only caused him to start thinking again, "Then chief, please show your sincerity."

"How would this old sir want me to express my sincerity?" Ye Zichen smirked.

The old man raised a finger, "Ten million celeste."

"Ten million celeste. Zeze, that's not quite the same as what I hoped for! How about twenty million?" Ye Zichen asked in a

testing manner.

Is there something wrong with this guy!?

Luo Yang and the old man thought at the same time. He's adding more to the amount himself!?

However, the old man didn't care. The more he got compensated, the better.

"Since chief is so willing, then I won't refuse. Twenty million. As long as the chief can give me that much, then I can promise you that I will not do anything to the people of Leisure House. In fact, I will even protect them when I see them."

With that, the old man reached out his hand.

Ye Zichen blinked and looked at his outstretched hand.

"What are you doing?"

"What do you mean? Of course I'm asking for the compensation," the old man smiled.

Only then did Ye Zichen smile understandingly, "Oh, you thought that I was going to compensate you? You misunderstood, I was saying that you should compensate me."

"..." the old man's expression stiffened. He squinted his eyes and frowned. "Chief, this isn't a good joke."

"Who's joking? I'm serious," Ye Zichen smirked with a shrug. "Your words and actions just now have already severely wounded my weak little spirit. The twenty million celeste shall be your mental damage compensation for me. If you don't compensate me..."

Buzz.

A wave of spiritual energy spread out from Ye Zichen's body. He tilted his head with a smile, while a golden aura swirled around him.

“Then you can only leave your life here!”

Ye Zichen’s tone was firm.

Only then did Stone and Xue Qi smile in relief.

This was the Ye Zichen they knew. They could not believe the weak actions that Ye Zichen had performed earlier.

Luo Yang was rather shocked by the sudden change in attitude, but he quickly smiled faintly.

Interesting.

Meanwhile, the old man’s expression turned completely terrible. He stared at the smiling young man in front of him with a menacing look.

I’m actually being threatened.

Ever since he achieved the Sky Immortal level, the only threats that happened was him threatening others. Yet, he was actually being threatened by two young men.

The city lord’s son was rich and he couldn’t afford to offend someone equipped with an entire set of divine artifacts.

However, the Leisure House’s chief in front of him was merely at the complete stage of the Human Immortal level. He wasn’t scared at all.

“Don’t blame me for not giving you a chance,” the elder snorted sinisterly at Ye Zichen. “Compensation was the most peaceful way to solve everything. As the chief of Leisure House, every single one of your actions affected how this faction is going to do. Don’t destroy everything in order to act like a hero.”

“Let me return your exact words to you,” the golden aura around Ye Zichen became denser and an image of a dragon begun to coil around him.

“It isn’t easy to break through into the Sky Immortal level. Don’t make a mistake! Twenty million celeste might be a lot for others,

but it shouldn't be that hard to get for a person like you who managed to get into some fortunate situations!"

"Brat, you must have a death wish!" the elder's expression turned even darker, then reached his hand out towards Ye Zichen.

The moment he reached out his hand, a fiery red figure appeared in front of him.

Bang.

He felt his whole body smash against a wall. The old man looked up and saw that Luo Yang, the city lord's son, standing in front of him.

"I already told you very clearly that fighting was not permitted within the city. Did you ignore my words?"

"It was that brat..." the elder pointed towards Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen immediately shrugged, "I didn't make a move!"

The young man smiled, "You hear that? He didn't make a move, the one who did was you! Since you've repeatedly broke Maple City's rules, you will have to come with me to the city lord manor!"

Luo Yang slowly walked forward with his lance in his hand.

The old man, who was laying in the rubble of the destroyed wall, clenched his fist tightly...

"This is outrageous! Outrageous!"

Bang.

Rampaging spiritual energy filled the area. The old man's hair turned violet, while his eyes turned grey.

Ye Zichen was rather surprised by the familiar change, causing him to shout out, "Be careful!"

Luo Yang instinctually sensed the danger, but it was already too late when he tried to defend himself.

"Die!" the old man formed a claw with his right hand and

scratched towards Luo Yang's chest, ripping out a piece of flesh despite the latter wearing divine artifact armor.

"Ugh," Luo Yang grunted, then took a few steps backwards.

The old man stood up with an hunched back like a beast and stared at the piece of flesh in his hands, then licked his lips.

After that, he tossed the piece of flesh into his mouth under everybody's gaze, causing his lips and teeth to be covered in blood.

"All, so delicious," the old man sucked his fingers, then his lips, cleaning up the blood. Then, he walk forward.

"Become my dinner!"

Whoosh.

The old man disappeared from the area with a speed that surpassed even a Sky Immortal leveled master.

All Ye Zichen and Luo Yang could see was a black figure continuously move through a crowd of citizens.

Screams after screams rang out in Luo Yang's ears. Then, the citizens standing where the black figure passed through all fell onto the ground like dried-up corpses.

"RUN!"

The merchants all begun to scatter.

Luo Yang ignored his injuries.... "Stop!"

He had a responsibility to protect the citizens of the city as the city lord's son. He could not allow the old man to continue.

Yet, the old man's speed seemed to raise several times after absorbing the human blood.

He passed through the streets like a phantom...

Bang... Bang...

As more and more citizens fell onto the floor, Luo Yang clenched

his fist and glared. “You animal!”

At that very moment....

Boom.

A crimson blade of air shot towards the street and hit the old man.

Ye Zichen walked over with a sinister look in his eyes, while carrying a huge blood-red scythe on his shoulders.

“Let’s end it right here.”

Chapter 614 – Battling a Sky Immortal

The scythe Ye Zichen carried on his shoulders was as tall as a person, he surveyed the old man, whose eyes had turned crimson. It was clear that he already lost his sanity.

The bloodthirsty old man looked up, staring at Ye Zichen.

Then, he suddenly stomped on the ground, and formed claws with his hands, before dashing towards Ye Zichen.

“Be careful, his speed isn’t that of a normal person’s...” Luo Yang reminded Ye Zichen as he covered his wound.

Ye Zichen nodded and gripped the blood-red scythe tightly.

Ding. Ding. Ding.

Ye Zichen waved the scythe casually and blocked off all the attacks, causing sounds to ring out when the old man’s claws collided against the scythe.

“You’re still trying to act fierce?” Ye Zichen hacked down with his scythe, dropping the old man’s right arm down to the floor.

The old man wailed in pain, then grabbed the arm off the ground and began to tear at it with his teeth...

Stone and co., who stood in front of the courtyard, couldn’t help but wish to vomit. Eating other people’s flesh was one thing, but this guy was actually eating his own as well.

Yet, the moment the old man finished swallowing his own arm...

Boom.

The elder’s former mid-stage Sky Immortal spiritual pressure actually increased greatly and became that of a late stage Sky Immortal’s in mere moments.

What’s more, the arm that Ye Zichen chopped off grew out once more.

“Recovery and strengthening through devouring flesh and blood? No wonder his level seems too unstable. But then again, the self-recovery is a bit troublesome,” Ye Zichen nodded as he watched.

At that moment, the old man also smiled menacingly, and charged over once more.

He was extremely fast. In fact, he was so fast that Ye Zichen could not determine his position using the naked eye.

“Ye-zi, behind you!” Xue Qi suddenly shouted.

Ye Zichen felt a chill down his spine and roared out in his mind...

Swirling Flash Plate!

But he was too late.

His back was attacked mere seconds before he summoned out the armor, and a piece of flesh was ripped off by the old man.

“Jaja....” The old man laughed strangely as if he was mocking Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen took out a recovery pill and chucked it into his mouth.

He gripped the scythe tightly with his two hands and revealed a serious expression.

“Take this!” At that moment, Luo Yang, who had been waiting for an opportunity, thrust forward with his lance. “You actually dared to harm my citizens in front of me. Die!”

Luo Yang’s heart was filled with rage when he saw the citizens die by the old man’s hand.

The corner of the old man’s mouth lifted despite having his back facing Luo Yang.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen felt a hint of worry.

“Don’t!”

However, Luo Yang’s lance continued to thrust through the air

without any hesitation. Yet, only when his lance pierced through the old man's body did everyone notice that the 'body' was merely an afterimage.

"Ahhhh!" Luo Yang let out a terrible scream.

The old man had already appeared behind him and sank his sharp fangs into his neck.

"F*ck off!" Ye Zichen kicked the old man away, then took out a pill for Luo Yang. "You alright?"

Luo Yang's face was pale. It was clear that he had lost a lot of blood. Judging from the speed that the old man had consumed other people's blood, Luo Yang probably lost at least twenty percent of the blood in his body.

"Ahem... I'm fine! This damn animal. Ugh, why isn't my dad here yet, even though something so major is going on?"

"There's no need for the City Lord to come over. I've found his weakness already," Ye Zichen smiled, then brought the frail Luo Yang to Stone and co., before turning around to look at the old man.

The old man was no longer sane. It was exactly as Ye Zichen expected.

The more blood he consumed, the stronger he got. Yet, at the same time, his ability to reason would slowly disappear.

The most terrifying thing about a human was not a person's strong physique, but rather, it was their intelligence. A person without an ability to reason was no different from a wild beast.

No matter how strong a person like that was, it was useless.

Ye Zichen's eyes turned darker as he rose the scythe into the air.

"Rest in peace."

Whoosh...

Six figures, identical to Ye Zichen, split out from his body and surrounded the old man in an instant.

At the same time, the scythes hacked down towards the old man!

The menacing old man wasn't able to act ferociously, but very soon...

Bang.

A bloody mist exploded out from his body, while he felt limply onto the floor. Light began to fade from his grey and crimson eyes, while his clawed hands returned to normal.

"You already lost the battle the moment you lost your ability to reason."

Ye Zichen turned around and put away the blood scythe indifferently. However, under that cold demeanor, Ye Zichen was beyond excited.

Damn, the spiritual technique that guy taught me is so f*cking nice. Also, this weapon is way better than Xuan-Yuan Sword, and even looks a lot cooler!

...

Xuan-Yuan Xiang, who stayed by an altar on a faraway mountain couldn't help but sneeze.

She rubbed her nose but didn't think too much about it. Instead, she gazed at the white-shirted man, who stood not far away from her, then back onto the blade on the altar.

"Ye-zi," Stone ran over quickly when he saw that the battle concluded.

The old man on the ground had already stopped moving, but the innocent people who had turned into dried corpses have already moved on.

Many of their friends and families cried near the bodies. Ye Zichen let out a soft sigh, then kicked the old man in front of Luo

Yang and raised his eyebrows, “You’re the city lord’s son. I’ll leave this guy to you. You do have to give the citizens a resolution after all this.”

“Thanks,” Luo Yang cupped his hands towards Ye Zichen with a faint look of self-mockery on his face.

At the very beginning, he was rather displeased by Ye Zichen and did not understand why Ye Zichen was able to gain the affections of Zuo Mo.

However, after everything that has happened, he felt like Ye Zichen was indeed worthy.

He looked back on the old man and saw the blood on the old man’s mouth and hands which had not yet dried.

The blood...

Creak.

Luo Yang clenched his fist tightly. It was one thing for him to harm me, but he actually dared to kill my citizens in front of me... This is unforgivable.

Zing.

He lifted his lance up high. Seeing that, Ye Zichen understood what he was about to do.

However, he didn’t stop Luo Yang. Since he had already handed the person over to the latter, it was up to Luo Yang to decide what he wanted to do with the old man.

“This animal broke our city’s rules and harmed our citizens. I have to kill him myself in order to exact vengeance for my dead people!” Luo Yang stabbed down using his lance with bloodshot eyes.

Ding.

Yet, the moment he made his move, a middle-aged man appeared in front of them and pushed Luo Yang’s lance to the side, causing it

to stab into the ground instead.

“An accomplice!”

Seeing that, Ye Zichen frowned, then hacked towards the middle-aged man with his blood scythe.

Chapter 615 – Blood Zombie

Ding.

The eternally sharp blood scythe seemed to lose its sharp edge when it reached the middle-aged man. He held the tip of the scythe between two fingers, and when Ye Zichen tried to pull it out, he noticed that the scythe wouldn't budge.

"I'm not your enemy." The middle-aged man wore a light blue robe with images of a mountain sewn across it.

He smiled, then let go of the scythe. At the same time, Luo Yang also called out in surprise.

"Father!" With that, his face began to flush red in anger. "Damned geezer, where did you go? As Maple City's city lord, you actually didn't appear the moment something like this happened. Just what are you doing as the city lord!? Also where did the guards go? Are they nothing but rice buckets!?"

Luo Yang cursed as his body trembled. However, Ye Zichen and co. were able to realize what was going on from his words...

The person in front of them was the city lord of Maple City and the strongest one in the city!

Luo Wei!

"This was my mistake as the city lord. But believe me... Father was preoccupied just now, and the same goes for the city lord manor's soldiers!" Luo Wei let out a long sigh, then shook his head as he glanced at the dried corpses.

Only then, did the city's soldiers arrive. They silently endured the families of the deceased punching and waving their fists as the soldiers picked up the corpses.

They could not let too many people see what had happened in order to ensure that the city continued functioning as normal.

Yet, if anyone were to observe them more carefully, then one would be able to notice that all of the soldiers were injured.

“Did something happen at the City Lord’s manor?” Luo Yang couldn’t help but ask when he noticed that.

Luo Wei shook his head, then nodded before letting out a long sigh. He waved his hand over Luo Yang’s wound, causing it to heal at a visible speed. “The City Lord’s manor was attacked just now as well. They weren’t weak and managed to block off me and the soldiers. It was clear that they didn’t want us to interfere with what happened here.”

“An organized gang crime!” Luo Yang frowned.

“Probably not,” Ye Zichen walked over with squinted eyes and explained his reasons. “It might have been as the city lord said that those who attacked the City Lord’s manor did it to stop the City Lord from coming over, but it doesn’t mean that they know each other.”

Luo Wei glanced over when he heard the opinion and raised his eyebrows towards Ye Zichen with a smile. “Chief of Leisure House. At the start, I didn’t really have too much of an expectation for this new faction, but now that I’ve seen your strength, I truly anticipate what the power is capable of. Your blood scythe just now seems to be a blade of blood energy, right?”

“Indeed,” Ye Zichen was surprised. That guy told me that a blade of blood energy is a skill from the God Realm. The fact that this city lord can identify it shows that no city lords are not normal people.

“Your blood scythe is clear. It is apparent that your blood energy is extremely pure. It seems like you are no commoner from the fact that you were able to learn this mystical technique. But why do you say that the ones who attacked the city lord manner are not in a group with this old man?”

“There is dense demonic energy coming off this old man’s body alongside an aura I can’t identify. There is only demonic energy coming off from you guys, and none of the other aura,” Ye Zichen smiled with a shrug. “It seems like you were attacked by demons.”

With that, Ye Zichen snorted in his heart.

Man, I truly didn’t expect the demons to have infiltrated here so thoroughly. There are demons in the Heavenly Court, Underworld and even the outer areas of the Immortal Region. I wonder if there are those working with the demons within the sacred land of the Immortal Region...”

“Demons!” Luo Wei’s body trembled, then frowned. “Please do not make baseless claims. Do you have any evidence?”

It had already been several tens of thousands of years since demons had arrived in the Immortal Region. It was natural for Luo Wei to be shocked when he heard that the people who just attacked them were demons.

“I have a vendetta against the demon race. I only just returned from the Demon Realm several days ago...” Ye Zichen smiled, while the shock on Luo Wei’s face became even more apparent.

“Just returned...”

“This young friend is telling the truth,” at that moment, Elder Zuo walked out from the courtyard and smiled. “Lil’ Wei, I can’t believe that you became Maple City’s City Lord after so long!”

“Un-Uncle Zuo!” Luo Wei opened his eyes wide, then took a step back in shock. “Zuo Hongde told me that you...”

“What? Did he say that I was dead?” Elder Zuo smiled.

“No,” Luo Wei shook his head. “Hongde never told me that you passed away. He merely told me that you disappeared and that he was very worried that something had happened to you. All this time, both him and I were searching for news of you. Wait, what did you mean by what you said just now, could it be that you...”

Luo Wei didn't dare to continue. If it was the truth, then it was way too shocking.

"This isn't a suitable place to speak. Let's chat somewhere a bit quieter," Elder Zuo smiled.

Ye Zichen walked over, "Then come and discuss it in my manor, since everyone's already over here."

...

When they arrived in a meeting hall in Ye Zichen's manor, Luo Wei stared straight at Elder Zuo when he sat down, "Uncle Zuo!"

"Actually, it was as you thought. I was indeed captured by demons," Elder Zuo said calmly. "The demons were interested in the fortune and status of the Zuo family in the Immortal Region, so they wanted us to become their lackeys. What a joke, am I, Zuo Zhencai, a traitorous person!?"

Zuo Zhencai's tone was full of pride.

Luo Wei pursed his lips, then glanced at Ye Zichen.

"This young friend did go to the Demon Realm, but he is from the Three Realms," explained Zuo Zhencai.

Hearing Zuo Zhencai's reply, Luo Wei let out a sigh of relief. However, his expression remained solemn, "I really didn't expect that the demons' claws have appeared once again. What are they trying to achieve? Also, are those people who attacked the city lord's manor really not of the same group as the old man?"

"They aren't," Zuo Zhencai shook his head. "I don't know about the people who attacked the city lord manor, but the person you took away just now was definitely not a demon's underling. He's a Blood Zombie, a zombie that can strengthen themselves by drinking a lot of blood!"

"Blood Zombie!?" Ye Zichen and Luo Wei frowned.

"You younger ones might not know about this. Blood Zombies

first surfaced several tens of thousands of years ago. Back then, Hanba, the Yellow Emperor's daughter, became the first zombie. After that, three more zombies appeared and became known as the Four Primordial Zombies alongside her. Houqing, Yinggou, Hanba and Jiangchen. The person just now increased his strength rapidly by drinking human blood, but it also made him go berserk. That made it clear that he is a Blood Zombie," Zuo Zhenhai's expression turned gloomy. "But the production of these Blood Zombies requires a Mother. He was definitely not the Mother, which means that... There is a Mother behind him. It seems like the age of chaos is about to befall us. Demons, zombies... There'll only be chaos!"

"Mother? What do you mean?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

"The Mother is the main body which is spreading everything. Normally speaking, they are able to spread their race by just biting the neck of a normal person once..." Zuo Zhencai smiled.

However, Ye Zichen shot up from his chair when he heard that. "Shit!"

At the same time, Stone ran into the room. "Ye-zi, the junior city lord went mad!"

Chapter 616 – Poisoned

“M-Move!”

Luo Yang was half kneeling on the ground at the center of the courtyard as he held his head with his hand and revealed an expression of excruciating pain. At the same time, he continued to wave his hand and used his croaking voice to shoo everyone away.

“Brother Luo, hold on a bit more. Stone already went to find Ye-zi and them...” Xue Qi said. However, before he finished, Luo Yang suddenly leaped up and stared at Xue Qi with his bloodshot eyes and reached towards him.

“No!” Luo Yang used his remaining bit of reason to push himself on the head and slowly take a few steps backwards.

At that moment, a bird flew past his head.

He immediately leaped up into the air, grabbed the bird, then started tearing at it with his teeth.

Soon after, the bird fell from his hands as a dried corpse.

He felt he wasn't in so much physical pain anymore, but he still sat down on the ground began to cry out in suffering.

“Luo Yang!” Ye Zichen and co. hurried over.

Hearing that, Luo Yang looked up. His bloody face was filled covered in terror while tears ran down his cheeks.

“How...” Luo Wei looked at the situation in shock, then notice the dried bird corpse beside Luo Yang.

“Lil' Yang!” Luo Wei ran towards him without thinking.

Luo Yang shook his head intensely and scrambled backwards, “Don't come over here. I can't control myself!”

“Don't be a fool, you're still my son,” Luo Wei hugged Luo Yang and replied in a firm tone.

Luo Yang merely struggled a little before stopping and beginning to weep in Luo Wei's arms. "Father, what is going on with me? I can't control myself, I just... can't..."

"Don't worry, father's here. I'll definitely make sure that you get better," Luo Wei hugged Luo Yang tightly.

Yet, at that very moment, Luo Yang's eyes seemed to change once more.

He twisted his body painfully and surveyed the surroundings menacingly with his bloodshot eyes.

"No, I can't endure this anymore. Father... Kill me!" Luo Yang wailed.

Luo Wei couldn't help but feel tears flow down his eyes when he saw his child's painful look, "Don't be afraid. I'll definitely get you treated."

"Ahhh..." Luo Yang wailed in suffering. Then, all of a sudden, his expression changed, then he pushed Luo Wei onto the ground.

Luo Wei could resist, but when he saw how much pain his child was in, he did not muster up any spiritual energy at all. Instead, he stretched out his arm towards his son's mouth.

Bang.

At that moment, Zuo Zhencai hit Luo Yang on the neck, causing him to faint.

"Luo Wei, what are you thinking? Do you want to end up like him!?"

"Then what am I supposed to do? He's my son," Luo Wei, who always appeared as a strong man, couldn't help but cry. "It's not like you guys didn't see how much suffering he was going through just now. I won't let him harm others, but isn't it fine for me to feed him with my own blood!?"

"Fool!" Zuo Zhencai scolded. "We can't still control Luo Yang

while he's like this. Have you considered the future of Maple City if you end up like him as well? You are a peak expert in the outer section of the Immortal Region as well, and there are very few in the sacred land who is stronger than you. Do you want to see the Three Realms be burnt to ashes!?"

"Then what about Lil' Yang!?" Luo Wei shrugged helplessly. "Can someone tell me just what happened to him?"

"I think he's been infected by the Blood Zombie," Ye Zichen stepped forward and recalled a situation during the fight earlier.

The old man seemed to have bitten Luo Yang once!

Hearing that, Luo Wei glanced over at Luo Yang's neck. True enough, there was a row of teeth marks on his neck, which radiated with a faint black aura.

"Can you tell us the situation in more detail?" Zuo Zhencai asked.

Thus, Ye Zichen repeated what happened.

After they heard all that...

Dong.

Luo Wei fell limply onto the floor like an airless balloon.

He could only look at his son with lifeless eyes when he heard that his son would turn into a Blood Zombie.

This is all my fault. If I had dealt with those demons who came to cause trouble earlier... If I directly rushed over here.

Then this wouldn't have happened.

"Luo Wei, you don't need to worry that much. Lil' Ye told you very clearly that he knocked the old man back the moment that person even bit Luo Yang, so Luo Yang shouldn't be poisoned that heavily. There might be a way to help him," Zuo Zhencai comforted.

"Then tell me what I should do!" Luo Wei frowned.

Zuo Zhencai was momentarily stunned. Although he knew about Blood Zombies, he had no idea of how to force the Blood Zombie's poison out.

"You can't tell me, can you?" Luo Wei smiled wryly.

"City Lord Luo, don't be so anxious, I'll go and ask my friend," said Ye Zichen.

"Yeah, Lil' Ye's friends might know," Zuo Zhencai smiled. "Lil' Ye's friends are real experts, they might actually know how to solve the issue."

Hearing Zuo Zhencai say that, Luo Wei nodded sincerely, "I'll be counting on you."

The first thing Ye Zichen did was to seek out Old Lord Taishang, the stubborn old man, but this time, no matter how many messages or video requests he sent, he didn't get even the tiniest bit of response.

Then, he sought out Hua Tuo.

No response either.

Neither of them is responding... Ye Zichen licked his lips, then decided to seek out the system with a sigh.

"Hey, you there?"

System Notification: I really didn't expect you to contact me yourself. Do you want to ask me about Blood Zombies?

Ye Zichen was already used to the system's oracle-like ability.

"Since you know, then don't leave me hanging. Tell me how exactly can it be dealt with?"

System Notification: The poison hasn't settled down in Luo Yang yet. Just get his father to directly force the poison out from his body using celestial spiritual energy. But that's going to use up a lot of his archeus and might even cause his cultivation level to drop drastically, so make sure to tell him the side effects beforehand."

“Alright.” With that, Ye Zichen began to put away his phone.

However, to his surprise, the system actually spoke up once more.

System Notification: Was the blood scythe I taught you of use?

“It’s alright, I can’t say that it’s amazing, but it’s much better than Xuan-Yuan Sword,” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang, who was standing in front of Xuan-Yuan Sword also heard that. She clenched her teeth and fist....

The white-shirted man signaled her to not get so feisty, then replied with a smile.

System Notification: That’s only because Xuan-Yuan Sword haven’t been unsealed yet. I’ll return Xuan-Yuan Sword to you a bit later. Then you’ll know why it’s called the number one primordial divine artifact.

“Oh!” Ye Zichen shrugged.

System Notification: Oh yeah, don’t interfere too much with the Underworld and Heavenly Court for now. They’ll deal with the situation themselves. But you can tell them that they have spies for the demons amongst them.

Hearing that mentioned, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, “You know who the spies are, right? Can’t you tell me who they are?”

Chapter 617 – Establishing Dominance

That was a question that Ye Zichen had pondered about for a long time. He did know that both the Underworld and Heavenly Court had spies working for the Demon Realm, but he did not know who those people were.

If I can find out from the system... Then I don't care if the higher-ups of both factions don't trust me.

I'll get my friends from those two realms and directly prosecute those spies for the Three Realms!

System Notification: Do you think that I will tell you?

"Why aren't you telling me? Isn't it fine if it stays between the two of us?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

System Notification: Do you think I don't understand what you're thinking? If I tell you, then you'll definitely directly go and get those people. Sorry, that'll disrupt my plans, so I can't tell you."

"Plans, plans, plans. What plans? Is your plan allowing the Demon Realm's spies to cause those two realms to be swarmed in chaos? Do you want to see all of the Three Realms turn to ashes?" Ye Zichen clenched his fist with a frown.

System Notification: You can interpret it that way. I didn't appear to save the Three Realms. Everything I want to do is selfish. There's no helping it, that's the kind of selfish person I am.

"Ugh, whatever."

Ye Zichen returned his phone to his pocket and ignored the system. If he's that sort of selfish person...

Then what about me...

Ye Zichen walked in front of Luo Yang with a wry smile.

Seeing Ye Zichen walk over, Luo Wei immediately asked, "Chief,

is there a solution?”

“The poison in Luo Yang hasn’t gotten too deep in his system, you can directly force the poison out with your spiritual energy. But this will cause harm to your archeus, possibly causing your cultivation level to drop greatly. Make the decision yourself,” With that, Ye Zichen turned around.

Then, before he left, he reminded Xue Qi and co. to help arrange a room for City Lord Luo if he needed one.

...

When he returned to his room, he laid down on his bed and thought over everything that had happened recently.

People working for the Demon Realm were in the Heavenly Court and the Underworld. From the looks of it, the Demon Realm was plotting something major. They seemed to be merely laying the foundation right now and was only going to set everything alight when the right time comes.

“Just who was that person?” Ye Zichen muttered to himself. When he went to save Su yan, he clearly saw someone from the Heavenly Court chatting with Gu Li, but that person had covered his face.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen’s phone rang. He picked up his phone from the bedside table and saw that Old Lord Taishang had replied to his message.

“Sky Sovereign, you were looking for me? Everything else is alright, but if its for the pill refinement manual, then let me consider it a bit more.”

“I didn’t want to ask you for the manual. I wanted you to help me save someone, but there’s no need now. Oh yeah, are you still in the land of the fox yaos? How’re the Great Sage and Yuan Hong?” Ye Zichen replied.

“I’m not so sure. Old Li was poisoned a while back, and his situation grew a bit severe, so I went back to the Heavenly Court to take a look at him,” Old Lord Taishang replied.

“How is it?” Ye Zichen asked.

“It’s not looking good,” Old Lord Taishang knit his eyebrows tightly as he sat in the pill refinement room and recalled Heavenly King Li’s black face with a shake of his head. “The poison is deep in his body. Recently, everyone in the Heavenly Court has been really worried, but the Jade Emperor doesn’t seem to care and is merely indulging himself. The Heavenly Court is in a complete mess without Old Li. I’m getting ready to go into closed cultivation to help him refine a pill to cure him of the poison. I can’t allow the Heavenly Court to continue being in such a mess.”

“Is there anything I can help with?” Ye Zichen asked.

“Sky Sovereign, then can you teach me the art of spiritual guidance?” Old Lord Taishang rubbed his hands. “The chances of me refining the pill for Old Li would improve massively with that mystical art.”

“But I really don’t know how I’m supposed to teach you,” Ye Zichen shrugged.

“Then never mind. Don’t bother me while I’m working to save Old Li,” with that, Old Lord Taishang shut down his phone and walked in front of the pill furnace. He sent all of the disciples, including his chief disciple, within out.

He could not allow anything to go wrong with the pill refinement this time, so he had to do everything personally.

...

Meanwhile, in the Red Packet Server.

Everyone in the Heavenly Court was worried just like Old Lord Taishang had said. Ye Zichen could tell from the way they chatted.

God of Thunder: I wonder if Old Li can be cured of the poison.

Canopy Marshal: Old Lord Taishang went over personally, he should be fine.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Nezha haven't been playing ball with me.

God of Fortune: If he actually continued to play with you, then he really is way too immature!

Nezha: Just who the heck poisoned my dad? Come out here and fight me!

Nezha: You shameless bastard, you actually dared to use such shady methods against my father!

Muzha¹: Yeah, get out here. I'm going to fight you!

Jinzha²: Don't let me find out who you are. Otherwise, I won't let you off. I know the culprit is within the Heavenly Court. Hmmph... Keep hiding.

Heavenly Soldier A: My god, the culprit's actually in the Heavenly Court!?

Fairy A: What are we supposed to do? The Jade Emperor hasn't been caring about anything either. Is the Heavenly Court going to decline? I've read plenty of books, and all of the dynasties those books mentioned declined like this. The Emperor isn't caring about the issues, while the officials plot against one another.

Nezha: Heh, even though something so major happened, the Jade Emperor actually didn't even come to see my dad. All he does is listen to songs and mess around. There's no need for a Jade Emperor like him!

God of Fortune: Shh...

Nezha: I can't say anything now? The Jade Emperor is foolish!

Dingdong.

Fairy A was removed from the group by Only Idealism.

Dingdong.

Only Idealism muted everyone.

“Little Sister Immortality Peach, Nezha’s mood might be rather unstable due to his father getting hurt. Go and accompany him more and don’t let him say those sort of things in the group anymore.”

“Also, the fairy who was spreading chaos in the group has already been kicked. The Heavenly Court has been established for several hundreds of thousand of years, it’s impossible for it to disappear just like that. Even if the Jade Emperor doesn’t care, we’re still here. Don’t start worrying for nothing because of this. If we do our jobs properly, then the Heavenly Court will not fail. Understand?”

“You guys getting worried here right now will only make those with ill intentions happy! They want to see you guys like that. Those in my group are all smart people, don’t you understand such simple logic?”

“Also, anyone who dares to spread rumors of this being the end of the Heavenly Court will be kicked!”

Dingdong.

Only Idealism unmuted everyone.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Big Brother, I got it. I’ll stay with Nezha from now on.

Canopy Marshal: Man, look at the effect of Sky Sovereign speaking up.

God of Fortune: Yeah.

God of Thunder: Sky Sovereign is right. We can’t start getting too worried ourselves.

Nezha: Sky Sovereign, I was wrong. I won’t say such things recklessly in the group anymore. But I still want to say one more

thing. It would be nice if you're the big boss of the Heavenly Court...

The entire group grew silent.

Nezha: I think I said something wrong again. Alright, I'll stop.

The reason that the group became silent was not because the deities didn't want to say anything. Rather, it was because they were pondering about what Nezha said.

Would Sky Sovereign being the leader of the Heavenly Court really bring about a better situation than the Jade Emperor?

Original Chapter Teaser:

System Notification: What do you think?

Ye Zichen: Yes?

System Notification: Try again.

Ye Zichen: Yes?

System Notification: How about the opposite of that?

Ye Zichen: Still yes?

System Notification: How about no.

Ye Zichen: Why? C'mon, I won't tell others. It'll just be a little secret between you and me to sate my curiosity.

System Notification: And it'll remain that way until after this conversation ends. Then you'll immediately go and blabber it to Sun Wukong, Yang Jian etc. Ye Zichen, I know you. That's exactly what you'll do. Don't try and deny it.

Ye Zichen: But seriously, why can't I tell that? Wouldn't identifying and dealing with the spies now contribute a lot of getting rid of the demons?

System Notification: It'll ruin my plans. My keikaku. Get it? So no, I'm not telling you who they are.

Chapter 618 – Chancellor of the Grand Secretariat

The Heavenly Court was truly a complete mess.

The Seven Fairies were jeopardized during their concert and Heavenly King Li, a higher-up, was poisoned. However, Jade Emperor, the lord of the realm, continued to enjoy himself and simply disregarded everything.

At the very beginning, he did try and help the Seven Fairies seek the culprit.

However, now, he just kept the Seven Fairies by his side and had them host private concerts for him. As for the Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li....

“He’ll be fine with Old Lord Taishang!”

Those were the Jade Emperor’s exact words...

If it was previously, Taibai Jinxing might have been able to handle the situation. Yet, because Taibai Jinxing was gone, the Heavenly Court truly did seem to be in a leaderless situation.

Although there was God of Thunder, Mother of Lightning, Canopy Marshal and Erlang Shen...

They were masters at fighting and warfare, but when it came to handling internal affairs...

Heh.

That was why the fairy had something so worrisome in the group earlier. What she had said was only the tip of the iceberg. The truth was, that plenty of people in the Heavenly Court worried and made their own guesses in private. The only difference was that they didn’t display their opinion in public.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen’s strict and powerful words resonated

with them.

What they needed was someone who can give them orders and tell them what to do next.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen's phone practically exploded. There were endless rings with the system notification bar continuously refreshing.

Sudhanakumara's intimacy level increased by 100.

Golden Boy's intimacy level increased by 100.

Jade Girl's intimacy level increased by 100.

[Profound Lady of the Nine Heavens](#)' intimacy level increased by 100.

...

The notification bar was filled with notifications of the deities' intimacy level increasing. Ye Zichen gripped his phone in surprise as he watched the scrolling notifications.

My random words just now actually managed to win over those deities?

Improving my intimacy level with them is way too easy!

Actually, it wasn't that simple. The reason why his words had such a huge impact was mainly due to everything he had done before.

Sky Sovereign.

That was an extremely honorable title in the Heavenly Court. All those with that title were existences at the very top of the pyramid.

Furthermore...

His name had spread far and wide in the Heavenly Court. Many

smaller deities all admired and worshipped his mysteriousness, while other more major deities would heard of his title knew who it referred to, even if they didn't know who he is.

All their food, clothes and daily products came from him.

The situation was like a small bamboo. It may only grow a few centimeters within a few years, but when its roots spread far and wide enough, it would be able to grow ten-odd meters in a few short weeks.

Ye Zichen did find himself feeling rather smug when he felt the support of so many deities.

But I can't exactly just directly replace the Jade Emperor. No matter what, he's already been the head of the Heavenly Court for several hundred thousand years and is in the group himself...

"Don't stay stuff like that. The Jade Emperor is still the Jade Emperor, I'm merely his subordinate. He naturally is capable as the master of all. Do not say anything like that anymore. Otherwise, I will not be merciful!"

Nezha: <insert a tongue out emoji>

God of Thunder: Sky Sovereign, please cease your anger. Nezha is young, so he doesn't think about what he says, so don't take offence. But what do you think we should do? Right now, we do need someone who can command the deities in the Heavenly Court.

God of Fortune: Yeah. Sky Sovereign, what do you think we should do? We are truly leaderless right now.

Canopy Marshal: I won't accept others giving orders, but I definitely agree with Sky Sovereign doing that.

Mother of Lightning: +1.

Barefoot Immortal: Technically, I shouldn't interfere with the affairs of the Heavenly Court, but the Heavenly Court does require

someone who can command everyone right now.

Profound Lady of the Ninth Heaven: Ahem, allow me to interrupt you all for a moment!

Yue Lao: What a rare guest!

God of Fortune: Apologies for not giving a welcome for your arrival, Profound Lady! Hurry up, sound the music...

Canopy Marshal immediately sent a voice message with songs about him playing in the background.

Canopy Marshal: Profound Lady, you wanna go out?

Profound Lady of the Ninth Heaven: Stop messing around. I came here to pass along a message from the Jade Emperor and Queen Mother.

Everyone grew silent once more.

Nobody said anything.

Profound Lady of the Nine Heavens wasn't surprised when she saw this. It was rather easy to understand why the deities were acting like that. They were just saying bad things about the Jade Emperor, so they all went to hide.

As for the others...

Perhaps they were just snorting at the Jade Emperor's extremely late orders.

Yue Lao: Ahem. Profound Lady, please speak. We've been waiting for the Jade Emperor's orders for a long time.

Profound Lady of the Nine Heavens: The Jaded Emperor has decreed that Sky Sovereign Nameless understands him greatly and is truly loyal to the Heavenly Court. Thus, he has ordered me to decree that Sky Sovereign Nameless shall become the Heavenly Court's Chancellor of the Grand Secretariat to handle all Heavenly Court matters.

Ye Zichen was completely shocked when he saw the message.

So... I'm in power now?

Before he could truly realize what was going on, the Profound Lady of the Nine Heavens sent him a red packet.

Dingdong.

You received Profound Lady of the Nine Heavens's red packet.

Jade Emperor's Token.

Jade Emperor's Token: A token of the Jade Emperor, the Master of the Six Hwalls.

"Sky Sovereign, congratulations. The future of the Heavenly Court will be relying on you."

When the Profound Lady of the Nine Heavens sent him the message, Ye Zichen was already dumbstruck. He gave me his f*cking token as well? Is he not afraid of me starting a revolution?

Or is this the Jade Emperor's way of testing me?

"This is no good. I've gotten used to being carefree. I am truly worried to take upon such an important position!"

"Sky Sovereign, there is no need for you to worry," Profound Lady of the Nine Heavens replied. "Actually, the Queen Mother has been paying close attention to the group and only asked the Jade Emperor after she saw what you said earlier. When the Jade Emperor heard that, he immediately agreed without thinking. It's clear that he trusts you deeply."

"Is that so!?" Ye Zichen replied with a smile.

"Let me tell you something in secret, but don't tell others," Profound Lady of the Nine Heavens said mysteriously.

"Please."

"Actually, the Queen Mother has a slight problem with the Jade Emperor's recent way of management, she has been feeling that

you are more suitable to handle things. The Conference of the Three Realms will begin in approximately a year, she hopes that during that time, you... You understand, right?”

Ye Zichen was once again shocked when he saw this message.

Uhm...

Overthrow him, huh.

Although the system had been plotting all this, Ye Zichen was still a bit frantic when someone from the Heavenly Court mentioned that to him.

The Jade Emperor has been the master of the Heavenly Court for several hundred thousand years, are we really going to overthrow him?

What's more, the six halls of the Heavenly Court all work together. It's not going to be that simple.

“Profound Lady, please don't speak recklessly,” Ye Zichen replied carefully.

“It seems like Sky Sovereign is an understanding person. Her Majesty said that we shall see if it is reckless talk. Do not let others know of this conversation. It is enough that you, Her Majesty and I know about this! Alright, I have to go and get skincare with Her Majesty, bye bye!”

“Bye...”

Ye Zichen replied with a long sigh, while feeling even more shocked.

It seems like the Jade Emperor's foolishness has reached a new high, otherwise, the Queen Mother wouldn't have sent the Profound Lady of the Nine Heavens to tell me all that.

Head of the Heavenly Court...

If I really get a chance, I guess I should try it out!

Profound Lady of the Nine Heavens (九天玄女) is a goddess of war and justice. She is also often portrayed as a messenger of the Queen Mother.

Chapter 619 – Red Packet

Before Ye Zichen could even express his joy, the others in the group actually expressed an excitement that seemed to surpass even his.

In fact, the group instantly exploded.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Congratulations big brother, you got a promotion!

God of Thunder: Congratz, congratz!

Yue Lao: Congratulations to our supervisor for getting a promotion.

Canopy Marshal: Sky Sovereign, shouldn't you show us some... you know.

God of Fortune: Yes, yes, yes. That's right. The entire Heavenly Court is under Sky Sovereign's command now. Wait a moment, Canopy Marshal, that was too much. He's our supervisor, and you actually wanted to get something from him?

Barefoot Immortal: This is good news.

Profound Lady of the Nine Heavens: The future of the Heavenly Court is counting on you all. Chancellor Sky Sovereign already has his token, so please cooperate with him.

Canopy Marshal: Beauty, let's go out?

Profound Lady of the Nine Heavens: Screw off!

Immortality Peach Fairy: Hehe, Canopy Marshal is so embarrassed.

Canopy Marshal: Gah, you little girl, you actually dared to tease me.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Why don't I, my older brother is your boss.

God of Thunder: Zeze, we don't dare to screw Sky Sovereign over, but little Immortality Peach Fairy, shouldn't you give us something now that your big brother got promoted?

Immortality Peach Fairy: What? I'm just a little fairy, what do I have that can make you great deities interested?

God of Fortune: Don't you still have Peaches of Immortality?

God of Thunder: Yeah.

Immortality Peach Fairy: But...

Barefoot Immortal: Your brother is already the head of the Heavenly Court, so what are you afraid of? Send it, send it!

All of the deities in the group started agreeing with that. Immortality Peach Fairy thought about it. Yeah, my brother is the head now, so why should I be worried?

Dingdong.

Tap.

Although Ye Zichen didn't say anything in the group, he had been paying close attention to it.

He immediately tapped the moment the red packet popped up.

You received Immortality Peach Fairy's red packet.

Fifty-year-old Peach of Immortality x1.

Ever since the Great Sage stole another ground of peaches from the Immortality Peach Garden, the ones remaining were only the youngest and worst ones.

Canopy Marshal: Ten-year-old one...

God of Fortune: A twenty-year-old one...

Immortality Peach Fairy: Don't blame it on me. Great Sage has been visiting rather frequently. These are all younger ones.

God of Thunder: I just took a look, Sky Sovereign got a red packet

too.

I guess I can't lurk anymore.

Thus, Ye Zichen could only speak up with a chuckle.

"You guys actually noticed. Ahem, I'm the Chancellor of the Grand Secretariat now, so I'll rely on you all to cooperate with me."

Yue Lao: Definitely.

God of Thunder: Sky Sovereign's command dictates where I shall move in the future.

Erlang Shen: Holy crap, it seems like I missed a lot. Little immortality peach girl even sent red packets. What's going on?

Canopy Marshal: Sky Sovereign got promoted and became the head of the Heavenly Court. We all have to listen to him now.

Erlang Shen : Oh my god.

Dingdong.

A red packet suddenly appeared on the screen.

Since Ye Zichen was typing when it appeared, he didn't pay too much attention to it. When he reached out to tap on it, it was already too late.

Ye Zichen could only feel a bit of regret when he saw he had missed his chance.

God of Fortune: Seriously, did the sun rise up from the west? Old Yang actually sent a red packet!

God of Thunder: Take a look at what he sent.

Erlang Shen: It's just a bit of symbolism. If you're so amazing, then you send some red packets. Cheapskate, you actually commented on me?

God of Thunder: You're joking right? Fine, I'll send it. It's just a red packet.

Dingdong.

Tap.

This time, Ye Zichen was not typing, so he immediately tapped on the red packet when it appeared.

You received God of Thunder's red packet.

Mystic Art of Thunder Control x1.

Golden Boy: Uncle Thunder, something wrong with your head?

Jade Girl: Mamma mia!

Nobody expected God of Thunder's red packet to cause both Golden Boy and Jade Girl to exclaim. Not only that, everybody in the group immediately spammed the chat and said that God of Thunder was extremely generous.

Ye Zichen clicked open the red packet to see what other people got.

Extraterrestrial Thunder Stone.

Rootless Sacred Fruit.

Nine Leaved Divine Clover.

...

Every single item shown were things that Ye Zichen felt were extremely high class. Is this seriously the God of Thunder I know?

Is this that God of Thunder who refuses to spend even a single bit of cultivation experience?

God of Thunder: F*ck, hurry up and return everything to me. I sent the wrong stuff.

Ugh.

No wonder.

Everyone all mocked him, while God of Thunder continued to cry about getting the treasures back.

Ye Zichen naturally quit the chat group. Mystic Art of Thunder Control...

That's a treasure which would cost several million cultivation experience in the shop.

Mystic Art of Thunder Control: A mystic art to control thunder and lightning. It is able to summon the Profound Lightning of the Nine Heavens.

Bwahahaha.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but gasp when he saw the description. This is definitely a top class secret scripture.

I'll learn it!

Dingdong.

The system has detected that you would like to learn the Mystic Art of Thunder Control. This secret scripture will disappear after use. Would you like to proceed?

Yes.

Dingdong.

Usage failed. You do not possess the mutated Thunder attribute, so you are unable to use this secret scripture. It has been returned to your Treasure Chest.

You're shitting me.

Ye Zichen looked at the notification in shock. It's definitely shitting me.

I actually can't use such a top class secret scripture?

Dingdong.

System Notification: Just what are you thinking? Don't you know what your constitution is like? You actually want to learn Leizhenzi's mystic art? The only thing you can learn are those supportive spiritual techniques that doesn't require any particular

attribute. Oh yeah, congratulations on your advance to power.

“Whatever,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes with a snort. “How is it? You happy now? I finally got the position of the chief of the Heavenly Court.”

System Notification: Don’t talk to me like that. Are you going to tell me that it was useless?

“Haha,” Ye Zichen didn’t deny anything. “Then, what do you think we should do next?”

System Notification: Get rid of the Jade Emperor’s foolishly loyal ones and improve the deities’ impression of you. Oh yeah, now that you’ve gotten the identity as the chief, the Heavenly Court will be united one day. Now, all that left’s the Underworld and the Immortal Region.”

“You really have faith in me. But you want me to do something to the Underworld and Immortal Region as well? Say... isn’t that a bit too much?”

System Notification: What’s wrong with that? Isn’t our ultimate goal to unite the Three Realms to defend against the Demon Realm? Don’t you want to save Xiao Yumei?

Ye Zichen’s expression instantly darkened when Xiao Yumei was mentioned.

“I really didn’t want to mention it before, but since you got Grandpa Zuo out, couldn’t you have gotten Xiao Yumei out as well? Just what do you want to do?”

System Notification: Isn’t leaving her there fine? At the very least, your hatred towards the demons will not waver with her here. Everything we’re doing for you is so that you can deal with the Demon Realm.

“Wow,” Ye Zichen said darkly.

System Notification: I have no other choice. I’m just a selfish

person like this. Act well according to what I said. Trust me, I won't screw you over. You should understand that very well, right?

Yeah!

How could I not?

Ye Zichen smiled wryly. If there was no surprise, then according to what he had heard using the Great Dao of Heaven's Birth and his guesses, the system was actually...

Honestly, he really didn't want to admit unless he had no other choice.

System Notification: It seems like you understand very well, so I won't say any more. Oh yeah, your strength might be a bit weak to handle what is to come, so I'll give you a present.

Present.

Ye ZIchen was shocked.

At that very moment, a red packet appeared on the screen.

It was from the system!

Chapter 620 – The System’s Malteser

What happened to the system? Did he give me a red packet because he suddenly gained a conscience?

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. However, he still chose to receive the red packet with the mindset of “never waste” even though he was rather furious about the system’s current actions.

For some reason, clicking open the red packet from the system ended up differently with other red packets. This time, the item did not go directly into his Treasure Chest, and instead appeared in his hand.

What was a small brown ball, kind of like a single Malteser.

“Why are you sending me this crappy thing for? Do you think I’m from the countryside and never have had Maltesers before?”

System Notification: Eat it and you’ll find out. What? You scared of me poisoning you?

The system’s reply was rather simple.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at his phone, then popped the ball into his mouth.

Tsk, do you think I’ll be scared?

The moment he did that, he wanted to mock the system. Yet, before he could even utter a single sound, he felt like he had fallen into magma.

His clothes were instantly drenched, while bead-sized droplets of sweat flowed down.

His current state was the exact depiction of sweating like it was raining.

The only difference was that his sweat evaporated not long after they appeared. That was enough to tell just how hot his body temperature had become.

“You f*cking screwed me over.”

His phone fell down onto the bed, while Ye Zichen fell off his bed and grabbed his chest in pain.

...

“Isn’t this the same as spoiling things though excessive enthusiasm?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang commented as she sat in front of the white-shirted man. “Oh yeah, I am rather curious about how you came back to this period of time. Also, are you speaking the truth? Is the future really going to end up like that?”

“I have no need to lie to you,” the white-shirted man put his phone to the side with a smile. “As for whether I’m spoiling things, I don’t think so. It’s something that already belongs to him. I’m just giving it to him a bit sooner.”

“Alright, if you think it’s fine, then alright,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang shrugged, then walked off to the altar, where she looked intently at the sword laying on it.

The sword had already been laying on top of the altar for several days. She could feel that the seal on the blade was gradually becoming undone.

“I still can’t quite believe it. Is the future really going to be like that?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang couldn’t help but turn around and asking.

However, she saw that the white-shirted man had already disappeared. Since she did not get her answer, she could only let out a long sigh, then turn back to Xuan-Yuan Sword.

She clenched her fists tightly and squinted her eyes. “I will definitely not allow that to happen. I will be with you to the very end. I definitely will!”

...

Meanwhile intense heat waves splashed out from Ye Zichen’s room. It wasn’t because he left his door open, rather, it was

because the heat rising from his body had already melted the doors and windows.

There were plenty of people several tens of meters away from his room, but none of them had managed to walk into it.

It was far too hot.

Not only that, even the heat at a location less than twenty meters away from the room was something that Earth Immortals could not endure.

“Brother, will Big Brother Zichen be fine?” Xue Lan bit her lips in worry.

“Tsk, be more positive,” Stone glared. “Is your Big Brother Zichen the kind that’ll get into huge trouble? Don’t worry, he’ll be fine.”

“Sorry, I said the wrong thing. Big Brother Zichen will definitely be fine,” Xue Lan apologized, but her clear eyes were still filled with nervousness and worry as she gazed at the room filled with hot mist.

Five minutes passed by. Ye Zichen’s room was not the only place affected, even the surrounding rooms melted due to the heat coming from his body.

More and more people also came over to watch, but they could only stand further and further away.

“Just what is Ye-zi doing? Did he eat the Sun!?” Stone fanned himself repeatedly. Even though they were already standing more than a hundred meters away, the heat still caused them to sweat heavily.

“I don’t know, it’s all because we’re too weak that we can’t go in and take a look,” Xue Qi frowned.

“Even Sky Immortal leveled people would be seeking death by trying to enter,” Zuo Zhencai popped out.

Xue Qi and co. immediately greeted him, “Elder Zuo.”

Everyone in the entire Leisure House had already gotten wind that Zuo Zhencai is the old Tower Head of the Treasure Tower.

They didn’t dare to put on any tiny bit of airs at all!

“Little Friend Ye is truly mysterious,” Luo Wei walked over and raised his eyebrows. Everybody could clearly see how weak he was from his expression.

“City Lord Luo is out and about?” Xue Qi said. “It seems like your son’s poison has been cured.”

“Mm, it’s all thanks to Little Friend Ye’s idea that my foolish son was cured,” Although Luo Wei was a bit weak, his tone carried a hint of relief. Then, he looked back over to where Ye Zichen was supposed to be. “it seems like Little Friend Ye is no normal person. Let us wait. We can only wait until he comes out himself. Even I cannot endure this heat to enter.”

“What!?” Stone exclaimed.

Luo Wei was the city lord of Maple City, he was beyond strong, and even he said that he can’t enter!?

“My god, Brother Ye didn’t melt inside right!?”

“Don’t be an idiot,” Xue Qi rolled his eyes. “If something really happened to Brother Ye, then this heat wouldn’t keep rising. It really is past time for you to improve your intelligence.”

“Don’t call me dumb. None of us have managed to get in yet. Which of you can be sure that Brother Ye is releasing this heat?”

Slap.

Just as Stone began to retort, Xue Lan slapped him with a frown.

“Don’t say that. Big Brother Zichen is fine!”

Stone couldn’t help but shake his head with a smile when he saw Xue Lan’s pout. Fine, she returned my exact words to me.

Nobody was able to go in to check on the situation. They could only wait outside.

Approximately one hour later...

The heat gradually dispersed from the air. The people waiting outside looked at each other...

“I feel like it’s not so hot now,” Stone said.

“it did cool down quite a bit,” Xue Qi nodded. “But for some reason, I can’t actually feel Brother Ye’s aura. Could I be too weak?”

“I can’t detect it either,” Luo Wei frowned. Technically speaking, as long as a person was alive, people should be able to detect at least a hint of aura from that person no matter how strong they became.

He already sought out with his celestial consciousness the moment it began to cool down.

Yet, he was unable to detect Ye Zichen.

“Could it be...” Stone opened his eyes wide in shock.

Hearing their words, Xue Lan shook her head, “Impossible. Big Brother Zichen is definitely fine!”

With that, she ran towards Ye Zichen’s room.

“Aahh!” A sharp scream rang out. This time, Xue Qi and co. all ran over.

When they reached where Lil’ Lan was, they saw that...

Ye Zichen was lying in a hole in the ground he had melted. He was completely dried up and seemed to be deprived of life...

And a faint white smoke was coming off his body.

Chapter 621 – Must Kill

Ye Zichen's body was completely dried up, making him seem like he had went through some sort of death trap. Alongside the slivers of smoke rising from his body, he seemed like he was going to turn into charcoal.

“B-Big Brother Zichen...” Xue Lan covered her mouth in disbelief.

Everyone else was also shouted when they saw the situation.

“He got burnt!” Stone exclaimed loudly, then reached out to try and touch Ye Zichen...

“Don't touch,” Luo Wei stopped him.

“Then we're just going to let Ye-zi lie here? Even if he died, we should give him a fancy funeral,” Stone's eyes were wet when he spoke. Just how did my good brother get burned like this!?

“Dead? Big Brother Zichen isn't dead... right?” Even Xue Lan had no confidence in what she said. Ye Zichen had pretty much turned to charcoal and there were no hints of life from him at all.

Is he really still alive?

“City Lord Luo, what do you...” Stone and Xue Lan were both too weak, so they hoped that Luo Wei could offer an alternative.

“There are no hints of life from Little Friend Ye,” Luo Wei let out a sigh. “I already checked out the internal situation of his body...” Luo Wei did not continue, but the results were clear from the shake of his head.

There was no hope.

“How could that be...” Xue Lan bit her lips.

Luo Wei also shook his head with a wry smile and slowly lifted his right hand. “Let Little Friend Ye rest in peace.”

With that, he mustered up his spiritual energy and begun to hurl

it towards Ye Zichen.

Everyone in the surroundings all lowered their heads in silence...

Dong.

A ray of light accompanied with flower petals broke through the air and knocked Luo Wei back.

“Do you want to kill him?” The one who spoke up was a woman.

She was a woman that everyone couldn't help but praise for her beauty when they saw her.

However, her beautiful face was glaring coldly at Luo Wei.

“Ye Zichen still has a spark of life within him. Your actions would have cost him his life,” the lady scolded.

Luo Wei's expression was naturally rather terrible when he got scolded to his face. However, he held back his anger and frowned, “I wonder...”

“Heh, I am Li Jiayi from the Hundred Flowers Gate,” Li Jiayi squinted her eyes and snorted coldly.

Luo Wei paused for a moment, then smiled. “So the Hundred Flowers Gate's chief disciple has arrived, but even if your Gate Master comes, he still has to act courteously towards me.”

“I have caused you much offense just now. If City Lord Luo has an issue with that, you may raise it with the Hundred Flowers Gate,” Li Jiayi cupped her hands with a smile. “But I wonder why City Lord Luo is holding hostile intentions towards Ye Zichen? I refuse to believe that you cannot sense with your Sky Immortal level that there is still a spark of life remaining in him.”

Xue Qi and co. Were shocked when they heard Li Jiayi's words.

Xue Lan even grabbed LI Jiayi's arm and shook it, “Big Sister, is what you said for real?”

“Naturally,” Li Jiayi's tone was filled with certainty as she

snorted and looked towards Luo Wei with her pretty eyes. “Ye Zichen is in the stage of ascension. His body will be regrown, but you want to kill him at his weakest hour? City Lord Luo, shouldn’t you explain your actions?”

“Ascension? Is Chief Disciple Li trying to lie with your eyes wide open?” Luo Wei’s expression turned cold. “This is clearly the Silence that only demons would go through. He is a demon, so shouldn’t I kill him!?”

“What!?” Everyone was shocked at the City Lord’s words.

Li Jiayi’s expression also drastically changed. She subconsciously took a step back and stood in front of Ye Zichen, then stared at Luo Wei in prevention of him suddenly attacking.

“As the Chief Disciple of the Hundred Flowers Gate, you should be working with the City Lord’s manor, but you are actually trying to protect a demon who’s going through Silence. Just what are you trying to do!?” Luo Wei scolded sternly, while the spiritual energy in his surroundings begun to rampage. “Move, I have to kill this demon spy!”

“City Lord Luo, don’t forget that Brother Ye was the one who helped your son survive,” Xue Qi said firmly.

Luo Wei snorted, “It’s just a trick. I was wondering why demons would attack me and how this brat managed to get out of the Demon Realm unharmed. That’s the Demon Realm, which opposed the God Race way back then. How could he have gotten out of there? Everything is a ploy. He’s a demon, and his current condition is proof of that!”

“Lil’ Luo, then are you saying that I’m the demons’ spy as well?” Zuo Zhencai snorted.

“That’s very possible,” Luo Wei squinted his eyes. “I hope you don’t fault me for that. Your appearance is simply too sudden. This is a special time, so I have to be wary.”

“I don’t fault you,” Zuo Zhencai shook his head with a wry smile, then continued with a terrible expression. “Being able to escape from the Demon Realm was very fortunate of me, but chaos is about to come. What’s more, I’ve been controlled by the Demon Realm for so long, so it’s fine for you to suspect me as a City Lord. However, Little Friend Ye has always been thinking on behalf of the Three Realms. That’s obvious from everything he says and does. He’s not someone of the Demon Realm...”

“I said it already, I have to be careful,” Luo Wei did not back down. “Although I do not want to believe that Ye Zichen is someone from the Demon Realm, but he... No, I have to kill him. I rather kill a million innocents rather than let go of a guilty person.”

“Sorry, I cannot let you make a move against him,” Li Jiayi stepped forward, and the corsage around her wrist begin to illuminate as her white dress fluttered in the winds.

Even though she was facing a City Lord, she still remained fearless.

“I’m an old man now, if you think that I’m someone of the Demon Realm, then take me as well,” Zuo Zhencai also walked over.

Not long later, Xue Qi and co. all stood opposite Luo Wei.

Even...

“Father, I can assure you that Brother Ye is definitely not someone of the Demon Realm,” Luo Yang dragged his weak body forward and stepped in front of Luo Wei. “You have taught me since I was young that you have to repay kindness to me tenfold, hundredfold and even thousand-fold. Brother Ye saved my life, so you can’t act like this.”

“Lil’ Yang, even you...” Luo Wei pointed forward with a tremble. He never expected that everyone chose to oppose him at such a

critical moment. “Fine, fine! You’re forcing me!”

Dense spiritual energy surged forth, and Luo Wei used the pressure of it to press everyone in front of him to the ground and walked towards Ye Zichen. “Even if all of you will scorn me, I must kill him.”

At that very moment...

A green seed suddenly came out of Ye Zichen’s body, which was still lying in the hole in the ground. Then, the seed released a veil of light.

Ye Zichen’s body also gradually levitated off the ground and shimmered in midair.

Chapter 622 – Three Pairs of Wings

“Don’t you even think about reconstructing your body!” Luo Wei glared at Ye Zichen’s body angrily. Cracks appeared on the ground as he leaped high up into the air and punched the green barrier with both hands.

Yet, the power behind the punches seemed to be absorbed the moment it came into contact with the barrier.

Then, within mere moments...

The barrier reflected the absorbed energy.

Luo Wei immediately knew that it wasn’t going to be good, so quickly retreated...

Bang.

However, he was still affected by the residual force, causing him to cough up a mouthful of blood due to him having already used a lot of his energy before.

He knelt down on the ground, looking rather frail and panted heavily.

“Father!” Luo Yang hurried over, but Luo Wei pushed him against the ground.

“Look at what you have done! He has already reconstructed his body. The best chance to kill him is gone now!”

“Father, Brother Ye isn’t someone from the Demon Realm,” Luo Yang couldn’t help but try again to reason on Ye Zichen’s behalf.

“Isn’t? You’re still saying that he isn’t right now...?” Luo Wei pointed at the unconscious Ye Zichen who levitated above the ground.

When everybody raised their heads to take another look...

Ye Zichen’s body had already been reconstructed. After his dead

skin had peeled off, the new skin beneath seemed to shine like jewels. Yet, what truly made everybody speechless was the three pairs of black and white striped wings behind him.

“I’ve read about it in ancient texts that only Fallen can grow wings. The more wings a Fallen has, the more talented he is. Even since ancient times, the Demon Emperor recorded in the text only had three pairs of wings. He... He is comparable to the Demon Emperor!” Luo Wei said with bloodshot eyes.

The others were also stunned when they heard his words.

Fallen.

Demon Emperor.

“Ye Zichen is definitely not someone of the Demon Race,” Li Jiayi said in an extremely certain tone. She looked up at the wings behind Ye Zichen. “I’m sure of it.”

“Sure of it!?” Luo Wei squinted his eyes as he snorted. “How can you be sure? Even if your master is here, she wouldn’t so as much dare to say that he’s not a demon!”

“What can you even do about it?” Li Jiayi smiled. “It’s already like this. Do you think you still have a chance to kill him?”

...

Luo Wei turned silent at her words.

He looked up at the barrier. Even as someone amongst the strongest in the Three Realms, he still couldn’t do anything against the barrier.

Even if the barrier disappeared, he couldn’t be sure that he could match Ye Zichen, who had three pairs of wings that signaled his talent as equal to the past Demon Emperor that had terrorized the entire six realms.

What’s more, he wasn’t even in peak condition.

Crack.

The barrier shattered. A ray of light shone down from the sky and onto Ye Zichen, causing him to seem rather holy. At the same time, there was still a hint of black mist amidst the holiness, causing him to seem rather dark.

He opened his eyes and looked lifelessly in front of him.

This is a chance! Luo Wei gritted his teeth. This was his final chance to kill Ye Zichen. Luo Wei understood that it would only become increasingly more difficult if he allowed Ye Zichen to regain his consciousness.

He formed a claw with his right hand and reached towards Ye Zichen's throat.

He already mustered up all of his spiritual energy in an attempt to kill Ye Zichen with one strike.

Clap.

Yet, right as his hand was about to wrap itself around Ye Zichen's throat, Ye Zichen lifted his hand and grabbed his arm.

"City Lord Luo, what is this for?"

"To kill you," Luo Wei attacked with his left hand in a more troublesome position as he maintained a dark expression.

Ye Zichen pulled back and asked with great confusion, "City Lord Luo, when did I offend you?"

"Demon spies must die!" With that, Luo Wei suddenly stopped attacking and landed back onto the ground.

At the same time, Ye Zichen also stopped in the air. Neither of them made any other moves.

"What's going on?" Stone scratched his head in confusion.

Li Jiayi glanced upwards. "They're fighting using their primordial spirits."

Approximately five minutes later. Luo Wei clenched his chest

and coughed up a mouthful of blood.

Ye Zichen also retracted his wings with a wry smile, “City Lord Luo, why did you choose to harm your primordial spirit like that?”

Ye Zichen handed a pill over.

However, Luo Wei slapped the pill away from Ye Zichen’s hand and looked up with a dark gaze and laughed. “I didn’t expect that this Silence would have allowed you to gain such strength. I, Luo Wei, is no coward. Do as you please!”

With that, Luo Wei let down his guard and glared forward.

“I won’t kill you,” Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile. “I’m not surprised that City Lord Luo thinks that I’m someone of the Demon Race. These wings are indeed the symbols of demons. But I am not a demon!”

“Ridiculous. Fallen are known as the royalty of the demon race, Chief Ye actually said that...”

“That’s all I have to say regardless of whether you believe me or not,” Ye Zichen shrugged. “As for killing you, that’s something I definitely won’t do. City Lord Luo, please take your leave!”

“Are you sure? As the city lord of Maple City, I do have a tremendous reputation. I already know about your identity as a Fallen. When I return, I’ll definitely contact my friends to deal with you,” Luo Wei squinted his eyes with a snort. “So stop pretending. Right now, my primordial spirit is harmed, and I definitely cannot match you, who has demonic blood flowing through your veins, in physical combat. Although killing me here will expose your identity, at the very least, you can say that you did something.”

“Please” Ye Zichen made a please gesture.

Luo Wei, who seemed like he was about to self explode, smiled, “It seems like your plans are greater than I imagined. Don’t regret letting me go today!”

With that, Luo Wei turned around and left.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen shook his head and landed onto the ground helplessly, then picked up the jade vial with a pill within and handed it over to Luo Yang.

“Here’s a Recovery Pill. Although it isn’t really useful for one’s primordial spirit’s recovery, it does have a bit of an effect on it. Give it to your father.”

“Alright,” Luo Yang put the pill away. Then couldn’t help but call out. “Brother Ye.”

“I’m not a demon,” Ye Zichen turned around with a soft smile and met Luo Yang’s sincere gaze. “Actually, I didn’t want these wings. They are essentially the most glaring stain on my life. But I can’t help it, I couldn’t refuse them. But I can promise you right now that I’m definitely not a demon. Quite the contrary, I have an unresolvable vendetta against the demons! Perhaps this is all baseless talk, but time will show you the truth and prove everything.”

“I believe you,” Luo Yang said with a smile. “Oh yeah, Little Sister Zuo Mo really misses you. If you have time, then go back and take a look. She seems really annoyed recently since she’s about to get engaged with the Mu Family sickly bastard and has been talking about you to me all the time.”

“Zuo Mo,” Ye Zichen paused for a moment. I seem to recall her mentioning that engagement thing to me. “I understand, I’ll find some time to see her.”

“Alright, since I’ve already passed along the message, then I’ll be off,” Luo Yang left the courtyard with a smile.

Then, Ye Zichen turned around and to see Li Jiayi’s beautiful face, “You came!”

Chapter 623 – We'll Go Back

Li Jiayi revealed a complicated expression when she heard the familiar voice.

This man had often been the cause of her mood swings in the Modern Realm, then... she arrived in this one.

The foreign environment caused her to nearly lose her mind until she met her dear mentor.

She felt like everything had ended and had to start over from the beginning.

She had once thought that she was the only one who had transmigrated. However, she once again met him here.

Is this fate?

Li Jiayi smiled wryly.

Then, after a while, she came back to herself and pursed her lips, "My master is hurrying me to return. I'm leaving."

With that, Li Jiayi turned around to leave.

Ye Zichen quickly caught up and smiled, "Let me walk you out."

It had been quite a while since they saw each other and as she smelled the scent of the man beside her... She began to fiddle with her hands.

Sensing the awkward atmosphere between them, Ye Zichen smiled and broke the silence.

"Why did you come to Maple City?"

"It was just along the way," Li Jiayi answered causally, but the truth was that...

She had intentionally asked others for Ye Zichen's location and deliberately came over to see him.

"Did everyone at Mount Supreme come out?"

“No, quite a lot of people are still inside. Mount Supreme is not open to the public and new people often go in to test their luck,” Li Jiayi answered plainly.

“I see,” Ye Zichen nodded, then suddenly didn’t know what to say.

Awkwardness surrounded them once more.

From the very beginning, Li Jiayi gazed forward as she fiddled with the hems of her clothes and occasionally stole a few peeks at Ye Zichen.

He feels more reliable and... manlier...

“H-How are you after coming here?” Li Jiayi suddenly asked after a long silence.

“I’m doing fine. You know me, I’m not the kind to let myself suffer setbacks,” Ye Zichen shrugged. “You were at my own faction just now. Leisure House... Hmm, it’ll be equal to your Hundred Flowers Gate in the future.”

“You’re still so amazing,” Li Jiayi smiled softly.

Ye Zichen nodded, “How’re you?”

“I’m doing pretty good as well. Master cares a lot about me and I’m very lucky to have the talent they always speak of. As the chief disciple, my junior and senior sisters are all very nice to me,” Li Jiayi smiled gently, while her body trembled a little.

Noticing that, Ye Zichen put his hand on her shoulder and comforted, “It must be very hard on you to arrive in such a foreign place, right? Don’t worry, we’ll definitely go back.”

“We will?” Li Jiayi’s eyes lit up and looked at Ye Zichen in surprise. “Can we really go back?”

“Of course. Believe me, we will.”

“Junior sister!” At that moment, a slightly displeased voice sounded out from behind the two.

They turned back and saw that a man in a red and yellow striped robe and carrying a long sword on his back was standing in front of the teleportation portal to the Hundred Flowers Gate with a frown.

“Senior Brother Yin,” Li Jiayi nodded towards him with a smile.

Ye Zichen was momentarily stunned, causing him to raise his eyebrows, “The Hundred Flowers Gate has male disciples?”

“Most of us are female, but there is a line underneath Martial Uncle Liu who are mostly male. They are mainly around to protect the safety of us female disciples when we venture out,” Li Jiayi explained.

“But I feel like his protection puts you in more danger,” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

The man with the sword also walked over and frowned towards Li Jiayi, “Martial Uncle wanted you to return, but since he still didn’t see you, he told me to come and get you.”

“I’ve troubled you, Senior Brother Yin. I met an old friend on the way, so I chatted for a while longer,” Li Jiayi replied.

“Old friend?” Senior Brother Yi scanned Ye Zichen judgmentally with an arrogant attitude that only served to discomfort Ye Zichen. Then, he twitched his mouth. “Heh, since you’ve already met, then hurry back. Martial Uncle is very worried about you.”

“Okay,” Li Jiayi nodded, then parted reluctantly with Ye Zichen. “Everything you said just now was true, right?”

Ye Zichen naturally understood that she meant returning to the Modern Realm, so he nodded, “Of course.”

“I believe you. I’m off,” thus, she entered the portal reluctantly.

Only then did he walk over with a snort of disdain, “I don’t know what you promise junior sister. She is young and doesn’t know a lot about the world, so she might have been tricked by your flowery words. Regardless, she is still the chief disciple of our

Hundred Flowers Gate. Brat... enough is enough is my advice for you.”

Bang.

His sword flew up into the air and danced around.

Then, he retracted his sword and disappeared into the portal.

“What the hell!”

...

When Ye Zichen returned to Leisure House, he found Stone and co. wondering about how to deal with the area Ye Zichen melted.

When Stone turned around and saw Ye Zichen return, he immediately went over, while Xue Qi put on a strange look.

“Ye-zi.”

“I did all this?” Ye Zichen scratched his head with a coy smile.

Stone rolled his eyes in annoyance, “Yeah, it’s all you. Wow, you really are amazing. You managed to burn the house down and made a big hole in the ground.

“Sorry, sorry,” Ye zichen scratched his head, while he cursed the system.

This damn system. Just a simple Malteser from it caused such huge trouble and even increased the number of wings I have.

At that moment, Xue Qi walked over with a dark look.

He stared at Ye Zichen for a while, “Brother Ye, you... truly have nothing to do with the demons, right?”

“No,” Ye Zichen answered affirmatively. “I can assure you that I’m not someone from the Demon Race. I don’t want to explain in that much detail. Believe me if you will, but if you don’t... I’ll leave.”

“What’re you doing? We’re all bros here!” Stone hooked his arms around Ye Zichen and Xue Qi’s shoulders. “Let’s stop talking about

all that. C'mon, let's grab a drink."

"Never mind, I still have some things to handle, so just drink with Brother Ye," Xue Qi turned around to leave. However, right before he stopped, he stopped for a moment. "I believe you."

Ye Zichen nodded towards him. Then after sending him off, he smiled. "I have some things to do as well. Oh yeah... Can you get me a room?"

"I already arranged it for you. Lil' Lan, take your Big Brother Zichen to his new room," Stone waved his head.

Lil' Lan immediately skipped over and giggled, "Big Brother Zichen, let's go."

...

When Ye Zichen finally laid down on the bed in his new room, he thought back to what had happened earlier.

What worried him the most was actually the Blood Zombie.

We couldn't find the jade pendant Yellow Hair lost. Could Hanba have gotten out of it?

Chapter 624 – The Miraculous Dragon Balls

At the Zuo household.

Zuo Mo sat by the window with frustration writ upon her face, in an extremely feminine room as she looked at the seven divine stones in front of her.

She had found them in the dragon carriage when she departed from Mount Supreme. At the beginning, she was rather happy to find them because she could clearly remember what Ye Zichen had said. Collecting all seven of them could allow her to summon the divine dragon to grant her any wish.

When they used it before, a portal had opened, but the balls which were supposed to disappear actually ended up in her carriage. She had already made up her mind that she must keep the balls so that they could be used to fulfill her wish.

For example, when the competition for the Tower Head starts, or when she wanted to break off the engagement...

She wanted the divine dragon to arrive from the heavens and grant her wish.

It really did make her feel excited.

Yet, despite how grand her wishes was, reality was another thing all together. She didn't end up leaving the seven dragon balls until then. Instead...

“Why isn't it working? Didn't he say that collecting all seven of them can summon the divine dragon to grant wishes? I have all of them and already made my wish. Why isn't the divine dragon here? Is making Ye Zichen appear in front of me even more difficult than opening up Mount Biluo's seal?” Zuo Mo pouted and looked out the window. She clearly remembers that when the envoy of the divine dragon appeared, rain clouds covered the sky in thunder and lightning...

Yet, right now... It was clear skies everywhere in sight. It didn't seem like the divine dragon was going to appear at all.

It seems like my wish failed.

“Where did the damn guy go? He didn't come to see me in so long. Does he not know that I'm the money provider behind his Leisure House? Shouldn't he at least come and greet me?”

Ta ta ta...

Clear footsteps sounded out from outside the door. Not long later, the door to Zuo Mo's room pushed open, and Tiantian ran in with a giggle.

“Tiantian.”

Ever since they departed from Mount Supreme, Tiantian and Lil' Lan, the winged dragon, stayed with Zuo Mo in the Zuo Household.

While she lived with Tiantian, she found that she begun to like the little cutie more and more. Tiantian was very different from the other children she knows. She was very obedient and sensible.

“Big Sister Zuo Mo, Daddy's here,” Tiantian giggled.

Zuo Mo was momentarily stunned before her face lit up, “You said Ye Zichen's here?”

With that, she begun to pace around the room. The Divine Dragon truly didn't disappoint. My wish was indeed granted!

She bit her lips nervously, then ran in front of the bronze mirror to check out how she looked, then ran beside Tiantian, “Good Tiantian, take your daddy to the meeting hall. Big Sister will redo my makeup before going out.”

“But... Daddy's already here,” when Tiantian finished, Ye Zichen appeared at the door to the room and waved towards Zuo Mo.

“Long time no see.”

“Ahh!” Zuo Mo exclaimed, then squatted down and covered her face with one hand as she waved towards Ye Zichen with the other. “Go out.”

“Don’t be like with me. It’s alright,” Ye Zichen directly walked into the room, then raised his eyebrows at the extremely girly room. “Zeze, I really didn’t expect this, but Princess Zuo’s room is rather cute.”

“Who allowed you in here? Get out. I’ll go and meet you in the meeting hall altar,” Zuo Mo muttered as she continued to squat on the floor.

Ye Zichen glanced at her, “Why are you covering your face? Was it ruined?”

“Daddy’s so dumb, Big Sister Zuo Mo wants you to see her when she’s pretty. Let’s go, let’s go, she’ll come see us later,” Tiantian yanked Ye Zichen and left like a miniature adult.

When their footsteps finally faded, Zuo Mo looked up once again.

Actually, at that moment, her beauty was still shocking if she was to venture out. However, she merely wanted to seem even more beautiful in front of Ye Zichen.

...

Man, the Zuo family is truly rich.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but gasp when he saw the garden of spiritual plants and the buildings that even had celestial grade treasures within them.

Only the Treasure Tower can afford all this. I doubt any other faction would be so luxurious.

When they arrived in the meeting hall, Ye Zichen chose to sit down on a chair. Approximately five minutes later, Zuo Mo walked out leisurely.

“You used so much time, but you don’t look so different,” Ye

Zichen couldn't help but snicker.

Hearing that, Zuo Mo nearly exploded her rage. It was her first time to intentionally put on makeup and make herself seem more beautiful for someone else, but not only did she not earn any praise, she actually got mocked.

"If you don't stop smiling like a jackass, then... Consequences are dire," Zuo Mo gritted her teeth in response.

Ye Zichen quickly sat straight like a primary school kid and schooled his features, "Is this okay?"

"I have no idea why, but I want to hit you even more now," Zuo Mo clenched her teeth and lifted her hand, then put it down angrily.

After that, she sat down uncaringly in the chair opposite Ye Zichen, "Why did you suddenly remember to come over here? I've been rather busy recently, so I don't have much time for you."

"Since Lady Mo is so busy, then... I'll leave?" Ye Zichen pretended that he was going to leave.

Zuo Mo's hand trembled.

At the same time, Tiantian yanked Ye Zichen on the hem of his shirt, "Don't go Daddy, Tiantian missed you so much."

"Of course Daddy knows Tiantian missed me. I came to take Tiantian back. Your Big Sister Zuo Mo said she's really busy and have no time for us, so let's stop intruding on her," Ye Zichen picked Tiantian up and sat her in his lap, then raised his eyebrows. "Thank you for taking care of Tiantian. We'll stop taking up your time."

"Ye Zichen!" Zuo Mo suddenly stood up from the chair.

Coincidentally, Zuo Liang entered the room. When he saw Ye Zichen, he immediately went over, "Big Brother Zichen, when did you get back?"

Then he noticed Zuo Mo's expression and gulped, "Uhm..."

"Ye Zichen, must you trample on other people's dignity? Fine, I'll tell you the truth, I made a wish to see you. I don't want you to leave. You happy now!?" With that, Zuo Mo's tears flowed down like a waterfall. Only she knew just how much her dignity hurt as a strong woman to say something like that.

Ye Zichen merely wanted to crack a joke. He didn't expect everything to turn out like that.

He quickly put Tiantian down and walked over with a wry smile, "Don't cry. I was just kidding. Lady Zuo is a queen, how can you just cry like that. Good girl, don't cry now."

He reached out with his finger to wipe away her tears, then couldn't help but raise his eyebrow, "Oh yeah, you said you made a wish? Who did you wish to to get it granted?"

"W-Who else? Of course it's the dr-dragon balls!" Zuo Mo choked out.

Chapter 625 – Divine Stone

Dragon Balls.

Ye Zichen was confused.

I was just bullshitting, Zuo Mo actually took me seriously? What's more, summoning the divine dragon needs all seven dragon balls, where did she find such things?

“So the divine dragon you summoned caused me to come,” Ye Zichen shrugged.

“I didn't see the divine dragon, but I did make a wish and you came,” Zuo Mo muttered.

Ye Zichen didn't say anything else, and merely raised his eyebrows with a smile. “That's pretty amazing of you to actually collect all seven dragon balls by yourself.”

“No. The seven dragon balls were in my carriage when I came out of Mount Supreme,” Zuo Mo blinked.

Ye Zichen was momentarily shocked. Then he raised his eyebrows, “You're talking about the divine stones I used to open up Mount Biluo?”

Yue Lao had asked him for those several times, and he thought that the black-robed person had taken them away.

It seems like the stones are still with Zuo mo...

“Yeah, the ones used to unseal Mount Biluo,” Zuo Mo nodded.

“Are they still with you?”

“I don't know. They were here earlier, but I don't know if they disappeared after my wish was fulfilled,” Zuo Mo pursed her lips. “I'll take a look. If they're still here, then I'll bring them over.”

“Mhmm,” Zuo Mo walked out of the meeting hall.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen remained seated as Zuo Liang raised his

eyebrows curiously. “Big brother Ye, what was those dragon balls things you were talking with my sister about?”

“You’re a kid, don’t be so nosey,” Ye Zichen crossed his legs. “Why didn’t you two go out to host any auctions? What? Do your auctions have off seasons?”

“Do you think I don’t want to go?” Zuo Liang twitched his mouth and sat down on the chair beside Ye Zichen and took a bite out of a fruit from a plate on the table, then complained. “You know my sister’s gonna get engaged to that brat Mu Chengtian. The Tower Head election’s coming soon, so I’ve got to stay home to be with her. After all, what if she gets bullied?”

“Hehe, so you want to be a knight!” Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile. He could tell that the siblings were on great terms

“Hehe,” Zuo Liang scratched his head with a smile.

“You’re lucky, the stones are still here,” at that moment, Zuo Liang returned with seven shimmering stones, which she placed onto the table.

Zuo Liang’s gaze was instantly drawn by the stones. He looked intently at them, then raised his eyebrows. “These are stones that can grant wishes?”

“I’m telling you, these stones are amazing,” Zuo Mo smirked, then started explaining them to Zuo Liang. As for what she said, it was pretty much everything Ye Zichen had said to shock her. “After the divine dragon died, his soul remained in our realm. In order to make life better for us, the divine dragon left seven dragon balls. Collecting all seven can summon the divine dragon. When the divine dragon appears, the skies will rumble and the ground will tremble since it was so strong before that its appearance will bend even the will of the heavens. When he appears, you can make a wish which he’ll grant. The seven spheres you see right now are the seven legendary dragon balls!”

Zuo Mo spoke mysteriously and spoke out Ye Zichen's bullshit like it was fact, while Zuo Liang listened intently and seriously.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but shake his head with a chuckle, then took out his phone to talk to Yue Lao.

"Sky Sovereign, what made you contact me?" Yue Lao's message appeared on the screen. Not long after, he immediately added. "Oh, sorry. You're the Chancellor of the Grand Secretariat now, so you came to check up on my work. Give me a moment, I'll report to you about my work..."

Ye Zichen was speechless. He immediately replied in annoyance, "Stop pretending with me. I sought you out to return the divine stones to you."

Divine Stones? Yue Lao frowned as he pondered in his heart. Didn't Sovereign lose those? Why is he suddenly saying that he wants to return them? He can't actually want me to return my shares to him, right?

Ye Zichen immediately sent a message when he saw that Yue Lao did not reply.

"Do you want them or not? Didn't you say that the divine stones are items of a primordial age that you found with much difficulty? You were crying so hard when I lost them. Do you not want them now?"

"Sky Sovereign, if you return the divine stones, then are you taking back my shares?" Yue Lao asked.

"Of course. Those shares were to compensate you for the lost stones. We already agreed back then that you'll return the shares to me after they're found!" Ye Zichen replied.

"Then I don't want the divine stones anymore," Yue Lao shook his head. Although the divine stones were treasures from the God Realm, and were more than what met the eyes, but he had them for quite a while and never managed to figure anything out.

In comparison to a few stones which could only be used as the foundation for spiritual formations, he preferred the shares of the Heavenly Court's Industry Zone.

"..." Ye Zichen was speechless. "Don't try to act shamelessly with me."

"Sky Sovereign, I'm telling you. Money is just materialistic things. You are a great person, so you shouldn't care about these mundane things so much. The divine stones are different, they are divine items. You might be able to pry into more of the secrets of the heavens with them. That's a great fortune."

As the saying goes, he who stays near vermilion gets stained red; he who stays near ink gets stained black. Yue Lao was originally a very nice old man, but ever since he met Ye Zichen, he has already learned the way of sales and propaganda.

However, Ye Zichen only smiled as the master of it all.

"You have had the divine stones for quite a while. What did you manage to find?"

"Ha..." Yue Lao chuckled. "This little deity is untalented, and unlike the Sky Sovereign who is bound with great fortune. It may just be some mundane items in my hands, but it is completely different in yours."

"Yue Lao, you've grown," Ye Zichen shook his head with a wry smile. "Fine, since you don't want it, then I'll keep it. Oh yeah, how has the Heavenly Court Corporation been doing?"

"Our revenue is increasing daily. Although the Heavenly Court has been in a bit of a mess recently, it didn't affect our corporation."

"Alright. Compile a report of the revenue for me when you have time. Go and do your own thing. Oh yeah, don't forget your proper job."

"No problem, I'll send it over to you tonight."

After he quit the chat with Yue Lao, Ye Zichen felt two heated gazes staring right at him.

“You two...”

“Big Brother Ye, can you let me take a look at the dragon balls?” Zuo Liang’s eyes were filled with anticipation. It was clear that he believed it as well!

“This is just to mess with your sister. It isn’t actually a dragon ball. Only your sister’s dumb enough to believe it,” Ye Zichen chucked the divine stones into Zuo Liang’s hands.

Zuo Liang chuckled, “I’m just taking a look.”

After receiving it, he did as Zuo Mo told him, and placed it into the formation of the Big Dipper, then muttered, “Is this really as amazing as my sister says? If it really can grant wishes, then get Mu Chengtian over here.”

With that, a exclaim sounded out outside the meeting hall. “Why’re you here!?”

Indeed, the person who had just arrived was no other than Mu Chengtian!

Chapter 626 – Mu Chengtian's Visit

Mu Chengtian's face was stark white like a piece of paper. Meanwhile, a butler-like elder stood beside him and helped him step over the measly ten centimeters tall doorsill.

However, merely the action of stepping over the doorsill took Mu Chengtian pretty much all his might.

“W-Why are you here?” Mu Chengtian's chest heaved up and down as he pointed his finger at Ye Zichen angrily.

Zuo Liang was completely dumbfounded when he saw this. He looked at the shimmering stones on the ground in surprise and gulped.

It really was granted.

“Zuo Liang,” Zuo Mo bit her lips and shouted angrily at him. “You just made a wish didn't you!?”

Zuo Liang smiled coyly when he saw his sister's reaction, “Big Brother Ye said it wouldn't work, so I wanted to try. Who would have expected that...”

“Then couldn't you try something else!?” Zuo Mo clenched her teeth in anger. He actually made such a wish even after what I said to him. Ugh, is he trying to piss me off?

“Hehe...” Zuo Liang scratched his head and laughed dryly.

On the other hand, a hint of anger surfaced on the stark white face of Mu Chengtian, who was completely ignored by everyone else. “Do you guys think I'm not here!?”

“What if we do?” Zuo Mo frowned. “Who told you to come here? The Zuo household has no time for you.”

“Lady Zuo, isn't your attitude a bit over the top?” the old butler said.

“Is this a place where you're permitted to speak?” Zuo Mo

squinted her eyes and snorted. “If we put it nicely, you’re Mu Chengtian’s teacher, but truth be told, you’re just his butler. You should really consider who the heck you are before speaking to me, got it?”

“Lil’ Mo, what are you doing?” Hearts nearly popped out of Mu Chengtian’s eyes when he saw how beautiful Zuo Mo looked, which also caused his tone to become a lot gentler. “Elder Zheng is my teacher.”

“I can’t be bothered with you. What did you come to the Zuo household for? If you want to talk to my father, then I’m sorry, but he hasn’t been around these few days.”

“It’s for the engagement,” Mu Chengtian forced a smile. “I’ve already brought the betrothal gift. It’s right outside your manor.”

“I seem to recall the engagement date being in three days. You’re too early. Also, I haven’t decided to get engaged to you yet, so don’t call me Lil’ Mo. You’re not that close to me,” Zuo Mo’s tone remained strong.

Mu Chengtian stuttered, but was unable to form a coherent sentence.

However, the elder beside him couldn’t stand it anymore. Thus, he snorted, “Lady Zuo Mo, no matter what, you’re the darling daughter of Tower Head Zuo. You should watch yourself when you speak. Every single one of your words and actions reflects upon the Treasure Tower. Being so unreasonable will only cause people to think that there is something wrong with your education.”

“You have no right to talk about my education,” Zuo Mo snorted.

“Oh, what’s this? I heard my Big Sister’s Zuo Mo’s really strong tone from miles away. Who pissed her off?” Zuo Qingcheng shook her waist as she walked in.

Mu Chengtian’s face instantly turned bright red when he saw her.

Although the Mu family and Zuo family were very close, he was unable to visit often due to his own body's conditions.

The only reason he managed to get to know Zuo Mo was by chance. However, he had never seen Zuo Qingcheng before.

"I wonder..." Mu Chengtian gulped.

Zuo Qingcheng smiled alluringly, "This must be Young Master Mu, my sister's husband, right? Truly, no words can describe you. Young Master Mu might not have seen me before. I am the Zuo family's second young mistress, Zuo Qingcheng. My sister has always acted strong, so Young Master Mu might be in some trouble in the future."

"Zuo Qingcheng, why are you always around at times like this?" Zuo Mo squinted her eyes with a smile. "It seems like the lesson last time wasn't enough?"

Zuo Qingcheng's shoulders shook for some reason.

Then, she walked beside Mu Chengtian and swept her fingers across his face with a smile, "I just wanted to see my future brother-in-law. If older sister doesn't want me around, then I'll leave."

With that, Zuo Qingcheng left. When she got to the entrance, she stopped, then gave both Mu Chengtian and Ye Zichen a flirtatious look before disappearing from sight.

"Your eyes are going to come out of their sockets if you stare any harder," Zuo Mo couldn't help but complain when she saw Ye Zichen's unmoving gaze.

Ye Zichen smiled coyly, then noticed the saliva about to drip out of Mu Chengtian's mouth, "It seems like your hubby's affected even more!"

Only then did Zuo Mo look over with a cold laugh.

"Lil' Mo, don't overthink," Mu Chengtian hurriedly wiped away

the saliva from his mouth after hearing Zuo Mo's cold laugh.

"I'm not overthinking, if you're interested in Zuo Qingcheng, then just get engaged to her. She seems rather interested in you as well, so you'll be great together," Zuo Mo shrugged. "But if you're still insistent on me, then I'm sorry. Let's be honest we're impossible. Take away the gifts you brought over as well, I'll go over to the Mu family on the set date."

"Lady Zuo, I think you made a mistake," the old man beside Mu Chengtian smiled. "We came here after a proper discussion between Tower Head Zuo and our master. They also checked the date and felt like the day three days later is no good, so they brought the date earlier to tomorrow."

"Say that again!?" Zuo Mo frowned.

"I don't mind even if I have to say it a million times. Tower Head Zuo and our master decided on that. So, Lady Zuo, do you have anything else to say?" the old man smiled.

Creak.

Zuo Mo's expression darkened and clenched her fists.

"Butler!"

Ta ta ta...

A middle-aged man appeared quickly at the entrance.

Zuo Mo let out a long sigh, then pointed at Mu Chengtian and the old man, "Send our guests off!"

"Young Mistress, they are..." the butler revealed a hesitant expression.

Zuo Mo squinted her eyes and snorted, "What? Do my words mean nothing to you?"

"Young Mistress, they are the Mu family..."

"This is the Zuo household, not the Mu household. Don't make

me repeat myself. Send our guests off!” Zuo Mo glared at him angrily.

The old man raised his hand and pointed...

“You dare to point at me?” Zuo Mo’s expression turned cold, then chuckled. “I changed my mind!”

She turned over and fluttered her long eyebrows at Ye Zichen, who was standing behind her and watching the show.

Noting that, Ye Zichen felt something was up. “What?”

“Let’s make a deal,” Zuo Mo giggled and looked at him.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Go on...”

Zuo Mo giggled. “That guy pointed at me just now. I’m not happy. So how about you teaching him a lesson for me? I’ll give you a reward!”

Chapter 627 – I'm telling you, don't even take a single step forward

She's trying to screw me over...

That was the only thing Ye Zichen could think of.

The old man was Mu Chengtian's teacher, and no matter how frail he was, Mu Chengtian was one of the Mu family. They say that you always have to look at who's the owner before beating the dog.

Zuo Mo might be the young mistress of the Treasure Tower, so she can just curse at the old man for a bit.

But the Mu family is definitely going to cause trouble for a pure little guy like me if I beat these two up.

I'm not a pussy, I just really don't want to get into more trouble.

"Young Mistress Zuo is truly funny. Him...?" Faint disdain surfaced in the old man's eyes. "Ignoring the fact that this brat is of no threat to me at all, you really shouldn't drag an outsider into our affairs. The Mu family is not a family that should be easily offended."

I know right?

Ye Zichen nodded silently.

Zuo Mo smirked, then walked before him. "I'm just asking you this one time. Are you helping me?"

Zuo Mo's tone was very calm, but it was that very calmness that caused Ye Zichen to feel like something was wrong. He really wanted to refuse, yet for some reason, he just couldn't utter the words of refusal.

"You didn't refuse me, so do it. I believe that you can deal with him," with that, Zuo Mo stepped backwards and made way for Ye

Zichen.

Now that it has already come to that, Ye Zichen didn't say anything else. He merely shrugged, "Gramps, hurry up and take the sick and frail Mu Chengtian away. I don't want to attack you guys, there really is no benefit to all this."

"Who're you calling sick and frail? Say that again if you dare!" Mu Chengtian trembled in rage.

"Huuuu." Ye Zichen didn't say anything and merely blew in Mu Chengtian's direction.

"Ahh..." Mu Chengtian hurriedly grabbed the old man's arm. From his wobbling appearance, if it wasn't for that old man supporting him, Mu Chengtian really might have flown away.

"The truth cannot be denied," Ye Zichen twitched his mouth, then made a please gesture. "Just stop causing trouble here. Young Mistress Zuo already put it this way... Isn't it shameful for you guys just sticking around and refusing to leave?"

"Zheng Qian," Mu Chengtian murmured softly.

The old man nodded faintly, then put him to the side.

"This is related to the Mu Family's face. Just what face do we have if we leave right now?" Zheng Qian turned around coldly as his robe fluttered loudly in the air and a sharp gaze surfaced in his ancient eyes. "Lady Zuo is one thing, since we're family in the future, but this foolish young man..."

Zheng Qian cracked his neck and slowly walked forward.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen was completely speechless.

What the heck did I even do to you? I didn't even say anything, how's this my fault now?

He subconsciously glanced towards Zuo Mo and noticed that she had sat down on a chair and smiled towards him as if she was watching a show.

Then he glanced at the menacing Zheng Qian...

F*ck this, he really does think that I'm an easy picking.

“Don't say that I didn't warn you. Consequences are dire if you choose to step forward even one more step,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and looked forward.

Hearing that, Zheng Qian laughed loudly as if he heard something hilarious, “Let's see what you're going to do to me.”

Boom.

A Sky Immortal's spiritual energy radiated forth and the terrifying pressure caused the Zuo family's butler to can't help but advise, “Mr. Zheng, no matter what, we're in the Zuo family's land. Fighting isn't really right.”

“This kid insulted the Young Lord of the Mu family, what will happen to the Mu family's face if I don't teach him a lesson?” Zheng Qian snorted coldly, then turned towards Ye Zichen. “If you are apologetic about it, then apologize to my young lord. I can let you off.”

“You have to kneel while you apologize!” Mu Chengtian added.

“I'm going to repeat what I said again. If you take even a single step forward... the consequences will be dire,” Ye Zichen stood on the spot with a carefree smile.

Zheng Qian's expression darkened, “You're just too cocky!”

He stepped forwards.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but shake his head with a smile, “You really aren't going to give up until you taste the consequences!”

At the same time, Ye Zichen also moved.

Bang. Bang. Bang.

In the time of a mere few breaths, Zheng Qian's head swelled up like a pig's head. Blood flowed from the corner of his mouth. Ye

Zichen picked him up by the collar and took a few steps and chucked him over the wall.

All of that happened in the span of but a few mere moments.

“Man, I told you so many times, but you refused to listen. Now, you finally stopped trying,” Ye Zichen commented, then put his hands in his pocket and walked back.

The Zuo family’s butler was completely shocked. Even with his strength, he didn’t manage to clearly see what the young man did.

More importantly, that was a Sky Immortal level expert. He was dealt with just like that!?

“Grandson, what are you still here for? Do you need me to provide meals for you?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Mu Chengtian.

Mu Chengtian, who seemed completely dumbfounded, screamed out in a strange manner, then ran away like a rabbit whose tail was stepped on.

“Damn, you really can’t tell just how sick he is when he’s running.”

“It seems like you’ve gotten stronger since the last time we met,” Zuo Mo pursed her lips with a smile.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Kind of. But you really screwed me over big time. Now the Mu family actually has a grudge against me. My small force was just established. I’m pretty speechless about gaining such an enemy now.”

“You’re saying that you don’t make enemies everywhere?” Zuo Mo smiled meaningfully.

Ye Zichen did not deny it. He merely shrugged.

At this moment, the Zuo family’s butler walked over,” Young Mistress, the Mu family...”

“Ignore them. Never mind, get someone to send a message to the Mu family later and say that that Zheng Qian was pissing me off. If

they are still angry about that, then come talk to me,” Zuo Mo’s tone was completely indifferent.

Hearing that, the old butler smiled wryly.

Fine, just like I thought, I have to deal with this in the end.

When the butler left from the hall, Zuo Liang spoke up, “Sis, it wasn’t a good idea for us to get the guy beaten up, right? Father’s definitely going to scold you when he returns.”

“It’s all your fault,” Zuo Mo bit her lips and smacked his head. “If you didn’t make that sort of shitty wish, then it wouldn’t have turned out like this!”

“I didn’t expect it would work that well!” Zuo Liang muttered.

Now that something like that had occurred, even Ye Zichen felt like the stones were amazing. He was just messing with Zuo Mo when he said that they can grant wishes, but judging on everything that had happened...

The wish to open Mount Biluo’s seal was granted.

The wish for me to come to the Zuo household was granted.

The wish for Mu Chengtian to come to the Zuo household was granted as well.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but squat down and look at the seven pieces of seven stones on the floor.

Zuo Liang and Zuo Mo also did the same.

Can they really grant wishes?

Ye Zichen refused to believe that!

“Get the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens to add me to his friend list if you can!”

The Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens was the most mysterious existence in the entirety of the Underworld. Ye Zichen had never seen him pop up even once in the Underworld’s group

chat ever since he got in.

If something impossible like this happens, then...

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen's phone vibrated.

F*ck! It actually came true!?

Chapter 628 – Cronyism

“Big Brother Ye, where did you get such amazing stones from?” Zuo Liang’s eyes shone brightly as he looked towards Ye Zichen.

However, Ye Zichen had no time for him. He was busy wondering whether he should take out his phone and what he should do if the Heavenly Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven actually did send him a friend request.

“Big Brother Ye.”

“I picked them up from the side of the streets,” Ye Zichen replied in annoyance while wearing a frown. Then he sat down on a nearby chair and took out his phone.

Gulp.

I’ll have to face this sooner or later...

He opened up the app.

Ye Zichen’s worrying heart finally calmed down when he saw that there were no friend requests. He let out a long sigh, but couldn’t help but feel a little bit disappointed.

These stones can’t actually grant wishes. I suppose everything before that was just a coincidence.

As for the notification vibration, it was because the God of Thunder had just sent him a message.

“Sky Sovereign, I have some things I would like to request.”

Ugh, I haven’t even use any of my rights as the Chancellor of the Grand Secretariat, but I still have to deal with the things for the Jade Emperor now. Gah, I suppose I do have to work in this position.

Taibai Jinxing might have just been wiping the Jade Emperor’s ass all the time.

Ahh, speaking of which, I haven't contacted him for quite a while. I wonder what he's been busy with. He hasn't contacted me either.

"What is it?"

"Sky Sovereign, it's like this. Over the past few years, the heavenly soldiers' equipment have been damaged a bit, I would like to request some military funding to get some new equipment for the soldiers," God of Thunder replied.

"Then do it. Oh yeah, you should go and ask the God of Fortune for money, why are you asking me?" Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

"I should indeed go to the Gods of Fortunes, but you're the chancellor, so I have to report it to you first to get your approval. Otherwise, I'll only be ignored," God of Thunder smiled wryly.

"Alright, then just ask the God of Fortune directly and tell him that I told you so. You can even send those gods a screenshot of our chat. If they still don't believe you, then tell them to come and find me." Ye Zichen really couldn't be bothered with all that.

God of Thunder chuckled as his intimacy level increased by 50 points, then went off to look for the God of Fortune.

Seriously, coming to me for these tiny matters.

Ye Zichen closed the chat and shook his head with a smile. However, before he could even put his phone away, God of Fortune had sent him a message.

F*ck me, they're seriously efficient!

Ye Zichen was momentarily stunned, then he clicked open the chat.

"Sky Sovereign, you agreed to fund God of Thunder?"

"Yeah, what is the issue with it?" Ye Zichen replied. "The heavenly soldiers are important people who protect the land of our Heavenly Court, isn't it normal to let them be better equipped?"

What's more, aren't you on pretty good terms with God of Thunder? Why do you need to come to me for this?"

"Of course I'm willing to fund him, but the funding will take a lot of paperwork, it's a lot of trouble," God of Fortune sighed. "You know that we're the [five gods of fortune](#). Although I'm the God of Fortune proper, the power is split amongst all five of us. You heard of the martial and literi ones right? The Wenchang Monarch isn't on good terms with me and I can't be bothered with him..."

"That's simple. You're in charge of everything related to wealth from now on. Just show that Wenchang Monarch or something our chat. If he can't accept it, then tell him to come to me. Oh yeah, don't just fund the God of Thunder, even though he was the one who came to me, the other generals' soldiers might need new equipment as well, so fund them all," Ye Zichen waved his hand.

Seeing that, God of Fortune was beyond excited.

After such a long cold war with Wenchang Monarch, it has finally come to an end.

I've finally got good backing!

"Understood Sky Sovereign, I'll go do that immediately. Come over to the Heavenly Court when you have time, I'll set up a proper banquet for you!"

"Go, go," Ye Zichen smiled. He understood that perhaps his method of handling everything was rather unfair to Wenchang Monarch, but the latter wasn't someone he was familiar with, while Zhao Gongming was someone he was close and on good terms with. In fact, Zhao Gongming could be considered to be amongst one of those who he had first established a connection with.

Their intimacy level reached 600, which was already in the admiration level. He wasn't worried about Zhao Gongming betraying him at all.

What's more, even if Zhao Gongming had the intention... He would be able to notice it with the system...

He can just directly fire God of Fortune any time he wants.

Dingdong.

In less than thirty minutes, Ye Zichen received a friend request.

To no one's surprise, it was one from Wenchang Emperor.

Accept.

"Sky Sovereign, when we, the status of the Gods of Fortune were bestowed upon the five of us, Taibai Jinxing intentionally split the powers between us five for balance. It was also to ensure that nobody would be able to single-mindedly dictate everything when trouble arises, which will make us discuss more. You just came to power, how could you hand all the power to Zhao Gongming?"

Wenchang Emperor did not greet him, did not say anything else and instead said everything extremely bluntly!

Wow, very strong.

But I'm not afraid.

"You got a problem with that?"

"Of course. You're messing around here!" Wenchang Monarch said fiercely. "Do you want to destroy the balance that Taibai Jinxing tried to keep? What's more, I hear that you're very close with Zhao Gongming. Immediately promoting those around you after taking to the office... Isn't this just cronyism!?"

Hahaha...

As expected of the Literari God of Fortune, he truly phrased everything in a sophisticated manner.

But... so what?

'Lil' Wen, you have to obey the will of the office. Taibai Jinxing is a senior who this sovereign respects, but he has already left the

Heavenly Court. The Heavenly Court is in a huge mess recently. The Jade Emperor handed me this power out of his trust for me. I have my own ideas when handling things, so saying that it's cronyism is too much!"

"But you..."

"Alright, this sovereign has a lot more stuff to handle. Zhao Gongming will be in charge of the policies related to finance from now on. Work hard for him. Ta ta."

Tap.

Ye Zichen deleted Wenchang Monarch from his friend list.

Cronyism. Yeah, he's right. That's what I'm doing.

So what?

He can only endure it!

What's more, he's not the only one who was stripped of power, yet he's the only one who came to complain? Who does he think he is?

Dingdong.

Wenchang Monarch's intimacy level decreased by 100. Current intimacy level: 0.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Wenchang Monarch has leveled down. Current intimacy level: Cold.

"Decreased intimacy level? What's he trying to do? Scare me?" Ye Zichen chuckled, then sent a message to Zhao Gongming. "Zhao Gongming, that Wenchang Monarch was disrespectful towards me just now. Strip him of his position as the Literari God of Fortune and tell him to go home. We'll decide what to do with him based on his future performance. If he wishes to ask for forgiveness, then we'll get him a job in the future, if he doesn't, then let him just retire like this. Also, find someone to fill in the empty position

yourself.”

With that, Ye Zichen turned to the group chat and sent out a notice.

System Notice: Due to Wenchang Monarch refusing to comply with the organization’s decisions and speaking very disrespectfully towards his superior, it has been announced that he shall be stripped of the position as the Literari God of Fortune. Due to his work for the Heavenly Court, he is allowed to keep his celestial position. This is effective immediately.

Bang.

Wenchang Monarch kicked the golden toad in front of him to the ground the moment he saw the message.

“This is pissing me off!”

Original Chapter Teaser:

I can’t believe this! It actually came true! I’ll just accept it now and...

Oh.

Never mind.

It wasn’t the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens. I should’ve expected this outcome, i-I was just too hopeful. If it really could grant wishes, then everything could have stopped right now. I could have wished for Xiao Yumei to come back to me, I could have wished for those demon scums to all be killed. I could have wished for the Modern Realm to be unfrozen.

Ahhh.

I suppose it makes sense

After all, how could such a cheat be given to me? If I have access to such a cheat, then that guy would’ve had access to it to, so there was no way he would be here.

Sigh... Everything that happened before was merely a coincidence. There is no doubt about it.

The five gods of fortunes in Chinese mythology are split into the: Martial God of Fortune, Literari God of Fortune, Loyal God of Fortune, Wealthy God of Fortune, and Side God of Fortune. The Literari God of Fortune is Wenchang Monarch, while the Martial God of Fortune is the God of Fortune proper, Zhao Gongming.

Chapter 629 – God

Ye Zichen did not care about Wenchang Monarch's rage in the least bit.

Instead, he was feeling rather good about himself when he saw the official notice in the group and the plethora of comments below it.

Having power sure is great. I can deal with whoever I don't like.

Ye Zichen ignored the mourning for Wenchang Monarch in the group and returned his phone to his pocket, then rested his gaze upon the divine stones in the room.

"Sis, if I make a wish now, do you really think it'll come true?" Zuo Liang blinked as he asked Zuo Mo.

"How would I know? How about trying it out? But don't make that sort of wish that's just asking for a beating, got it?" Zuo Mo waved her fist in front of him.

"I promise I won't do that anymore," Zuo Liang promised, then closed his eyes and prayed. "I want a glass of water."

Whoosh.

Immediately afterward, a cup of cold water randomly dropped down from the sky. Zuo Liang caught the cup with wide eyes, then looked at the divine stones below him in surprise.

"Get me another glass of water."

Whoosh.

Another glass of water appeared in the room out of nowhere.

"Sis!" Zuo Liang's eyes were filled with shock.

Zuo Mo looked at the two cups of water in her little brother's hands, then bit her lips, "I want it to rain outside."

Rumble.

The currently clear skies were instantly covered with rain clouds. The sudden change caused everyone who didn't know what had caused it to be completely shocked.

However, Ye Zichen was even more shocked than the rest.

What's going on? I thought the wishes that have been granted were all coincidences?

But it doesn't seem like Zuo Mo's and Zuo Liang's wishes being fulfilled was a coincidence. Zuo Liang's two cups of water literally came out of nowhere!

"My god!"

Zuo Liang couldn't help but exclaim. He repeatedly gulped as he looked at the divine stones on the floor then back at Ye Zichen.

"Big Brother Ye, where did you get some divine items like this!?"

Ye Zichen scratched his head and squatted with them in front of the divine stones. He looked at the stones in confusion. Could these divine stones really have the ability to grant wishes?

But why didn't my wish of getting the Heavenly Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven adding me to his contact list come true?

All of a sudden, he had an idea. He clasped his hands together, closed his eyes, and prayed silently.

I want Xiao Yumei to return to my side from the Demon Realm.

"Is there something wrong with you!?" An angry shout rang through the room. "Do you guys think that I'm just a donkey? You want this, you want that, you want... Ugh. Are you trying to work me to death!?"

The three people looked up in the room and saw an Arabian-looking man sitting cross-legged in the air. There was a piece of white cloth, which wrapped around his head, while his what was essentially a unibrow was bent in a frown.

Zuo Mo, Zuo Liang and Ye Zichen all looked at each other.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, “Are you the genie of the lamp?”

“What genie!? I am God!” The unibrow man floated in the air and answered cockily. “The supreme and almighty God!”

“God...” Ye Zichen muttered.

“Yes, I am God,” the man repeated.

“Ugh, if you’re God, then why did you come to the Immortal Region? Shouldn’t you be up there?” Ye Zichen questioned as he pointed upwards to the sky.

“Ahem,” the unibrow man’s expression changed. “I descended to have a look. Do you have a problem with that?”

Ye Zichen noticed his gaze on the seven divine stones when he spoke.

Ye Zichen smiled, then couldn’t help but ask, “Nope. You are the almighty god, how could we mortals have an issue with what you’re doing?”

“Heh,” the unibrow man laughed.

Ye Zichen also asked once again, “Great God, I wonder how we should address you?”

“Wish!”

“Oh Great Wish God,” Ye Zichen cupped his hands and smiled extremely respectfully. “Great Wish God, your divine authority seems to be able to grant the wishes of the masses, right?”

“Yes!”

“Then...”

It was clear what Ye Zichen wanted to express. Since he could grant the wishes of the masses, then why did the god stop when it came to him.

“I’m tired,” with that, the unibrow man went back into the seven divine stones. “Don’t make any wishes in the near future. I need to

rest.”

“Great Wish God, please wait!”

Ye Zichen raised his hand to stop the man before he could enter, then asked nervously, “You are an almighty god, it’s fine if you don’t fulfill my wish, but can you tell me how is she?”

“Do you think I’m an encyclopedia and know everything!?” the unibrow man frowned, then shook his head with a soft sigh. “She’s fine, and will be fine in the future. She is fated to be aided by someone in the future.”

“And that person is...”

“I can’t say anything about that,” with that, the man entered the divine stones. At the same time, the once shimmering stones dimmed.

Although that wasn’t what he initially wanted, Ye Zichen did stop worrying after getting the god’s confirmation.

But then, he suddenly remembered that he still had another question unanswered.

Hanba!

“Great god, don’t rest yet, I still have another question I want to ask! Great god, great god...” Ye Zichen shouted at the divine stones, but the stones did not react at all.

“He’s definitely resting. Look, the stones aren’t shining anymore,” Zuo Mo said.

Ye Zichen shouted a few more times, but when he saw that there really wasn’t any reaction, he let out a long sigh.

“I can’t believe that there was a god in the stones.” Zuo Liang blinked, then looked at the divine stones which were now no different from normal rocks, then at the cups he was still holding in his hand.

I actually used up two wishes for two cups of water. Ugh, what

am I doing.

“Who was the person you were asking about just now?” Zuo Mo bit her lips and asked as if it was just a casual question.

Tiantian ran over with a giggle. “It’s Mommy, I just wished that Mommy would be safe just now and that she would finish her work quicker to come home to see me.”

With that, a hint of disappointment surfaced on Tiantian’s face, “Tiantian hasn’t seen Mommy in so long, Tiantian misses her so much.”

The simple comment caused Ye Zichen to feel sad. He held Tiantian tightly in his arms, “Mommy will be back very quickly. Tiantian’s a good girl.”

“Of course Tiantian will be a good girl, Tiantian’s all grown up already,” Tiantian nodded sensibly.

Ye Zichen held her for a while longer before he put her down, and sat down while he rubbed his temple with his right hand.

Although he now knows that Xiao Yumei would be fine, he was still a bit worried.

“Zuo Mo, can you arrange a room for me? I’m a bit tired, so I want to rest,” Ye Zichen continuously rubbed his temples.

Seeing his suffering look, Zuo Mo held back the question she was just about to ask.

“I have already prepared one for you. Lil’ Liang and I will take you there.”

“Alright, thank you.”

As the three people left the room together, they seemed to have forgotten that the divine stones were still on the floor of the room. Not long after they left, a figure appeared in the meeting halls.

“Divine stones which can grant wishes. Hehe...”

Chapter 630 – Apology

“Big Brother Ye, here’re your divine stones.”

Zuo Liang carefully handed the handed the seven seemingly normal stones to Ye Zichen as if he was handling some rare treasure in the courtyard.

“Oh, they really weren’t lost,” Ye Zichen put the divine stones away into his Treasure Chest with a smile.

“Of course, even if a primordial divine weapon is thrown around carelessly in the Zuo household, it won’t be lost. Even if you come half a month later after putting it somewhere, it’ll still be there.”

“Amazing,” Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, but didn’t take Zuo Liang seriously. “Where’s your sis?”

“My father called her away,” Zuo Liang said helplessly. “We beat up that Mu family guy just now. Although my father spoils her, he has to understand the situation. Don’t worry, she’ll be fine.”

Ye Zichen’s was speechless. Of course Zuo Mo will be fine, I was the one who did the beating. Even if the Mu family people come over, they won’t possibly do anything for her due to the Treasure Tower.

But they will to me!

At that very moment, Zuo Mo walked into the courtyard alongside a man wearing a silk robe.

The man was of mediocre size. He had a small moustache underneath his chin, while his eyes were extremely sharp.

Zuo Mo had her arms around his. She wore a long dress and seemed to have put on a bit of makeup on her already pretty face.

Her eyes were watery, but her expression was rather dark as she had a clear pout on her face.

“Father,” Zuo Liang greeted the man with a smile.

Ye Zichen hesitated for a moment. He never expected that the seemingly young man in front of him was actually the master of the Treasure Tower, Zuo Hongde.

“Lil’ Liang,” Zuo Hongde nodded, then rested his gaze on Ye Zichen with a smile. “Little friend Ye, we meet again.”

...

Ye Zichen was confused.

Have we met before?

“Little friend Ye, no need to overthink this. You have never seen me before, but I did manage to catch a glance of you when I went to pick Lil’ Mo up previously at Maple City. Little friend Ye was merely of the Human Immortal level back then, but I could already tell that you were no commoner. Now I see that you have reached the Sky Immortal level. I heard that you were able to defeat Zheng Qian without much force. Young people are truly fearsome!” Zuo Hongde smiled warmly.

Ye Zichen quickly returned a smile, “Tower Head Zuo is exaggerating.”

“But I have to remind Little Friend Ye,” Zuo Hongde smiled. “No matter what happens, the Mu family is one of the peak forces in the outer area of the Immortal Region, what they have is beyond your imagination. Even the Treasure Tower cannot say that we are completely stronger than them. Little friend Ye, do you understand what I mean? What’s more, it isn’t easy for the Treasure Tower to survive. I admire you, but that doesn’t mean I have confidence in you.”

“Father,” Zuo Mo shook his arm.

Zuo Hongde looked back with a sharp gaze, “Zuo Mo, father might have spoiled you too much before. These times are not like the past. Perhaps father supported you in breaking off the engagement and was happy for your strength. But it’s not like you

don't know what has happened recently!"

Zuo Mo lowered her head and bit her lips. Ye Zichen frowned...

There seemed to be more to this?

"Sorry, you've seen something unsightly," Zuo Hongde looked up with a smile. "But I have an unreasonable request, I wonder if you..."

"Father, I forced Ye Zichen to beat up Zheng Qian, it has nothing to do with him," Zuo Mo let go of her hands and blocked her father's way towards Ye Zichen.

"Lil' Mo, that's enough," Zuo Hongde frowned.

Ye Zichen curled his lips, grabbed Zuo Mo's shoulder and shook his head, then looked up at Zuo Hongde with a shrug. "You want to bring me over to apologize?"

"Little friend Yew, please understand, I have no choice. I will however ensure your safety."

Zuo Hongde's expression didn't even show a single bit of apologetic look or display even a hint of an attitude befitting of someone who was making a request, even though he was asking Ye Zichen. The truth was simple. He didn't take Ye Zichen seriously at all.

"Father!" Zuo Mo frowned.

Zuo Hongde squinted his eyes and snorted. "Shut up!"

Zuo Mo was shocked. Zuo Hongde had never once shouted at her like that. She looked at the man in front of her in shock for a long time. She could not understand why, in just a mere few days...

Why did my father change so much? He wasn't like this a week ago.

Zuo Mo bit her lips and ran off.

Only then did a hint of reluctance appeared in Zuo Hongde's

expression. However, he kept a stern face and ordered, “Bring the young lady back here.”

Whoosh.

Ye Zichen felt the space around him twist, then saw two faint figures chase after where Zuo Mo ran towards.

He felt a chill down his spine.

Two experts were hiding near me just now!?

“Little friend Ye, what do you say?”

“Of course I can go,” Ye Zichen pursed his lips. “But can you tell me why you’re so scared of the Mu family? No matter what, both the Mu family and Zuo family are peak forces amongst those in the outer area of the Immortal Region.”

Zuo Hongde sighed dejectedly, then shook his head with a smile. “That’s none of your business. All you have to do is come and apologize with me. I can assure you that I will definitely ensure your safety. If you have to take some physical pain... Then please endure it. I will obviously compensate you afterwards.”

Ye Zichen frowned, but he still nodded with a smile. “Alright, then I’ll go with you.”

...

Ye Zichen and co. all sat within a single carriage. To nobody’s surprise, Zuo Mo was captured, and was forced to sit in the carriage unwillingly.

Zuo Hongde tried to talk to her several times, but Zuo Mo merely ignored him.

It was clear that Zuo Hongde had dedicated a lot to this. There were spiritual items and spiritual artifacts worth several hundred million celeste in the cart behind them, which were all for the sake of apologizing.

“Zuo Mo, I don’t care how much of a grudge you have against

father. But when we reach the Mu household, you better watch yourself,” Zuo Hongde said.

Zuo Mo looked up with teary eyes, “Why? Why are you so scared of the Mu family? You clearly didn’t think much of the Mu family before, you also said that the Mu family has no future. Why did you change so much in just a few days?”

“Of course I have my reasons!” Zuo Hongde frowned. “Do you think I want to submit to that old Mu monster? But I said it, the times have changed. I have to do this for the sake of the Zuo family!”

“But you have to tell me why!” Zuo Mo sobbed.

Zuo Hongde let out a soft sigh. “Then I’ll tell you the truth. Mu Chengtian was chosen. Yesterday, the Six Realms Patroller visited the Mu family and chose Mu Chengtian. Lil’ Mo, you should know what this means right? Father really doesn’t have a choice.”

Zuo Mo’s body trembled. Although she didn’t want to accept it, she could only remain silent.

She understood very well just what it meant to be chosen by the Six Realms Patroller.

It was an incomparable honor.

An incomparable status!

“You...”

At the same time, Ye Zichen’s pupils contracted.

Six Realms...

Six Realms Patroller!

Chapter 631 – Cliché

In comparison, Ye Zichen seemed more worked up than anyone else. The phrase “Six Realms Patroller” had a special meaning for him.

Liu Qing was taken away by the Six Realms Patroller.

“Little friend Ye has heard of the Six Realms Patroller as well?” Zuo Hongde raised his eyebrows. “Then you should understand my position. I hope that you...”

Creak.

A loud sound of fists clenching sounded out in the carriage. Everyone else in the carriage looked towards Ye Zichen. Then saw him smile, “Junior understands.”

Two hours later...

Zuo Hongde and the others were brought to a courtyard by the Mu family’s butler.

“Tower Head Zuo, our clan head is having an important discussion with that lord. Please rest here for a moment. I will naturally inform you when our clan head finishes,” the butler said with a smile.

Zuo Hongde could only maintain his smile, “No problem. Brother Mu’s discussion with that lord is more important. We will just wait here.”

“Just directly ask if you require anything. If you don’t have any requests at this time, then please allow this one to take my leave,” the butler smiled and walked out of the courtyard.

Only then did Zuo Mo snort with a cold look, “He was just chosen by the Six Realms Patroller, look at how cocky they got. They’re actually making us wait now.”

“Doesn’t that make a lot of sense?” Zuo Hongde sat down beside

the stone table. “That lord and us are definitely not on the same level. Ahh, forget it, we came to apologize, so waiting a bit is fine.”

“Heh,” Zuo Mo wrinkled her nose, but chose not to say anything else. Then, when she noticed that Ye Zichen was still as silent as he was when arrived at the Mnu household, she walked over and patted him on the shoulder. “Hey, why are you so down?”

“It’s nothing,” Ye Zichen looked up with a smile.

Zuo Mo glanced over at him, then couldn’t help but raise her eyebrows. “You can’t actually be scared, right? If the old Mu monster wants to directly make a move on you, I definitely would not stand idle.”

A smile bloomed on Zuo Mo’s face like fireworks. Yet, at that very moment, a group of people walked in through the courtyard’s door.

“Old Zuo, this is your daughter. Old Mu monster... Is that a manner of address for her to use?” Mu Cheng was a rather short and ugly man. His hair was a burnt yellow color, while his short stature caused his hands and feet to seem extremely large.

His two large toad-like eyes protruded outwards. From Ye Zichen’s point of view...

He looks like an alien.

“Uncle Mu,” Zuo Mo stuck her tongue out.

Zuo Hongde also smiled. “My daughter did speak disrespectfully. I’ll definitely punish her when we return. But, honestly, I didn’t expect Brother Mu to be colluding with my little brother.”

“Older brother, listen to yourself. Your relationship with Brother Mu is ‘getting acquainted,’ but when it comes to Brother Mu and I, it’s ‘colluding’?” Zuo Hongxin pursed his lips, then looked towards Zuo Mo. “You aren’t going to say anything to second uncle?”

“Say what? Am I supposed to thank second uncle for not killing

me?” Zuo Mo smiled indifferently.

Zuo Hongxin chuckled, “More’s the pity that I couldn’t deal with you at Mount Biluo.”

“Hongxin...” Zuo Hongde’s expression darkened.

Mu Cheng stepped forward, “Can you please take care of your family matters when you return? This is the Mu household, I don’t have the patience to listen to your squabbles.”

“We’ve caused Brother Mu to see something unsightly,” Zuo Hongxin cupped his hands with a smile.

“Zuo Hongde, you came over to the Mu household...” Mu Cheng raised his eyebrows questioningly.

Zuo Hongde immediately responded, “I am here to apologize to Brother Mu.”

With that, he turned towards Ye Zichen, “Com over here and apologize to Clan Head Mu.”

Ye Zichen, who had been silently sitting on a stone stool until now, walked over.

Mu Cheng raised his eyebrows and smiled, “Brother Zuo...”

“It was this young man who attacked your Zheng Qian the other day. I came here with him to apologize, but I hope Brother Mu can allow him to live due to our relationship.”

“Our families’ relationship? What relationship?” Mu Cheng shook his head and said in a mocking tone. “My son brought betrothal gifts to your household in person, but you beat him out. I wonder if your family considered our families’ relationship?”

“About this...” Zuo Hongde hesitated.

At the same time, Mu Cheng also shouted behind him, “Lil’ Tian.”

Not long later, Mu Chengtian walked over with the support of

another person. That person was no other than Zuo Hongxin's daughter and the second young mistress of the Treasure Tower...

Zuo Qingcheng.

"Uncle, older sister," Zuo Qingcheng smiled warmly.

Zuo Hongxin's expression instantly turned dark, "Brother Mu, what do you mean by this?"

"Your daughter isn't interested in my son and the Mu family is not a family with no care for our own face. Your daughter is not the only one worthy in terms of family background. Qingcheng is also a young mistress of the Treasure Tower and I've also very happy with her... Since you're here as well, then I'll just tell you now. Forget the engagement between Zuo Mo and my son. We're going to have him wed Qingcheng instead," Zuo Qingcheng maintained a smile and nodded towards everyone while Mu Cheng spoke.

Ye Zichen barely resisted laughing. What kind of plot is this!? Is this some ethics movie?

"Ha..." Zuo Hongde suddenly laughed. He couldn't help but nod towards Zuo Hongxin and Mu Cheng with a dark expression. "I really didn't expect this."

Then, he put his hands behind his back and swept over the surrounding people with a sharp gaze. "Let's go."

"Brother Hongde can leave, but this brat has to stay," Mu Cheng pointed at Ye Zichen with a smile. "No matter what, he was the one who damaged the Mu family's reputation."

"Don't even dream of it!" Zuo Mo glared menacingly at Mu Cheng like a furious lioness before Zuo Hongde can say anything. "Old Mu monster, don't get so full of yourself. It's just because your sickly bastard of a son that got chosen by the Six Realms Patroller, if he didn't, then you'd be nothing. You were always getting stepped on by our Zuo family and always acted like a dog."

Even if you do see the hope of reaching the top, you're in too much of a hurry!"

"Do you have the right to speak?" Mu Cheng's expression darkened, then threw a small weapon towards Zuo Mo.

Nobody expected that Mu Cheng would actually attack a junior without any regards for his face. Thus, when Zuo Hongde reacted, he was unable to make it in time...

Zuo Mo also froze. She watched as the weapon fly towards her, but was unable to dodge in time.

At that very moment, Ye Zichen grabbed her arm and spun around.

Ding.

The weapon fell to the floor. Ye Zichen, who was wearing the Swirling Flash Plate turned his head back, bit into the corner of his lips and caused two long swords shimmering with a bloody glow to appear in his hands.

Meanwhile, his six wings appeared behind his back and generating raging winds with their flapping.

"You want to get me? Then come and try!"

Chapter 632 – Battling Youmuu

Twin swords.

Ye Zichen had no idea why the pair of swords appeared as opposed to the blood scythe. But regardless, they still looked pretty cool.

He flapped his wings and rose into the sky and looked down upon the others. “Doesn’t the Mu family want to get even? I’ll give you the chance to do it now. Come!”

“Don’t even think about acting out of line here,” at that moment, someone shouted.

Not long later, an old man with a hooked nose appeared.

Mid-stage Sky Immortal.

Bang. Bang. Bang.

Ye Zichen was able to knock the old man onto the ground in a few mere moments. Seriously, these Sky Immortal experts in the outer section of the Immortal Region seems to be ridiculously weak.

When compared to the Heavenly Court...

Perhaps even complete stage Human Immortal Heavenly Soldiers would be able to beat the crap out of them.

“Who’s next?”

“Let me test him.”

Bang. Bang. Bang.

The following person was knocked onto the ground in less than a minute.

“Next!”

Regardless of who the Mu family sent to face him and how strong they were supposed to be, ye Zichen were able to easily defeat

them.

In all honesty, even Ye Zichen felt like it was a little surreal.

He wasn't actually so strong before, but ever since he learnt the spiritual techniques the white-robed man taught him and after he broke through into the Sky Immortal level...

He really was super strong.

He was able to beat up anyone he faced unmatched.

Not long later, nobody from the Mu family dared to face him anymore.

Ye Zichen stood in the air cockily and looked indifferently at the people below. Then, he curled his lips and hooked his fingers at Mu Chengtian, "The one chosen by the Six Realms Patroller. Come... I do want to test him myself. The Six Realms Patroller's criteria seem rather low now since even sickly bastards can get chosen."

"Don't you know whether my criteria are low or not?" With a flash of golden light, a man in a police uniform and wearing an eyepatch on his left eye slowly walked towards Ye Zichen.

"Lord Patroller, please gain justice for us!" Mu Cheng greeted the incomer subserviently.

The man ignored him and merely walked in front of Ye Zichen. "Long time no see."

"Youmuu, it really was you. But seriously, you've got a rather horrible fetish. You're still wearing this after so long. Is your company not giving you any new work clothes?" Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and mocked him.

Youmuu smiled. However, his expression instantly darkened moments later, "Demon, you seem stronger. Six wings... I wonder how strong you are now. You actually dare to speak to me like that!?"

Dong.

Ye Zichen immediately focused on a defensive spiritual technique, while the Swirling Flash Plate also shimmered on his body the moment Youmuu glared at him.

“Umph,” Ye Zichen grunted while he slid back a hundred meters or so even when he crossed his swords in front of him to defend against the attack.

“Ye Zichen,” Zuo Mo called out worriedly.

He seemed so strong just now, but this person actually dominated him.

Is the Six Realms Patroller this strong?

“Heh, you actually dared to oppose Lord Patroller. You’re just asking for it,” Mu Cheng revealed an expression of disdain. “it seems like our Mu family doesn’t need to do anything. Lord Patroller will deal with this trouble for us.”

“Yeah, no wonder this brat has wings. Didn’t you hear Lord Patroller? He’s a demon!” Zuo Hongxin laughed coldly. “Zuo Hongde, just look at what sort of people your daughter knows!”

While the people on the ground discussed away, Youmuu stopped his attacks.

“You actually managed to block off my attack using ten percent of my strength. I wonder if you can...”

A creamy white sphere of light appeared in his hands.

Ye Zichen’s eyes twitched. This was his first time seeing Youmuu use a spiritual technique.

Although this attack was definitely going to be a lot stronger than Youmuu’s barehanded strike, Ye Zichen still smirked.

Back in the Modern Realm, I was completely helpless...

At least, I can now force Youmuu to use spiritual techniques.

“You can still laugh? If I was you, I would have fled already.”

“Why should I flee? Youmuu, you are a target that I aimed to defeat,” clear excitement could be seen in Ye Zichen’s expression.

Youmuu snorted, “You, defeat me? You’re not worthy.”

Boom.

The sphere of light in his hands shot out.

Ye Zichen’s eyes twitched once more as he crossed his swords again.

Ugh.

He coughed up a mouthful of blood. As his blood fell on top of his pair of swords, they seemed to become more crystallized. His body wobbled for a moment, but he managed to calm his body down.

“Haha... Ahahaha...” Ye Zichen laughed loudly with the side of his mouth covered in his own blood.

That was when Youmuu squinted his eyes.

He’s actually still alive.

“Die!” Youmuu pushed off the ground.

Ye Zichen also stopped laughing and chuckled as he saw Youmuu’s sinister look, “You’re finally going to use your real strength? I’m very sorry, but I’m not a target dummy...”

Ye Zichen combined his two long swords, forming a new broadsword in his hand.

The sword was two meters long and half a meter wide. There was a dragon of blood coiled around the blade itself.

Ye Zichen gripped the sword with his two hands, causing the veins on both of his arms to surface.

His eyes also turned pitch black, while the feathers of his wings glistened.

As he flapped his wings, feathers continuously fell from it, but for some reason, the number of feathers on his wings did not decrease at all.

“Die demon!” A delicate dagger appeared in Youmuu’s hands.

Ye Zichen hacked down at Youmuu with a stern look on his face.

Dong.

Rampaging spiritual energy radiated outwards, and tears in the space itself actually began to appear due to the strength of their spiritual energy.

“Don’t get so full of yourself. The people behind you have been working hard to catch up!” Ye Zichen shouted as his broadsword cracked Youmuu’s dagger and sent the latter flying back by some ten-odd meters. “Come!”

“I-I was actually knocked back,” Youmuu glanced at Ye Zichen in complete surprise.

I’m the Six Realms Patroller. I was actually knocked back by a mere mortal.

“Impossible!”

Boom.

A raging aura was released from Youmuu’s body. A large hole gradually appeared on his forehead which seemed to suck in black spiritual energy from the surroundings.

Soon, the entire area had turned black.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen responded by increasing the crimson energy around him which now contained faint traces of darkness within.

Approximately two and a half minutes later, Youmuu cut off his connection with the black energy.

He was now clad with a black crystal armor. His pale blue hair

now reached his face, and the eyepatch which covered his eyes were gone. What replaced it was...

A sapphire-like eye.

“Very good. You actually made me use seventy percent of my strength. Now, die!”

Chapter 633 – A Life of a Dream

The weather in the area had changed.

Youmuu's sapphire eye was exceptionally blinding in the pitch-dark environment. Unlike everything else, his pale blue hair did not move at all in the raging winds.

His domineering pressure made Ye Zichen feel like he was unable to breathe. It was only then that Ye Zichen felt like the difference between them was too large for him to overcome.

The suppressing aura caused large droplets of sweat to fall down from Ye Zichen's forehead.

At that moment, Ye Zichen believed that the entire city would be destroyed as long as Youmuu willed it.

"It was my mistake. I allowed you to grow back then, but I didn't expect you to reach this level," Youmuu's tone was menacing, while his sapphire eye became even more blinding. "I'll be honest, if it wasn't for Her Highness, you might not have been able to live."

"Her Highness," Ye Zichen's pupils contracted when he heard those two words.

"Yes, you didn't expect it did you? The girl beside you back then has already become a Lady of the Four Direction Palace. The difference between the her then and the her now is enormous," Youmuu laughed savagely as a cold light shot out from his eyes. "Her Highness stopped me then, but this time... Let's see who's going to save you now."

Whoosh.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt his body stiffen. He was unable to move a muscle. He tried his best to struggle out of the formless restraint, yet, it was as if he was frozen in the air.

His sharp senses felt danger approach. He also understood very clearly...

If that unknown danger was to reach him, then he would die.

“Don’t worry. I will let you feel happiness before you die,” Youmuu pursed his lips and smiled as a formless barrier of light covered the entire city.

“...”

At that moment, everybody in the city, including Zuo Mo and co., all had a bit of an excited flush on their faces. However, their expressions showed unusual pain as they writhed on the ground.

“You see that? These are humans!” Youmuu mocked the people below. “Do you know where my name comes from? Youmuu! It means a purgatory-like dream! I can control everybody’s dreams and make them see what they want to see the most. You see that? Look at how excited they seem. But at the same time, do you know why they are suffering so much?”

“Youmuu, what do you want!?” Ye Zichen roared.

“Whenever any emotion of a person, including excitement, joy, sadness... reaches an extreme. They will die. Their dreams make them feel very comfortable right now, but in the very end... All that awaits them is death!” Youmuu laughed sinisterly.

Ye Zichen locked his eyebrows, “You want to kill everyone in the city? Are you not afraid of divine punishment!?”

“Divine?” Youmuu snorted. “I know more about that than you! Alright, I’m a bit tired after so much talking. Go and enjoy yourself in your dream as well.”

...

“Zichen.”

Suddenly, a gentle giggle rang out beside Ye Zichen’s ear.

Everything in front of him had changed. He was sitting on a sofa

in a living room, where Tiantian was giggling and playing games with Xia Keke.

Su Yan and Lu Lu were arguing as always, while the person who had called his name was...

“Yumei,” Ye Zichen glanced at the smiling woman in front of him in surprise. She was wearing comfortable clothing as she walked towards him.

Tears began to flow down Ye Zichen’s eyes. Seriously... It’s been so long.

“Why are you blanking out here for? C’mon, it’s time to eat. Tiantian’s going to have a parents-teacher conference later today. I need to go to the company later and you promised me that you’d go. Ahh, why are you crying?” Xiao Yumei looked at Ye Zichen in confusion.

Hearing that, all the other girls in the room surrounded him.

“Big Brother Zichen’s crying. So shameful!” Xia Keke giggled.

“You’re so old already, why are you still crying?” Su Yan couldn’t help but frown.

When Ye Zichen’s gaze moved across her tummy...

There was a bulge!

“What are you looking at? This is your darling son. Stop crying, our baby’s watching you,” a motherly light radiated from Su Yan’s eyes as she gently caressed her stomach.

“Daddy, Tiantian hasn’t cried for so long. Why are you crying?” a young girl ran in front of Ye Zichen and leaped into his arms.

Ye Zichen subconsciously hugged her, then glanced down at the girl calling him “Daddy”...

“Tiantian?”

“Wow, Mommy! What’s with Daddy? He’s acting like he hasn’t

seen me before,” Tiantian couldn’t help but twitch her mouth.

At that very moment, Youmuu’s sinister look surfaced in Ye Zichen’s mind.

Oh yeah, this is a dream.

This is all a dream. A dream that he built from my inner desires.

I know that, yet... I really don’t want to wake up.

“No, Daddy might just be tired,” Xiao Yumei rubbed Tiantian’s head in a loving manner.

Ye Zichen stood up from the sofa and looked at the girls around him, then couldn’t help but smile, “C’mon, let’s go and eat.”

...

“Heh, this is a mortal,” Youmuu looked at Ye Zichen, who was writhing in pain on the floor. “They clearly know that it’s a dream, but they are unwilling to wake up. Mortals just love peace and things like this that are impossible. Whatever, since he wants to use his life to exchange for this dream, then I’ll be patient and wait to the end.”

...

Years seemed to pass by for Ye Zichen.

“Daddy,” Tiantian bit her lips in her wedding gown. She couldn’t help but cry when he looked at Ye Zichen, whose face was already covered in wrinkles.

“Don’t be so insensible when you’re at your in-laws. But if you get bullied, then come home!” Ye Zichen patted her hand and smiled with a reluctance to part.

...

“Grandpa.”

Tiantian, who was already a mother, went home to visit them with her child. Ye Zichen was already old. However, he still

continued to smile happily and watched as the little kid held his leg and told him to play with him...

Time seemed to pass by even quicker.

Until...

“Yumei, Lil’ Yan, Keke, Lu Lu...”

As Ye Zichen laid on the sickbed, he feebly reached out his hand to grab hold of the women who had accompanied him his entire life.

“Big Brother Zichen,” Xia Keke wept. Even at their age, she still didn’t change the way she addressed him.

“Keke, don’t cry. Everyone has to go one day, right?” Ye Zichen lifted his hand with some difficulty to wipe away the tears from the corners of Keke’s eyes, then smiled apologetically at the girls. “I’m so sorry. In the end, I couldn’t give you a proper title, and we were never able to host a wedding.”

“It’s okay,” Xiao Yumei smiled gentle, while the other girls also nodded.

...

“Heh, is it finally over?” Youmuu couldn’t help but yawn. Although a lifetime had already passed by for Ye Zichen in his dream, only several hours had passed in the real world. “It seems like his ember of life is about to burn out. In the end... He couldn’t turn it around.”

Chapter 634 – Shattering the Dream

Ye Zichen smiled wryly in the ward with tears gushing out of his eyes. The girls in the surrounding also wept with Xia Keke, all of them crying very loudly.

“Thank you so much for going through this life with me. I really am... very happy,” Ye Zichen choked out.

Xiao Yumei pursed her lips with a smile, then grab hold of Ye Zichen’s hand. “We all feel the same.”

All the girls nodded. Seeing that, Ye Zichen slowly closed his eyes. Even though he knew from the very beginning that this was all a dream...

And that the end of the dream meant death... But, honestly...

He had no regrets.

Beep...

The graph on the vital signs monitor turned flat. Everyone in the room also cried loudly.

Ye Zichen’s soul floated out of his body in mid-air, but at that very moment...

“You really want to report in at the Underworld?” A white-robed man suddenly appeared beside him and sat cross-legged in the air. “This is just too irresponsible. You felt good in the dream, but shouldn’t you consider the feelings of other people? Su Yan, Xiao Yumei and the rest are all waiting for you.”

“Why’re you in my dream?” Ye Zichen glared at the man in the air, then couldn’t help but roll his eyes. “What’s wrong with you? You ruined such a nice dream. Isn’t this ending nice? I pass away peacefully in front of my children, grandchildren and the people I love. Your appearance ruined everything.”

“Sorry, sorry,” the white-robed man gestured his apology, then

waved, causing the scene in front of them to be reduced to nothing.

As Ye Zichen watched the people in front of him disappear with a hint of reminiscence, he let out a long sigh, then sat cross-legged in the void.

“Did you come to save me?”

“Kind of,” the white-robed man shrugged. “The main reason was because I was worried that you would pussy out, so I came to check in on you. That’s when I saw that you actually did pussy out.”

“I’m following the way of life. This is my respects for the dream he showed me. You don’t get shit,” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth, then raised his eyebrows. “Oh yeah, what the heck was that chocolate you gave me? I nearly died. Also, why did I get two more pairs of wings?”

“How would I know?” the white-robed man rolled his eyes. “I have no time to waste with you. Hurry up and shatter this dream, otherwise, all of the citizens in the city will die because of you.”

“What should I do?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Easy, the dream will shatter as long as you feel pain,” with that, a small dagger appeared in the white-robed man’s hand, which he thrust towards Ye Zichen’s bottom.

“OUCH...”

...

“It’s over,” Youmuu watched as the last embers of Ye Zichens’ lifeforce disappeared, then chuckled in disdain.

Then he looked at the other people. Most of them were unable to escape the fate of death.

Of course, he could care less about them.

It was on them whether they could survive or not.

The eyepatch appeared on his eye once more, while his hair returned to its normal length. Just as he put on his Six Realms Patroller uniform and was about to leave...

Vroom.

Ye Zichen's extinguished lifeforce seemed to lit up once more and this time, it burned even livelier than before.

"My butt, my butt..." Ye Zichen jumped up from the ground and held his butt.

Youmuu turned around and saw Ye Zichen, who was jumping around in pain...

"You actually..."

"Yo, I'm back," Ye Zichen laughed with a wave. "Long time, no see. Oh yeah, thanks for your dream. I liked it a lot."

"How could you..." Youmuu's eyes were filled with shock. He had used seventy percent of his full power to create that dream.

Even a normal Earth Supreme expert would lose themselves in it and eventually die.

"Surprising? You can't believe it?" Ye Zichen chuckled idiotically. "There's more!"

With that, he looked up and shocked, "Hey, how should I shatter this dream? Oh, okay. I just need to hack it with the sword, right? Got it... Alright, stop blabbering, I know what to do."

"Who are you talking to?" Youmuu frowned.

"Hehe, I'm talking to a ghost," Ye Zichen bit through the skin of his finger, causing another two-meter long broadsword to appear in his hands once more.

Ye Zichen gripped it tightly with both hands, then spun around...

"Shatter!"

Crack.

The darkness surrounding the city shattered, while Youmuu coughed up a mouthful of blood. He looked at Ye Zichen, who wore a mocking smile on his face, in complete shock.

“You...”

“Zezeze, do you feel that I’m like super strong? No need to say it, I know,” Ye Zichen laughed ridiculously, then began to wiggle.

Youmuu’s expression darkened. A mid-stage Sky Immortal had actually escaped from his illusions, and shattered the dream field...

That was...

Too embarrassing.

“You are seeking death!” Youmuu sprinted towards Ye Zichen and shouted.

“Lil’ bro, save me!”

“Lil’ bro... Are you talking about me?” a figure appeared in front of Ye Zichen awkwardly.

Seeing the white-robed man, Ye Zichen let out a long sigh of relief, “Yeah, of course it’s you. I’ll leave this guy to you. I’ll check up on the others.”

The white-robed man rubbed his nose, while Youmuu stopped in his tracks.

Although the white-robed man didn’t do anything, he still seemed to create an indescribable amount of pressure for Youmuu.

“The Six Realms Patroller’s duty is to search for talented individuals throughout the Six Realms, and bring them to the Four Direction Palace to study in order to eliminate the remaining demon scum in the Upper Three Realms. Am I correct!?”

“How’d you know?” Youmuu was shocked.

“At the same time, the God Realm has forbid the Six Realms Patroller to use any strength above an Earth Supreme’s. Correct!?”

“Yes!”

“Then you broke the rules,” the white-robed man pursed his lips with a chuckle. “The dream you inflicted just now use divine energy surpassing that of an Earth Supreme’s. You can still stop yourself and return to ask for punishment. You might actually be able to escape death.”

“What a joke,” Youmuu snorted. “Who are you to taught to me like that. You seem to be from the Upper Three Realms as well. Have you not heard of us, the Niflheim!?”

“Of course I’ve heard of the descendants of the Twelve Liches, but you... are just from a side branch, aren’t you?” the white-robed man mocked.

“You are challenging my bottom line here,” Youmuu frowned.

“So what? You can’t match me,” the white-robed man emitted clear confidence.

Youmuu gritted his teeth and clenched his fist...

“Youmuu, stand idle!”

At that very moment, a rainbow seemed to end in front of them, and on top of that rainbow bridge...

Stood a sweet-looking girl.

Chapter 635 – Liu Qing's Change

No one would suspect a thing even if the girl on the rainbow bridge had proclaimed herself as a fairy from the nine heavens. She walked down the rainbow bridge elegantly, and this caused everyone in the entire city to watch her in a mesmerized manner.

“You Highness,” Youmuu quickly raced over.

The girl nodded with a smile, “Do you know your wrongs?”

“Your subordinate knows his wrongs,” Youmuu did not dare to retort, and merely bowed his head deeply.

At the same time, Ye Zichen was already dumbfounded. This girl...

Liu Qing.

Liu Qing seemed a bit more mature compared now to when she was taken away to the God Realm. There was an indescribable coldness that could be felt through her actions.

“His Majesty told you to recruit capable people, he didn’t tell you to come here and get cocky,” Liu Qing said.

Youmuu repeatedly nodded, “Your Highness is right.”

“But don’t worry, I will help put in a word for you with His Majesty,” with that, Liu Qing walked over in front of the white-robed man.

She checked him out curiously with her crystal clear eyes. Then after a while, Liu Qing smiled, “Senior, why do you cover your face? Do you not want junior to recognize you?”

“That’s not the case,” the white-robed man smiled. “But since you’re here, then nothing else is going to come up. I’ll leave this place to you.”

“Senior, do you not want to see me?” Liu Qing’s eyes sparkled with unshed tears.

The white-robed man, who was about to leave, paused in his tracks with a chuckle. “The one down there probably wants to see you even more than me.”

With that, the white-robed man disappeared. Only then did Liu Qing smile.

Youmuu followed behind her, while Mu Cheng gulped and tidied himself up.

At the same time, he also reminded Mu Chengtian to put on his best act.

The other people also did similar things.

They did not dare to act carelessly around someone even the Six Realms Patroller has to treat carefully.

“Your Highness, the one I chose this time is him,” Youmuu pointed towards Mu Chengtian.

“I didn’t expect you see you here,” Liu Qing ignored Youmuu and walked directly towards Ye Zichen.

In all honesty, Ye Zichen had a lot of things he wanted to say to Liu Qing. However, the cold tone and the distance in her actions caused him to swallow his words.

“A Sky Immortal now. Not bad, not bad at all.”

“Are you really Liu Qing?” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but ask. He didn’t believe that Liu Qing would talk to him like that.

“Of course, I have to thank you for forging a celestial body for me, it has allowed me to act like fish in the water even in the God Realm,” Liu Qing smiled. “I am indebted to you for that.”

With that, a golden fruit appeared in her hands. “This is a Sacred Fruit that took a million years to mature. I’ll gift it to you to repay your favor.”

“Your Highness,” Youmuu frowned. “His Majesty left it to you so that you can use it when you breakthrough to the Sky Supreme

level.”

“Do I even need it?” Liu Qing’s eyes were cold. “Is the Sky Supreme level enough to stop me with my talents?”

“No,” Youmuu shook his head.

Only then did Liu Qing smiled as she handed the fruit towards Ye Zichen. “Take it.”

Ye Zichen’s gaze never left Liu Qing’s eyes.

He could not understand just why did Liu Qing turned out like that.

“Why are you looking at me like that? Are you still thinking about what I said back then? I’ll admit it, I really liked you a lot before going to the God Realm. That’s all because I was too inexperienced. When I arrived in the God Realm, I noticed that there are plenty of people better than you. You might not know this, but if I wanted to get married, millions of young men in the God Realm would come and fight over me. They are far stronger than you in both strength and status,” Liu Qing pursed her lips with a smile.

Ye Zichen was at a loss for words. Then, after a long while, he sighed, “It’s good that you’re doing well. Keep the sacred fruit. Reviving you was merely a promise of mine. It’s not a favor or anything.”

“Hah, oh well,” Liu Qing put the fruit away with a soft smile, then looked towards Mu Chengtian. “Twin souls... He’s indeed got potential. But his main body is too weak, he won’t ever become anything great. Youmuu, you were off the mark this time.”

“Your Highness...”

“Leave him. In terms of talent, even Ye Zichen is several times better than him. Just treat it like we didn’t find anyone talented this time. Let’s return.”

“Understood.” The rainbow bridge landed from the sky once more.

Liu Qing stepped onto the bridge with Youmuu in tow, “Ye Zichen, no matter what, I still owe you this life.”

When the two people who stepped into the bridge disappeared, Ye Zichen smiled softly, then saw Zuo Mo twitch her mouth.

“Just how many women do you have around you? That being said, your choice in women are rather varied. You even hooked up with Her Highness from the God Realm.”

“Oh, stop making fun of me,” Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, then glanced over at Mu Chengtian and Mu Cheng.

The moment Mu Cheng heard Liu Qing say that they weren’t going to take Mu Chengtian, Mu Cheng’s expression became gradually more terrible. Zuo Hongxin was the same. He had thought that he managed to cut ahead of Zuo Hongde, but the truth was that he cut ahead in something that was a dead end.

On the other hand, Zuo Hongde found the situation rather hilarious. He looked at Zuo Hongxin and Mu Cheng meaningfully, “It seems like all your plans attributed to nothing.”

“Brother Zuo,” Mu Cheng walked over with a forced smile. “I said the wrong thing earlier. So, about the wedding between our houses...”

“Didn’t you say that you wanted to become in-laws with my little brother? That’s a pretty good idea...” Zuo Hongde smiled towards Zuo Mo and Ye Zichen. “Let’s go. We should leave some time for them to talk about the details of the engagement.”

...

When Ye Zichen and co. departed, Zuo Hongxin squinted his eyes with a frown, “Zuo Hongde is sure cocky.”

“Yeah,” Mu Cheng snorted. “He truly thinks too highly of

himself. I heard that the Treasure Tower's youngsters are going to compete for the Tower Head soon?"

"Indeed."

"Heh, Zuo Hongde and Zuo Mo won't be able to do anything when our families become in-laws. The Tower Head position will definitely belong to Qingcheng."

"Then I'll take Brother Mu's word for it," Zuo Hongxin forced a smile.

Mu Cheng nodded and patted Zuo Hongxin's shoulders. "C'mon, let's figure out just how are we going to screw Zuo Hongde over."

...

Liu Qing walked in front of the rainbow bridge, while Youmuu followed behind for a long time.

"Your Highness."

"What?" Liu Qing didn't even turn around.

Youmuu pursed his lips, "You should still have some... for that kid just now..."

"No point of asking that anymore," Liu Qing stopped and glanced at the clouds below the bridge. "His Majesty has high hopes for me. I will not disappoint His Majesty's nurturing. What's more, him and I are no longer people from the same world. We hold different statuses now and have seen different things. I've already forgotten about him."

Chapter 636 – Engagement

The engagement ceremony between Zuo Qingcheng and Mu Chengtian was held without a lot of people's blessing.

From the looks of things, Zuo Hongxin was truly going to cooperate with Mu Cheng in their attempt to use their combined forces to fight in the competition for the Treasure Tower's future Tower Head.

However, due to both of them being rich people, there were naturally plenty of people who still arrived at the scene.

Every single one of the six city lords from the outer area of the Immortal Region arrived, while the chiefs of the Six Sects and Three Gates did the same. Furthermore, even if some of them were unable to make it, they did send someone significant to represent them.

“This is rather lively. Why are you here?”

Ye Zichen chuckled when he saw Zuo Mo sipping a cup of alcohol in the corner of the scene.

“You're drinking from depression? Don't tell me that you're kind of sad to see Mu Chengtian and Zuo Qingcheng get married,” Ye Zichen teased her. He knew that was definitely not the case.

After all, even a retard could tell just how Zuo Mo felt about Mu Chengtian.

However, Zuo Mo did not reply.

Noticing that, Ye Zichen couldn't help but raise his eyebrows after pouring a glass of liquor for himself, “Hey, I can't have hit the mark, right?”

“What are you talking about?” Zuo Mo pouted, then immediately indicated towards the two main characters. “They are really suited for each other.”

“Just like a dog and a bitch!” Ye Zichen shrugged.

“That’s rather appropriate,” Zuo Mo couldn’t help but smile. “Why are you interested in this? Didn’t you say that you have to go over to the Immortal Region’s Sacred Land?”

“I’m not in a hurry...” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but twitch his mouth. “They’re telling me to come over, so I’m supposed to go over without them sending something fancy to come and get me? I care about my face too, you know?”

The previous day, Ye Zichen received a voice transmission from Great Emperor Qingming, telling him to come to the Immortal Region for a chat.

When Ye Zichen heard that, his expression was...

Filled with disdain.

Ignoring the matter about face, he didn’t even know where the hell was the sacred land of the Immortal Region supposed to be, even though he had stayed in the Three Realms for quite a while.

Even if he wanted to go, just how the heck was he supposed to?

“Fine, you care about face,” Zuo Mo smiled gently, then started to sip her liquor with a gloomy look once more.

Ye Zichen checked her out, then couldn’t help but ask, “What are you thinking about? This isn’t like you at all.”

“You’re speaking as if you know me really well,” Zuo Mo smiled.

“Of course, from what I remember, Zuo Mo is a true queen like Wu Zetian. You should be looking down on everything. Drinking sadly like this is unlike you,” Ye Zichen said with an exaggerated manner.

Although Zuo Mo didn’t know who Wu Zetian was, she still couldn’t help but giggle.

“That’s more like it. A pretty girl isn’t pretty anymore if they keep on looking gloomy.”

“This lady is born beautiful and will remain that way in any circumstance,” Zuo Mo squinted her eyes with a smile.

Ye Zichen nodded without retorting. “Since that’s the case, then naturally beautiful lady, can you talk about what’s getting you annoyed?”

“It isn’t really anything important,” Zuo Mo raised her cup and shook it around. Her gaze landed in the center of the scene, but Ye Zichen understood that she wasn’t paying attention to the main characters of the ceremony. “Zuo Qingcheng and Mu Chengtian getting married means that my uncle will have the support of the entire Mu family. You should know that soon after, the next leader of the Treasure Tower will be chosen among the younger generation...”

Zuo Mo stopped talking.

Since Ye Zichen was no foolish person, so he naturally understood what she was referring to, “Zuo Qingcheng is of a threat to you now?”

“Kind of,” Zuo Mo nodded. “Look at the old men wearing the Treasure Tower’s clothes over there. They are all elders. They were all neutral before, but when they heard that Zuo Qingcheng and Mu Chengtian were getting engaged, they all changed sides.

“It seems like that they didn’t get enough information!” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

“No way,” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows. “Those old men are all intelligent people. Since they chose to stop being neutral and take sides, it means that they are a hundred percent of siding with the right people.”

“Then you’re just going to give up?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Naturally no,” Zuo Mo stood up and stretched lazily. “I’m going to fight for it no matter what. Both for the future of the Treasure

Tower and for my life.”

What Zuo Mo wanted to express was very clear. If Zuo Qingcheng ends up as the master of the Treasure Tower...

There will no be anywhere for Zuo Mo in the entire Zuo household or even the entire outer area of the Immortal Region. That was why she had to fight for it, even if it was only for survival.

Ye Zichen have seen plenty of internal struggles of large clans.

However, he was very confident in Zuo Mo. What’s more, even if Zuo Mo loses, he had a way to turn the tables for her.

Yet, he was naturally not going to say that.

Trump cards exist to be used in the key moment. Only then would they have the most effect.

“Big Sis, why are you here? Chengtian and I were looking for you just now,” At that moment, Zuo Qingcheng walked over with her arms around Mu Chengtian.

For some reason, there was actually a hint of redness on Mu Chengtian’s face, perhaps due to happiness or something else.

Plenty of handsome young man also followed behind them. Most of them were significant or symbolic youngsters from large families or powerful factions.

“Big Sis, why are you here? Chengtian and I were looking for you just now,” Zuo Qingcheng smirked and repeated herself.

Zuo Mo felt like there was some sort of ploy hidden beneath Zuo Qingcheng’s foxy smile. However, Zuo Hongde had reminded Zuo Mo not to cause any trouble before she came over.

She also understood very well that arguing under these circumstances wouldn’t do anything good for her either.

Thus, she smiled and prepared to turn around in order to prevent any argument from breaking out.

“Big Sis, this is little sister’s engagement ceremony. Although we are not sisters by blood, we have lived together in the same household for twenty something years. Shouldn’t you give us your blessing?”

“Of course,” Zuo Mo smiled. “I wish you two a lifetime of happiness, for your years together to be willed with lasting joy. For you to bear children soon, and be favored by all the fortune in the world... Is that enough?”

“Little sister thanks big sis for her blessings,” Zuo Qingcheng’s expression did not change, and merely turned towards Ye Zichen with a smile.

“Uhm, I’m not very educated. Zuo Mo said everything I could think of, so what to do... Oh how about this, I wish you two... Zeze, I wish you two... Ahh, I wish you two a lovely sex life in your marriage,” with that, Ye Zichen seemed to glance down at Mu Chengtian’s lower body.

“Ye Zichen!” Mu Chengtian’s expression darkened.

Ye Zichen took a step back and shrugged, “What? I’m giving you the blessing for your own good. Wouldn’t it be your fault if the Mu family ends with your generation?”

“You...” An angry red surfaced on Mu Chengtian’s stark white face.

Zuo Qingcheng smiled and yanked his arm. “Regardless, he’s giving us his blessing, so you shouldn’t get angry.”

Then she nodded towards Ye Zichen, “I’ve received your blessing. But I didn’t look towards you for that. It’s just that a friend of mine would like to see you. Would you like to meet him?”

Chapter 637 – Yin Xiong’s Provocation

“...” Ye Zichen turned silent. Is there something wrong with that woman!?

Someone wants to meet me? Through her?

“Tell whoever wants to see me to come on over. I can’t be bothered to move,” Ye Zichen laid down on the chair and looked lazily at Zuo Qingcheng with a smile.

“Leisure House’s chief is truly cocky,” a snicker sounded out amongst the crowd.

Hearing that, Zuo Qingcheng and co. all made way in the middle.

At that moment, Ye Zichen also looked up and saw that “Senior Brother Yin” from the Hundred Flowers Gate walk over.

“Brother Yin,” the surrounding people all cupped their hands at him.

This man wore a rather eye-catching set of clothes to the engagement ceremony.

However, this set of silk clothes seemed rather out of place on him.

Senior Brother Yin nodded his head coldly, clearly not thinking much of the people around him. All of the young people were furious, but didn’t dare to say a word. After all, Yin Xiong was practically the second chief disciple in his sect.

He might even have a chance to compete to be the Gate Master of the Hundred Flowers Gate, even though... He was a man.

Yin Xiong walked through the crowd and in front of Ye Zichen, then looked down at the latter with an arrogant smile, “I’m here.”

“...” Ye Zichen’s expression stiffened for a moment, then he raised his eyebrows. “Have we met before?”

Yin Xiong's expression drastically changed. He felt like he was losing face in front of all the people present.

"Zuo Qingcheng, who's this? He was the one looking for me? I don't know him..." Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly.

Zuo Qingcheng walked between the two with a smile and begun to introduce the newcomer, "This is the Hundred Flower Gate's..."

"Brat, stop pretending here. I'm the Hundred Flower Gate's Li Jiayi's senior brother, Yin Xiong, we met at the teleportation portal to the Hundred Flower Gate previously," Yin Xiong interrupted Zuo Qingcheng and squinted his eyes.

Zuo Qingcheng maintained her smile and backed off to the side.

Ye Zichen also scratched his head, then finally exclaimed after thinking about it for a long time, "Oh, it's you. Sorry, I don't really remember small fries."

Ouuuuu...

The surrounding youngsters all couldn't help but take a deep breath. Just who is this young man? He actually dared to call Yin Xiong a small fry.

Yin Xiong clenched his fist, then pursed his lips, "Leisure House's chief is sure cocky."

"That's not a problem as long as my breath is fresh. But you... you ate garlic didn't you? You have a serious breath issue," Ye Zichen crossed his legs while wearing a smile.

Yin Xiong pursed his lips with a smile, "What's the point of just blabbering. I came to find you for a simple reason. I was worried that you would be a retard and seek out my junior sister again, so I've come to help you remember. I do want to see just how strong Leisure House's chief is."

The atmosphere immediately changed. A terrifying pressure radiated out from Yin Xiong.

Mid stage Sky Immortal.

No too bad.

Ye Zichen sighed speechlessly, then stood up with a shrug, “You want to fight?”

Yin Xiong nodded.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and looked towards Zuo Qingcheng, “This is your engagement ceremony. Would you like us to fight?”

“Both of you are amazing people. How would I dare to affect your decisions,” Zuo Qingcheng smiled.

I’ll have to be honest, this girl really knows what to say and is very capable of hiding her feelings.

She isn’t offending anyone, but that’s natural. After all, neither side winning will cause her to lose anything.

“Ahh, this is a tough thing,” Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly. “Say, I’m the actual chief and have to fight you, a youngster? It doesn’t look good if I win, it’s even more embarrassing if I lose...”

“You really think you’re the chief now, huh,” Yin Xiong snorted, “That puny Leisure House isn’t even comparable to a hall from our Hundred Flower Gate.”

“Oh, is that so,” Ye Zichen shrugged with a smile.

“If you are pussyng out, then admit your wrongs. I will generously forgive you,” Yin Xiong squinted his eyes in obvious mockery.

Ye Zichen glanced over at Zuo Mo, “This guy’s kind of famous in the outer regions of the Immortal Region, right?”

“He is rather famous amongst the younger generations,” Zuo Mo nodded.

“Alright then, since my Leisure House isn’t that famous yet, then

I'll just let this grandson be a stepping stone. But you guys have to bear witness to this. This grandson was the one who came up to me and spouted shit. If I injure him, or completely turn him into a disabled... Seniors from the Hundred Flower Gate, please don't cause trouble for me," Ye Zichen looked around with a smile. Then, he turned towards Yin Xiong. "Find somewhere for us to fight. It really isn't quite right for us to fight at their engagement ceremony, right?"

Yin Xiong originally intended to just fight right there. He had absolute confidence in his own strength. He wanted to quickly dispatch Ye Zichen and make the latter lose face.

After all, everyone who came to the ceremony were reputed people in the outer sector of the Immortal Region. If he could step on Ye Zichen, then the latter would never be able to lift his head up anymore.

However, Ye Zichen was right. If he was to force the fight there, it really would be ungentlemanly.

"We have a martial practice field. How about going over there?" Zuo Qingcheng asked.

"Sure, lead the way," Yin Xiong nodded.

Zuo Qingcheng nodded and led them away, while Yin Xiong followed behind her without looking back, as if looking back was an insult for himself.

He was just going to keep forward.

"Zuo Mo, help me advertise this. Tell everyone to watch the show. I'll use this chance to bring some more fame to Leisure House."

"No problem, but Yin Xiong is rather strong. Aren't you worried that..."

"What should I be worried about?" Ye Zichen smiled with a shrug. "He might be superbly strong in the eyes of others, but he's

just a kid in my perspective.”

...

At the Zuo household's martial practice field.

The news of their fight spread like wildfire with Zuo Mo's advertisement. Thus, a lot of people hurried over to watch the show.

Yin Xiong looked around and snorted, “It seems like you won't be able to stay around in the outer sector of the Immortal Region anymore. Prepare to get your Leisure House torn apart.”

“You're that confident?” Ye Zichen chuckled.

“One hit is more than enough to deal with you!” Yin Xiong lifted his finger arrogantly.

Ye Zichen shrugged, “I used to have a friend as arrogant as you, but now, his tombstone is already covered in grass. C'mon, I do want to see just how strong your one hit is. Oh yeah, do I win if I block it?”

“Sure,” Yin Xiong merely smiled proudly.

Seeing that, many people all praised him for how much he seemed like a hero of the old, while some people even began to say that Ye Zichen was too cowardly.

However, Ye Zichen merely smiled indifferently.

No matter what, that was all just bullshit. True strength was the only thing that mattered.

“Come,” Ye Zichen hooked his finger towards Yin Xiong.

Yin Xiong squinted his eyes, “Your spiritual energy...”

“Do I need it against you?” Ye Zichen gradually replaced the smile on his face with a cold expression. “Come. Show me your one hit.”

Chapter 638 – One Hit

“Ridiculous,” Yin Xiong raised his hand up high and a celestial sword flew through the air and into his hands.

This was a sword that his master had handed over to him when they decided on him going to the engagement ceremony. It was supposed to be for him to defend himself with along the way, but there was also a possibility of it merely being a matter of face.

The sword was called Shattered Bonds, it was refined by his master to chop off his seven emotions and six desires.

It was a sword above the celestial grade and below the divine artifact grade. In fact, it could be said to be the strongest sword under divine artifacts. What’s more, the sword itself was of the thunder attribute and when a person with a thunder attribute constitution uses it, they would be able to strengthen themselves by about thirty percent.

What’s more, Yin Xiong had a thunder attribute constitution.

Crackle...

Rain clouds began to gather in the sky and flashes of lightning could be seen in the thunder clouds. Lightning seemed to sparkle from the sword itself.

The moment Yin Xiong gripped the sword, bolts of lightning landed from the sky.

Crackle.

As the lightning landed, the sword itself also turned a silvery white.

“As expected of Yin Xiong, his strength is nearly on par with the older generations right?”

“Yeah, his art of thunder manipulation has also reached its peak.”

“The Hundred Flower Gate might truly rise. I heard that their chief disciple is also someone with prodigious talent. She managed to rise to the complete stage of the Human Immortal level all the way from the False Spiritual Body level in several months time.”

“They might truly rise!”

The audience began to discuss intently amongst themselves. However, the result of the fight was no longer their main focus.

Yin Xiong already was already of the mid stage Sky Immortal level, and after using Shattered Bond, he seemed to reach the level of a late stage Sky Immortal. What’s more, the lightning amongst the rainclouds were terrifying, even late-stage Sky Immortal leveled people might not be able to defend against it.

Meanwhile, they could not sense any spiritual energy fluctuation from Ye Zichen.

Thus, they naturally assumed that he was frozen in shock.

The only thing they didn’t know was that whether the Zuo family or Mu family would send someone out to stop the fight, since someone might actually be killed if they didn’t.

“Not too bad,” Ye Zichen praised with crossed arms. However, his main focus was on the sword in Yin Xiong’s hands. The aura of the latter seemed to have strengthened after gripping the sword.

It was already very hard for people at the Sky Immortal level to find a treasure to strengthen their spiritual energy.

From the looks of it, he’s really compatible with the sword!

“Don’t blame me for giving you a chance,” at that very moment, Yin Xiong, whose entire body was sparkling, looked at Ye Zichen and called out sullenly. “If you’re scared, then go ahead and ask for mercy. Don’t lose your life just because you’re trying to act cool.”

From the looks of it, he has already finished preparing his spiritual technique since there was a huge ball of lightning over ten

meters wide above their heads.

The lightning seemed to hiss like a snake, and even the audience couldn't help but feel troubled!

Ye Zichen merely hooked his finger.

“Heh, then don't fault me,” with that, Yin Xiong swept his right hand over the blade and pointed towards Ye Zichen. “Disaster Thunder Explosion!”

Boom.

Thunder sounded out through the sky, and the lightning landed.

“Yin Xiong has actually become so strong now,” Zuo Hongxin shook his head.

“Hurry up and form a formation. You can't afford to allow any guests to get hurt,” Zuo Hongde shouted towards Zuo Hongxin with a frown.

Only then did the latter react and quickly told the Treasure Tower's elders and the guests to place down seals around the martial practice field.

Ten-odd Sky Immortal experts worked together to seal the lightning inside.

Boom.

A terrifying explosion occurred inside the formation. All ten-odd Sky Immortals gritted their teeth. However, they still continued to maintain the barrier for the safety of the people in their surroundings.

The huge noise shocked the audience as well.

Seeing that, Mu Chengtian couldn't help but snort, “Heh, that bastard, now there's definitely nothing left of him!”

“Say that again if you dare!” Zuo Mo looked back with an ice cold expression.

Mu Chengtian gulped. He was still truly afraid of Zuo Mo.

Zuo Qingcheng pulled him behind her and walked up to Zuo Mo with squinted eyes. “Big sis, little sister can’t stand you being that menacing. No matter what, Chengtian is my future husband.”

“Heh, Ye Zichen was truly right. A dog and a bitch are perfect match for each other. I’m telling you guys, you better pray that Ye Zichen is fine. Otherwise, even you won’t be able to get out of this. Yes, I’m threatening you right now. Honestly, don’t push me into a corner. My reputation is not just for show.” A fierce cold light filled Zuo Mo’s eyes.

Zuo Qingcheng felt a chill down her spine.

Although they had been competing for a long time, it was her first time seeing Zuo Mo like that. Normally, Zuo Mo would remain level-headed, but this time...

Zuo Mo’s eyes seemed to be filled with insanity.

“He should be fine,” Zuo Qingcheng instantly backed off.

Zuo Mo snorted, “That better be the case. Otherwise, you two, and the Hundred Flower Gate will be buried with him!”

...

“What a shame. You were pretty talented. Ahh, I really don’t remember how many times did I kill a genius. Hah, this feeling is truly amazing,” Yin Xiong turned around indifferently as the smoke from the explosion began to disperse.

He waved towards the people forming the seals to signal them to remove it. However, at that very moment, a figure slowly walked out from the smoke.

“My hair was ruined!” Ye Zichen patted the blood crystal armor on him. It was summoned he summoned the moment the lightning was about to strike. As for why he didn’t use the Swirling Flash Plate...

There were plenty of experts and amongst them, there are many people who were very observant.

If he was to just use the divine artifact there, people would definitely set their eyes upon it. If he got robbed of it, then he would definitely regret it.

“He’s actually not dead!” the audience couldn’t help but exclaim.

Zuo Mo also revealed a look of joy when she saw this.

“He didn’t even die from this?” Mu Chengtian couldn’t help but mutter, but he quickly stopped talking when he felt Zuo Mo’s cold gaze.

Yet, the one who was most surprised was Yin Xiong. He had used his full strength without holding back at all.

This brat actually managed to defend against it and from the looks of it, he’s... unharmed!

“You...”

“What about me? Fighting’s one thing, but why did you ruin my hair? F*ck, do you know how expensive a can of wax is? I used an entire can for this. You completely ruined it!” Ye Zichen tried to frantically rearrange his hair and frowned. “I was just going to defend against your attack, but I’ve changed my mind. I’m going to take revenge for my deceased hairstyle!”

With that, Ye Zichen seemed to teleport away, only to return to where he stood a moment later.

“How... could you be... so... strong...”

None of the audience saw exactly what happened. The only thing they saw was that Yin Xiong fell down onto the floor with wide open eyes.

“You got it now? This is one hit!”

Chapter 639 – Going to the Sacred Land

One hit.

Ye Zichen smiled as he looked at Yin Xiong, who fell down onto the ground. He's probably quite pissed.

He said that he was going to beat me with one hit so confidently, but the result was the complete opposite.

All of the audiences were all dumbstruck. Luo Wei, who was helping others in maintaining the barrier sighed softly, then glanced over at Ye Zichen with a frown. However, in the end, he still merely shook his head and did not do anything.

“Will Yin Xiong...” Mu Cheng and Zuo Hongxin walked over and asked carefully.

Yin Xiong was a very reputed young man in the Hundred Flower Gate and was representing the seniors of the sect. They would be in a very troubled situation if anything happened to him.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but twitch his mouth when he saw their nervous looks, “He won't die, but he'll have to stay in bed for a few days.”

“That's good, that's good,” Zuo Hongxin muttered repeatedly, then called over some attendants to carry Yin Xiong to a guest room.

At this moment, Zuo Mo also ran over in excitement, while a hint of tears could still be seen in her delicate eyes.

“Ye Zichen, you cared me to death just now.”

“You don't have faith in me? This sort of tiny situation...” Ye Zichen rubbed her head.

Zuo Qingcheng and Mu Chengtian also walked over, “My older sister was very worried about you. I wonder when I'll be able to give you a toast.”

“That’s none of your business,” Zuo Mo squinted her eyes at Zuo Qingcheng.

Noticing that, Zuo Qingcheng no longer stuck around to get angry at and merely turned around to leave.

“Brother Ye, I thought that what I got in Mount Supreme was great enough. I didn’t expect that even though you didn’t stay too long in Mount Supreme, you had become even stronger than me,” Ruan Qingtian, who haven’t been seen for a long time, walked out from the crowds. Judging from the spiritual energy fluctuation around him, he had broken through to the Sky Immortal level.

“Brother Ruan, congratulations for reaching the Sky Immortal level.”

“How is this a joyous thing? I was clearly stronger than you initially, but you’ve already left me behind now,” Ruan Qingtian couldn’t help but smile wryly.

Ye Zichen did not continue to dwell on the subject and merely raised his eyebrows, “What’s the situation with Mount Supreme now?”

“It’s nothing special. It’s just like what the senior who took you away said. The seals around Mount Supreme were removed, so those without keys are now able to enter. There should be plenty of people who are trying to get lucky in Mount Supreme right now,” Ruan Qingtian smiled.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Qiu Yuan still didn’t come out?”

“There must be some worldly sign when he comes out, right? No matter what, it is the inheritance of a Supreme, so he should be at the Immortal King level at worst. I’ll have to be honest, I’m rather envious. Oh, I do want to ask you, did you intentionally tell that senior to say that since you wanted to give the inheritance to Qiu Yuan...? It isn’t just me, a lot of other people are saying that,” Ruan Qingtian asked.

Ye Zichen smiled wryly, “I’m not that sort of person. He is the Chosen One.”

“Then he’s really lucky,” Ruan Qingtian couldn’t help but shake his head, then glanced over at Zuo Qingcheng and Mu Chengtian. “They actually got together? Zuo Mo, it seems like your competition will be tough during the tower head election!”

“Heh, I really don’t think much of them,” Zuo Mo always maintained her strong attitude and confidence in front of others.

Ruan Qingtian smiled, they’ve known each other for quite a while, so he naturally understood her very well.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen’s phone rang. He subconsciously touched his pocket, then smiled at the two near him before heading over to a place without many people to take his phone out.

However, there was no message when he clicked on the chatting app.

Was I hearing things?

However, just as he was about to put his phone away, he saw a system notification.

System Notification: When are you going to the Immortal Region?

“Oh, it’s you. I naturally have my plans. You don’t need to watch me so closely right? Can’t you give me some personal space?”

System Notification: I’m helping you complete the main mission. Say, stop considering things, I’ll help you make the choice. I’ll open up a portal to the Immortal Region later. Just go in.

...

Ye Zichen was speechless. He’s actually making decisions for me now.

”Hey, are we that close?”

System Notification: Don’t be like that. Think about our connection, I definitely won’t screw you over. You’ll definitely be fine if you follow the plot I planned.

“Then tell me why do I need to go to the Immortal Region right now?” Ye Zichen shrugged. “I’m not familiar with them.”

System Notification: You will be after you meet then, right? What’s more, you’re going to have to go over there sooner or later. No matter what, you are the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation, it really isn’t right if you don’t go over.

System Notification: Now, be a good boy and go.

“Then tell me what do I gain from doing that,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, then smiled craftily. “I have been listening to you the entire time. You told me to earn cultivation experience, and so I did. I also gained tons of intimacy levels. But I have an insane amount of cultivation experience right now, you have to give me something to spend it, right?”

System Notification: Stop worrying, your cultivation experience will definitely be used one day. Insane amount... Even if you include that industrial region in the Heavenly Court, do you even have five hundred million cultivation experience? I think not!

Seeing that, Ye Zichen carefully estimated a little...

I really don’t have five hundred million cultivation experience.

But... it’s still more than enough to buy all the treasures in the Treasure Shop with what I have.

“Why did you tell me to earn so much cultivation experience? I want to buy the treasures in the Treasure Shop.”

System Notification: Buy your ass. They aren’t really useful for you right now, or even in the future. Just keep earning cultivation

experience, a time will come when you'll need a huge amount of it in the future.

Since the system notification phrased it like that, Ye Zichen could only let out a sigh, then keep on trusting the system.

Dingdong.

Just as he was pondering about whether he should go to the Immortal Region, a red packet appeared on the screen.

“What tricks are you trying to pull this time?”

Ye Zichen was extremely careful with this due to the chocolate he got last time.

System Notification: What tricks can I pull with you? This is your Xuan-Yuan Sword. I have already unsealed fifty percent of the seals, but I still have some stuff to deal with here, so I can't bring it over to you. Put Xuan-Yuan Sword into the Treasure Chest, then only take it out when you reach the Immortal Region.

“Why?”

System Notification: Xuan-Yuan Sword is the strongest primordial divine artifact with power surpassing even that of the East Emperor's Bell. If you draw out the Xuan-Yuan Sword, which had fifty percent of its seals undone, the unnatural effects it draws will definitely catch the attention of those guys up there. But it's different if you go to the Immortal Region. The Upper Three Realms don't dare to try and do anything with a divine artifact belonging to the sacred land of the Immortal Region.

“Oh?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then couldn't help but frown. “What sort of magical place is the sacred land of the Immortal Region? It's actually enough to make those from the Upper Three Realms wary...”

System Notification: Don't ask about what you shouldn't. I have no time to explain. Now, go to the sacred land.

With that, a black portal appeared in front of Ye Zichen.
It led directly to the sacred land!

Chapter 640 – Daoist Temple Disciple

The Heavenly Court, Underworld and Immortal Region were collectively called the Lower Three Realms.

Most people would assume that since the Heavenly Court stood at the top, and the Underworld below, the Immortal Region was naturally in the middle.

That was not actually the case.

The Immortal Region was considered its own realm because of its special location. The middle of the Heavenly Court and the Underworld was made up of places where humans lived and the Endless Beast Region where yaos resided.

The Immortal Region...

Had its own separate space.

“System, you bastard!”

Ye Zichen couldn't help but curse after stepping through the portal. He didn't even have time to admire the scenery of the new location around him.

The place where the portal connected to was actually...

In the sky!

Bang.

Thus, since Ye Zichen was unable to react in time, he fell heavily onto the ground. Even though his body was tough enough to withstand it, he still felt extremely dizzy.

“Hey, the kid over there...”

Ye Zichen who was rubbing his face looked up in confusion, then saw a middle-aged man wearing a daoist robe squat in front of him.

“You came to signup, right? The signups already over, but since you fell so terribly, I'll give you a chance.”

“Huh?” Ye Zichen was confused.

“Don’t get too excited and don’t try to thank me. It’ll be on you for whether you can stay in our daoist temple. But you are kind of old, so don’t think about becoming an inner sect disciple. Try your best to become an outer sect disciple!” the middle-aged man shook his head and walked forward.

Ye Zichen continued to watch the man in confusion before looking around and seeing several hundred young men around his age standing there.

“What are you blanking out for? Hurry up,” the middle-aged man waved him on.

Ye Zichen was confused, but he still nodded, “I’m coming.”

...

As Ye Zichen followed behind the group of people, he was still completely confused. What’s going on? Didn’t I come to the Immortal Region to meet the heads of the Immortal Region? Why did I end up as a disciple at some temple?

Also, this temple’s like super low! They’re just walking forward aimlessly. When the hell are we stopping!?

“Brother, you want to cultivate at this age? That’s impressive,” a lecherous looking uncle drew closer to Ye Zichen and cupped his hands.

Ye Zichen was shocked when he saw the man. He looks...

At least thirty or forty...

“I think you are the impressive one. You want to become a disciple at your age.”

“Brother, don’t misunderstand, I just matured a bit quicker. We should actually be around the same age,” the lecherous uncle smiled. “I’m telling you, it’s going to be hard for the inner sect elders to become interested in us. You should be aiming to become

an outer sect disciple, right? It really is a coincidence, I am too. Let's get to know each other earlier so we can take care of each other."

"It's hard to say whether we'll even get chosen," Ye Zichen shrugged. After all, he didn't come here to become a disciple.

"Hey, don't worry. The competition to become an inner sect disciple might be rather intense, but we'll definitely become outer sect disciples," the man patted his chest confidently. "I already asked around. The higher ups told all sects to recruit more disciples to prevent something. Who cares what that is, but we're the lucky ones. We're the first batch to be chosen from, so we'll definitely get in. Even if we only become outer disciples, the villagers back home will still need to call us Lord Immortal. That's so great!"

"Is that so!" Ye Zichen smiled.

The man also spoke up once more, "Ahh, look at me. We still don't know what each other is called, right? I'm [Cui Fugui](#). My name's a bit lame, but my parents wanted me to live a wealthy life. What're you called?"

"Ye Zichen."

"Then Brother Ye, we know each other now, so we have to help each other after we get into the outer sect. I heard that there are quite a lot of different factions in the outer sect, so us new people have to work together."

"Silence in the back!" Someone shouted from the front.

Cui Fugui, who was blabbering continuously, immediately shut his mouth, but still continued to eye Ye Zichen.

...

Approximately four hours later and after a long distance that Ye Zichen couldn't even remember, the group finally stopped walking.

“The ones who want to get into the outer sect on the left, the ones who want to get into the inner sect on the right!”

Whoosh.

Ninety percent of the people moved to the right, leaving only a few walking towards the left. Most of those who walked towards the left were older people. After all, everyone would fight for the chance to enter the inner sect if they could.

“Hey you, the guy standing in the middle. Where do you want to go?”

Ye Zichen scratched his chin. His arrival there was a complete misunderstanding.

“Bro, what are you blanking out for. Come here!” Cui Fugui repeatedly waved towards him.

Ye Zichen scratched his nose. He thought about it for a moment, then realized that he didn’t know what to do even if he was to leave, so he walked towards where the ones aiming to become outer sect disciples were.

“That’s more like it. Bro, don’t tell me that you wanted to go to the inner sect area. Look at who’s over there. I heard that there’s a genius amongst them with a water attribute spiritual root. He managed to reach the complete stage of the Human Immortal level at thirteen years old, so he’s definitely going to become the True Disciple. Any inner sect disciple who can’t become the True Disciple isn’t anything special. The outer sect’s far more comfortable,” Cui Fugui continued to blabber.

Ye Zichen nodded and didn’t say anything.

“Outer sects go with Senior Brother Hu. Inner sect come with me!” with that, the black-robed man left the large group of people away.

Meanwhile, Senior Brother Hu, who was the middle-aged man who told Ye Zichen to join them, smiled towards the people who

were competing to become outer sect disciples, “You’re all persistent people, but you might not know that I was too. Don’t fret, you still have a chance to shine as long as you work hard even in the outer sect. I got in from the outer sect as well, and is now a complete stage Human Immortal. Although I’m merely in the bottom half in terms of strength, I can be considered an immortal now,” Senior Brother Hu said with a smile.

Many of the people in front of them clenched their fists, while a flame of hope lit up in their eyes.

Seeing that they got more confident, Senior Brother Hu nodded in satisfaction, “The entrance test for the outer sect is a lot simpler than the one for the inner sect. You see that cave? After you enter, just take out two strands of the herbs you now see in my hands.”

With that, a bright red herb with four leaves appeared in Senior Brother Hu’s hands, “This herb normally grows near the hole of a scale snake. Scale snakes aren’t poisonous nor particularly strong. They don’t even count as yaos, so you don’t have to worry about your safety.

As the people in front of him nodded, Senior Brother Hu smiled, “I’ll wait here for you guys to come out. You pass the outer sect entrance test as long as you can bring me two strands of this herb. I’ll bring you all into the temple later. Now, put this spiritual jade tablet away safely. When you get in danger, cracking it will teleport me to your side, but it also means that you failed the mission. Understand?”

“Understood!” everyone answered together.

“Then go in. Good luck.”

Fugui (富贵) means wealth.

Chapter 641 – Herb Harvesting

Most of the group worked their hardest in order to become the outer sect disciple of Yonghe Temple, causing them to search carefully for where the four-leafed spiritual herb was.

Of course, there were some people who didn't try at all, like Ye Zichen.

He aimlessly wandered around the cave lazily, while retorting in his mind.

Just what did I come here for? How did I randomly end up doing this?

“Bro, hurry up. The earlier we get out, the higher the score we'll get. Although the outer sect disciples don't get much resources, if we are able to perform exceptionally well amongst our year, then we'll still enjoy more resources,” Cui Fugui's eyes shone as he searched around for the four-leafed herb.

“Brother Cui, don't mind me. Go off and search on your own. I'll just let nature take its course. Worse come to worst I'll just not join Yonghe Temple,” Ye Zichen shrugged. He really wasn't interested in it.

“What are you saying? Yonghe Temple only accepts new disciples every three years. Three years might fly by for an immortal, but just how many three years do us mortals have? You want to give up after getting here? Brother, although we just met, but I felt like I would get along with you from first sight. Don't worry, if I can find the four-leafed herb, then I'll definitely find your portion as well before we go out,” Cui Fugui was kind, but this only made Ye Zichen sigh silently.

Ignoring everything else, the inner sect disciples, who have been in the temple for a long time, were only of the Human Immortal level. At the very least, I did reach the Sky Immortal level, and is

amongst the strongest in the Three Realms.

Isn't it just a joke for me to become an outer sect disciple in this temple!?

Even if I really manage to find the four-leaf herb, my purpose isn't to enter the temple. What's more, the Sect Chief is definitely no commoner. If he finds out that I, a Sky Immortal expert, came to become an outer sect disciple...

Wait a moment!

That'll work. The system didn't tell me how to find Great Emperor Qingming and co. I'll just start with this temple. If I cause some trouble, then those people will come to find me.

Yes, that's an amazing idea!

Heh, you think you can make things difficult for me!?

Thinking that, Ye Zichen smirked, then said as if he suddenly understood everything, "Brother Cui is right. I just thought of Senior Brother Hu. He managed to crawl up to where he is with determination, but nobody knows how much suffering he underwent. That's why I felt a bit demotivated, but Brother Cui's words reminded me. I've already reached here, there's no reason for me to give up."

"That's more like it!" Cui Fugui smiled, then frowned as he looked at the dark hole. "As expected of a hole where a snake lives, there are truly too many crossroads. I wonder where exactly the herb is."

"I know. Brother Cui, come with me," Ye Zichen smiled.

Cui Fugui was stunned as Ye Zichen made a choice and took a lead.

Although Cui Fugui was confused on why Ye Zichen said he knew, he still chose to follow.

"Brother Ye, this is amazing, how did you know?"

After walking through seven or eight crossroads, Ye Zichen and Cui Fugui finally arrived at where the four-leafed herb was.

The floor and walls were filled with the herb, while a group of hissing scale snakes stay ten-odd minutes away and did not dare to approach the pair.

“I read about the habitats of scale snakes in an old tome, so I came to the most likely spot. I can’t believe I actually got it right!” Ye Zichen credited everything to an old tome, and since nobody knew about what the ‘old tome’ was about, he wouldn’t raise any suspicions.

“Ahh, I’m so lucky. I actually got to know Brother Ye. If it was just me randomly going around, god only knows when I’ll be able to get ehre,” Cui Fugui couldn’t help but chuckle.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, ‘Let’s hurry up and harvest the herbs. Didn’t you say that the earlier we get out the better?’

“Yes, yes, yes. Ahh my memory’s bad,” Cui Fugui patted his head, then quickly began to harvest.

At the same time, Ye Zichen shattered the jade tablet Senior Brother Hu gave them.

“Are you giving up or...” Senior Brother Hu appeared in front of them. Then, when they saw the place full of herbs and the strands in Cui Fugui’s hand, he couldn’t help but smile. “It looks like you succeeded.”

“Yes we did! Senior Brother Hu, are we outer sect disciples now?” Cui Fugui nodded repeatedly.

Senior Brother Hu smiled in confirmations, “Naturally. When the other people get out or give up, I’ll bring you open to report in with the outer sect’s elder. Then, you’ll be officially recognized as outer sect disciples of Yonghe Temple.”

“Yay!” Cui Fugui punched up into the air in excitement. “Heh, those guys who looked down on me in the village... They’ll all have to call me Lord Immortal when I go back!”

“You shouldn’t have thoughts like that,” Senior Brother Hu said sullenly with a stern face. “After you enter an immortal sect, you will have already exceeded being a mortal. Cultivating in Yonghe Temple is to protect our home against enemies. You cannot use our techniques to mess with mortals.”

“Senior Brother Hu is right,” Cui Fugui lowered his head, while Ye Zichen watched on with a smile.

Senior Brother Hu looked towards him and nodded, while Ye Zichen returned it with a smile.

“It seems like you are fated to cultivate, so you ended up in the sect.”

“It was all thanks to Senior Brother Hu,” Ye Zichen said respectfully.

“Alright, let’s not stay here any longer. I’ll bring you all out right now to wait for other people’s news,” at that moment, Senior Brother Hu’s own jade tablet flashed. “Someone shattered a jade tablet? Alright, I’ll bring you two out first.”

After Senior Brother Hu brought Ye Zichen and Cui Fugui outside, he quickly entered the cave once more.

Shattering the jade tablet meant that the person either got into danger or completed the task. Due to the possibility of the person being in danger, Senior Brother Hu could not stay outside with the pair for too long.

“As expected of an immortal to fly around everywhere,” Cui Fugui said enviously.

“There should be some teleportation point within the cave to allow him to move through it. Otherwise, he shouldn’t be able to do that with his cultivation level,” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

Cui Fugui glanced at him, “How’d you know that?”

Crap.

Ye Zichen was a bit worried, then he frantically smiled, “I saw it in the old tome.”

“That kind of stuff is recorded as well? Brother Ye, can you lend me that old tome, I want to read it too,” said Cui Fugui.

“Uhm... I left it at home. I’ll go back and get it for you when I have time.”

“Sure, do remember to show me!”

After finally sating Cui Fugui, Ye Zichen began to ponder how he was going to attract the attention of the higher-ups of Yonghe Temple.

Yet, at that very moment, a huge noise rang out in the cave.

“What’s going on!?” Cui Fugui was shocked, then he turned back to see the rocks near the cave tremble.

“It seems like... they’re fighting?”

Chapter 642 – Trial Nulled

The trembling ground was very apparent. Even though the pair stood a few dozen meters away, they were still able to feel the residue movement.

Cui Fugui stared at the cave, while Ye Zichen walked towards it with a frown.

“What are you doing?”

“Of course I’m going to save them,” Ye Zichen replied without thinking.

Cui Fugui grabbed him and called out softly, “Do you want to die? You want us, two mortals, to go and save them? Senior Brother Hu will be fine. What’s more, this is at the foot of the mountain where Yonghe Temple is, someone will come to deal with this.”

With that, two old men, respectively in a black robe and a white robe, appeared in the air above Ye Zichen.

“You...”

“Senior, we are outer sect disciples who just finished the trial, but did not enter the sect properly yet,” Cui Fugui forced a smile.

“Where’s Hu Qing?” one of the old man asked.

“Senior Brother Hu already entered,” Cui Fugui answered respectfully.

“So the guy inside is rampaging again. Hu Qing won’t be enough to deal with him. We should hurry in,” the white-robed old man frowned.

The black-robed old man nodded, then entered the hole with the other elder.

“Ahh, that scared me to death,” Cui Fugui patted his chest and breathed heavily. “Those two old men are definitely a lot stronger

than Senior Brother Hu. Their aura just now...”

Cui Fugui blabbered on, then finally raised his eyebrows when he saw that Ye Zichen did not reply, “Brother Ye, what are you thinking about?”

“Nothing,” Ye Zichen shook his head.

What he was doing was using his spiritual consciousness to check out the situation in the cave.

The one who caused the commotion was an azure scale snake. It looked like a yao that was rather old, even though it was only around the strength of a mid-stage Human Immortal.

Despite that, when combined with its impenetrable scales and its powerful body, it allowed it to fight at the very least with early stage Sky Immortals.

However, since the two old men earlier were both Sky Immortal experts, they were more than enough to deal with it.

Yet, the snake seemed a bit strange. Its movements were still and seemed to radiate a deathly aura, which caught Ye Zichen’s attention.

“Hah, you’re just scared by those two old men, right?” Cui Fugui patted Ye Zichen on his shoulder with a smile. “Don’t worry, I won’t laugh at you. I’ll tell you the truth, I nearly pissed in my pants when they came by just now.”

“Is that so!” Ye Zichen smiled with a nod. “Their aura was rather strong. As expected of experts from a cultivating sect.”

“Of course. Yonghe Temple is a famous large temple in the Immortal Region. I heard that the sect master is Yonghe Emperor, one of the Three Great Emperors. He is supposed to be extremely strong, and are only surpassed by the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors.” Cui Fugui had a dreamy look on his face, while his eyes seemed to lite up. “Getting to that status would mean countless wealth, and any girls would just throw themselves at him. If I can

reach that status...”

“It’ll be pretty difficult for you with your mindset,” Ye Zichen shook his head speechlessly.

Cui Fugui immediately understood and said angrily, “Although meat and liquor goes down my throat, I still have the Buddha in my heart. Since the Heavenly Court’s Canopy Marshal can become an immortal, then what’s wrong with me enjoying the liveliness of the world?”

“You seem pretty intelligent in that front, you might as well turn Buddhist.”

Thus, the two began to chat pointlessly. At the same time, the commission within the cave seemed to become louder and louder after the two elders entered, only to gradually turn softer once more.

Approximately an hour later, Senior Brother Hu walked out with the two old men, while the other people who came to join as outer sect disciples followed behind them.

All of them were terrified as they looked lifelessly in front of them. There were also two who held the four-leafed herbs in their hands tightly, displaying just how resolute they were in joining Yonghe Temple’s outer sect.

“These children are terrified,” the white-robed elder shook his head.

The black-robed elder snorted, “How can they continue down the path of cultivation like this? This sort of tiny matter...”

“No matter what, they’re just mortals. You’re asking too much of them,” the white-robed elder was clearer easier to speak to than the black-robed one. He smiled, then tapped on the shocked individuals’ foreheads.

All of them trembled, then began to scream.

Seeing that, the black-robed elder got even more annoyed, then left with a cold snort. Yet, this sound caused the screaming people to all stop and peek at that elder.

Then, they heard the white-robed elder speak up, “This situation of the trial was the mistake of the council of elders, but having so many outer sect disciples will be a burden for us, the Yonghe Temple. How about this, we’ll let the sect elders discuss about whether you can stay or not. Come with me.”

Cui Fugui immediately thought of something, “Respected senior.”

“What is it?” the elder turned around.

“Then what about our trial?”

“You’ll naturally be treated equally in front of the council of elders.”

“Then... wouldn’t we be at too much of a loss?” Cui Fugui complained.

Senior Brother Hu gave him a cue to stop speaking, but the elder merely shook his head with a smile, “If you are fated to cultivate, then you will naturally stay. If you are not, then you will be exiled even after joining the outer sect. Everything is fate, so there is no point of getting angry.”

Cui Fugui tried to argue, but Ye Zichen yanked his arm, causing him to bitterly shut his mouth.

The elder turned towards Senior Brother Hu after seeing that Cui Fugui stopped, “Hu Qing, take them to the Elder Hall later. I’m going to inform the other elders.”

“Understood. Martial Uncle, take care,” Hu Qing sent the elder away with a bow, while the elder took a few steps forward before disappearing into the clouds.

Meanwhile, Cu Fugui was clearly displeased. They had worked so

hard to find the four-leafed herb, and now it was all for nothing.

“Your words were too much just now,” Hu Qing walked over and patted Cui Fugui’s shoulder. “It was lucky for you that it was Martial Uncle White. If it was Martial uncle Black, then he would have just slapped you to death.”

“I just don’t agree with this. We worked so hard to get the herb, and why was that? For fun!?” Cu Fugui’s eyes were filled with anger.

Hu Qing shook his head with a smile, “Just keep holding the herbs in your hand. The council of elders will naturally favor you more if you can have the four-leafed herbs. Don’t worry.”

“Really?” Cu Fugui raised his eyebrows.

Hu Qing nodded, then smiled at the other, “You have heard what Martial Uncle White said, so please come with me to the Elder Hall.”

While they walked over, Hu Qing led Ye Zichen and Cui Fugui at the very front.

Cui Fugui repeatedly exclaimed in surprise while they walked over. Yet, that was when he noticed the injury on Hu Qing’s arm, so he couldn’t help but ask, “Senior Brother Hu, did you get the injury in the cave?”

“Yes,” Hu Qing covered the injury on his arm. “Actually, Martial Uncle is telling you to go to the Elder Hall for the entire situation in the cave.”

“What do you mean?” Cui Fugui did not understand.

“You’ll understand when we arrive.”

Chapter 643 – Not Quite According to Plan

At the Elder Hall.

Nine elders sat inside a special hall. These were the nine elders of Yonghe Temple.

They were respectively in charge of the inner sect, outer sect and discipline.

The one who sat in the middle was a square-faced old man with a unibrow and purple shirt. He was very surprised after hearing about the news of the azure scaled snake rampaging.

“Ever since a hundred years ago, that azure snake has never rampaged since. Why did it suddenly rampage at this sort of sensitive time?”

“Old White and I went over to take a look,” the black-robed elder snorted. “The snake seemed to have started rampaging because it was frightened.

“Frightened?” the purple-shirted elder thought about it, then couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows. “The snake lives deep inside the cave. The four-leafed herb required for the trial is in the middle section. What’s more, there is the metal scale snake swarm before reaching the azure snake. How could those kids in the trial frighten it?”

“As opposed to saying that it was frightened, I think it’s better to say that it woke up from its slumber because it sensed a powerful enemy it had to face. I think that’s the situation,” the white-robed elder suddenly commented.

“Hey, White Geezer, do you have a grudge against me today or something? You already didn’t give me face in front of the outer sect disciples, and now you’re still arguing with me in front of senior brother?”

“What do you mean?” the white-robed elder replied in confusion.

The black-robed elder frowned, “You just said that the azure snake met a foe? Are you talking about those outer sect disciples? They are barely of the spiritual body level, just what kind of threat do they pose to the azure snake?”

“Are you sure that they’re all of the spiritual body level?” the white-robed elder smiled.

“Then are you telling me that there are Sky Immortal experts amongst them? Sky Immortal experts coming to Yonghe Temple to become outer sect disciples? Are you kidding me!?” The black-robed elder twitched his mouth.

“Alright, stop it!” the purple-robed elder frowned. “We do not understand the situation yet, but you two already started arguing. You’re both over a hundred, aren’t you ashamed of arguing like children!?”

Both the black robed and white robed elder grew silent.

Only then did the purple-robed elder frown. “I’ll just check for myself when the outer sect disciples arrive.”

...

“The Elder Hall is right in front. Everyone, there’s no need for you to be worried, just answer whatever they ask you honestly,” Hu Qing led the disciples in front of the Elder Hall.

Hearing that, the disciples nodded, but still revealed nervous expressions.

“Master, Martial Uncles, this disciple has brought them all over.”

“Hu Qing, thank you for your hard work,” the purple-robed elder nodded.

Hu Qing gave a look of encouragement to the disciples, then went to stand behind the black-robed elder.

Hu Qing is the black-robed elder’s disciple? Their personalities are way too different!

“So you’re this batch’s outer sect disciples,” the purple-robed elder said softly.

Everyone nodded carefully. Even Cui Fugui was quiet.

“So there are actually so little outer sect disciples. It seems like there will be even less inner sect disciples.”

“Martial Uncle, the number of candidates competing for an inner sect disciple position is several times that of an outer sect disciple’s,” Hu Qing said.

The purple-robed elder was momentarily shocked before he smiled, “That’s rare.”

“It’s because you declared that the inner sect disciples have a chance to become a true disciple. Senior Brother, the true disciples of the inner sect elders is numerous enough, you’re just putting more pressure on us!” A muscular man sitting on the right hand side of the purple-robed elder couldn’t help but shake his head with a long sigh.

“Ugh, you’re just showing off after getting the good stuff. If you think that the inner sect is tiring, then come to the outer sect. I’ll go stay in the inner sect. I’m already sick of this forsaken place,” the black-robed elder rolled his eyes.

The muscular man did not get angry, and merely smiled, “Sure, when it comes to exchanging, I don’t mind handing you the position of the inner sect elder if you defeat me.”

“Just why...” the black-robed man slapped his thigh and said angrily.

The purple-robed elder frowned, “Why are you two arguing again? If you’re all going to be so loud, then go and face the mountains!”

“Tsk,” the black-robed elder twitched his mouth.

The purple-robed elder pretended like he didn’t hear anything

and turned to Ye Zichen's group, "This trial was the mistake of the council of elders. I have to apologize to you for this."

"There's no need to be so courteous. You just need to let us all stay in the outer sect," only Ye Zichen waved idiotically with a chuckle.

Hu Qing twitched his mouth and muttered quietly to himself. I don't recall Ye Zichen being like that...

What he didn't know was that Ye Zichen did it on purpose.

Since he already reached that point, he had to think of a way to get the elders' attention. The entire problem was solved as long as one person could detect his Sky Immortal level.

"The positions of an outer sect disciple is limited, it will have to depend on how suited you are for cultivation," the purple-robed elder smiled. "Luo Ying!"

"Yes!"

A rather well portioned lady with a veil over her face walked out from the corner of the hall.

"Go and take a look."

"Understood!" the female disciple slowly walked towards Ye Zichen's group.

The outer disciple candidates all gulped.

The only people who had no reaction was Ye Zichen and Cui Fugui.

"Not bad," the purple-robed elder nodded with a smile.

Before the group had arrived, he had intentionally told the female disciple that she was permitted to use a suitable bit of mesmerizing art in order to see how firm their will was.

The path of cultivation was filled with difficulties. Talent might be important, but willpower was also of utmost important.

It was clear that both Ye Zichen and Cui Fugui's performance satisfied him.

“Dual spirit roots of fire and earth. What a shame, if it was fire and wood, then you might be able to go and learn pill refining.

“Dual spirit roots of water and metal. Opposing spirit roots... It'll be hard to achieve anything great.”

“Metal spirit root, not bad.”

The female disciple walked passed the group and occasionally grabbed them by the arm and made them speak out the attribute of their spirit roots.

Then, after checking out the rest, the woman arrived in front of Ye Zichen and Cui Fugui.

The purple-robed elder also looked towards them. He already decided that if these two had top class spirit roots, then he would accept them into the inner sect despite their seemingly older age.

However, the woman actually stopped and did not squeeze anybody's arm like she had done before.

“It seems like sire is a someone with rather interesting interests,” the lady smiled softly.

Nobody, including the elders, could understand why she said such a thing.

However, Ye Zichen felt a sense of joy. Could this woman have detected my strength?

Is my identity as a Sky Immortal expert about to be revealed to the public?

Just as he was about to nod, he saw the woman place her hand on Cui Fugui's shoulder and pursed her lips, “Ice attribute, a mutated heavenly spirit root. You are also above the Sky Immortal level. Sire, isn't it a bit too troubling for you to come to Yonghe to become an outer sect disciple?”

“What!?” Ye Zichen was completely stunned. The woman wasn’t walking about me...

Cui Fugui!?

What the f*ck!

This wasn’t quite how it was supposed to go!

Dude, stop it. Look at me, alright? I’m a Sky Immortal expert as well!

Chapter 644 – The Yellow Emperor's Reincarnation has no presence

“Girl, what are you talking about? You said that I, Cui Fugui, am actually a Sky Immortal expert?” Cui Fugui smiled in confusion, then shook his head. “Although I really want to be that sort of almighty Sky Immortal, I am not! What’s more, what’s the ice attribute mutated heavenly spirit root you’re talking about? I don’t get it at all!?”

“Sire, do you still want to hide it even now?” the girl tilted her head with a smile, while her eyes turned purple. “You can’t escape in front of Luo Ying.”

“Sky Immortal!?” the purple-robed elder frowned.

Luo Ying took a step back and nodded, “Master, he is indeed of the Sky Immortal level. He is using a secret art to hide it from you guys, but he cannot hide in front of someone from the Purple Eye clan.”

“F*ck, I can’t believe that Old White’s prediction was right,” the black-robed elder stood up from his chair with a frown. “A Sky Immortal really did come to Yonghe to become an outer sect disciple. Is there something wrong with this person’s brain?”

“Old Black, I feel rather troubled hearing you say that. Do you still feel like he came to become an outer sect disciple?” the white-robed elder shook his head with a sigh.

The black-robed elder did not understand, “Then what else could he have come here for?”

“Shouldn’t you tell us about your purpose here now?” the purple-robed elder stood up from his chair and pointed forward. A trace of spiritual energy flowed out and formed a rope that tried to bind Cui Fugui.

Cui Fugui raised his hand and knocked the rope down with a

smirk, “Let’s not use this sort of parlor trick. But I really am unlucky, I didn’t think that I would meet a member of the Purple Eye Clan here. What’s more, she’s an extremely talented one! Ahh, there is no shame in I, Old Cui, being exposed!”

Cui Fugui cracked his neck and smiled. Then, his face gradually transformed into that of a handsome youth’s.

“Cui Twelve!” the purple-robed elder was shocked.

As the people began to blabber, Ye Zichen felt very displeased. According to his plans, he should be the one who was found out. Then, he was going to reveal his identity and tell them to fetch the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors.

But that wasn’t happening.

But who the hell is this Cui Fugui? Wait, no, he’s f*cking called Cui Twelve now.

Why is he a Sky Immortal as well?

Also, what’s wrong with that woman? Couldn’t she look at me first? Why the heck did she look at Cui Fugui first!?

“Uhm...” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but try to interrupt everyone, but it was as if nobody in the hall heard him. All of them were focused on Cui Twelve.

F*ck!

Ye Zichen cursed silently in his mind, then couldn’t help but speak up, “I’m a Sky Immortal expert too. Can you guys pay attention over here?”

“This isn’t somewhere for you to mess around,” the purple-robed elder frowned. “Hu Qing, take these outer sect disciples away.”

Cui Twelve raised his eyebrows, while Ye Zichen rolled his eyes with a long sigh.

“Who the heck is messing around with you!?” Ye Zichen was completely speechless. He released the spiritual energy hidden

within his body with a frown. “I’m a Sky Immortal too. F*ck, do you believe me now? I’m a Sky Immortal too!”

...

The hall was completely silent.

Hu Qing, who tried to pull Ye Zichen away, quickly took a few steps back and looked at the two people in front of him in shock.

Both of them were people he had high hopes for, but he never expected them to both be Sky Immortals.

“Why’s there another one?” the black-robed man raised his eyebrows.

The purple-robed elder raised his eyebrows, then couldn’t help but turn towards Cui Twelve, “Lord Cui, is he also...”

“No,” Cui Twelve shook his head.

“I see,” the purple-robed elder nodded, then disregarded Ye Zichen. Instead, he returned his focus onto Cui Twelve. “Lord Cui, I wonder what business do you have in the Immortal Region?”

“Would you believe me if I told you that I just came to play?” Cui Twelve pursed his lips. “But I really didn’t expect that you would recognize me. It seems like I am rather known in the Immortal Region!”

“How could we not know Your Highness?”

F*ck!

Ye Zichen was completely and utterly speechless.

Just what the hell is going on?

Why are they chatting by themselves again? Cui Twelve is a Sky Immortal, but I am too. Why is the different in treatment so huge!?

“Wait a sec, you two,” Ye Zichen frowned. “I’m a Sky Immortal too, can you guys give me some time?”

“Old White, let this Sky Immortal expert take a seat,” the purple-robed elder said mindlessly, then smile towards Cui Twelve. “The Twelfth Highness of the Four Direction Palace naturally has his own reputation. However, please accept this old man’s apology as I do not believe Your Highness is just here to play.”

Ye Zichen, who was about to throw a tantrum, stopped when he heard Four Direction Palace.

At the same time, the white-robed man also walked over with a smile, “Daoist friend, please come this way.”

“Mm,” Ye Zichen nodded, then followed the white-robed elder to the side to sit down. However, his gaze remained fixated on Cui Twelve.

Four Direction Palace.

Youmuu once mentioned that Liu Qing is in the Four Direction Palace as well.

“What else could I have come for?” Cui Twelve shrugged. “I just wanted to experience the life in your sect, but then I got found out.”

“If Your Highness would like to experience life here, then you can continue to stay here. I can give Your Highness the position of the Fist Elder.” The purple-robed man said with a smile.

Cui Twelve shook his head with a chuckle. “Never mind, it feels rather weird after getting found out.”

“Then, Your Highness...” the purple-robed man continued to speak in a testing manner.

However, Cui Twelve shrugged. “Brother Ye seems to be in more of a hurry, how about talking with him first?”

“How can he compare up to Your Highness!?”

“I...”

Ye Zichen suddenly clenched his fist, then relaxed it once more.

Fine, I, the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, has no status at all. I can't match that Highness from the Four Direction Palace.

"Is that so? I wonder if you'll continue to say that when Brother Ye tells you about his identity," Cui Twelve said meaningfully as if he knows something. Then, he slowly walked towards Ye Zichen and took out a note, which he stuffed into Ye Zichen's hand, before patting his shoulder.

"Brother Ye, it was very nice to meet you."

Ye Zichen held the note subconsciously, then looked at Cui Twelve in the eye. Cui Twelve merely shrugged, then raised his eyebrows, "In order to prove that I just came to play, I won't stay here any longer, so you guys can stop worrying."

With that, Cui Twelve left the hall.

When he finally left, the purple-robed elder finally calmed down.

"Senior Brother, that person just now..."

"Don't ask what you shouldn't. Knowing is of no benefit to you guys," the purple elder frowned. Then, he set his gaze upon Ye Zichen and squinted his eyes. "Sir, I wonder..."

"It's finally my turn to speak?" Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. "Seriously, so the Yellow Emperor's reincarnation cannot be compared to that Highness from the Four Direction Palace? Zeze, whatever, this Immortal Region is nothing special. I'm done here."

Chapter 645 – Cui Twelve's Invitation

Ye Zichen left the hall without even turning his head.

Actually, he only wanted to put on some airs and scare the geezers a bit. He even intentionally walked very slowly to give them a chance to stop him.

However...

Nobody came to stop him even when he had reached the foot of the mountain.

“Seriously, I already told them that I’m the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, but they didn’t react at all,” Ye Zichen looked back behind him multiple times. However, even after he left the gate to the sect, nobody went to stop him. “What the hell.”

Thus, Ye Zichen did not wait. Fine, they aren’t coming from me. Whatever, I don’t want to stay here either!

He took out the slip of paper Cui Twelve had given him. He definitely wanted to say something to me just now since he passed it to me so secretively.

“I’ll wait for you where we first met.”

The message on the note was simple. Ye Zichen also destroyed the note after seeing it.

Wait for me where we just met.

Just what does he want to say to me?

...

“Senior Brother, that young man just said that he is the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation,” one of the elders in the hall said after Ye Zichen had left.

The purple-robed elder snickered, “You actually believed him?”

“Was he lying to us?” the black-robed elder frowned. Although

he had a terrible temper, he was an absolute fan of the Yellow Emperor.

The Yellow Emperor chose to discard his cultivation level and reincarnate for the future of the Immortal Region by hoping to break through the limits of a complete stage Sky Immortal and create an Immortal King level expert for his realm.

Also, he fought valiantly against the demons, then defeated Chiyou and his army of a hundred thousand demons.

It could be said that the yellow Emperor was both a legendary and iconic figure.

“If that was truly the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation, then how could he have appeared here at the Yonghe Temple? The powerhouses of the Immortal Region could have already greeted him and treated him as the most important guest,” the purple-robed elder said in disdain. “Who knows where that scum came from. He actually dared to trick us with the Yellow Emperor’s name. The reason I allowed him out of here is merely because I felt like it wasn’t easy for him to reach his cultivation level and that his power is needed to defend against the enemies. Otherwise, I would not have permitted him tarnishing the Yellow Emperor’s name like that.”

His words were firm and filled with emotion.

The elders also nodded and agreed with the purple-robed elder’s words.

“Alright, let’s stop talking about that brat who posed as the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation, Old White...” the purple-robed elder waved.

The white-robe elder stood up from his chair, “Senior Brother.”

“We must be careful since Cui Twelve has come. Pay attention to where he is. Report back to me when he finally leaves.”

“Understood, Senior Brother,” the white-robed elder cupped his

hands and left the hall.

The purple-robed elder looked at the other elders, “As for the rest of you, continue on with your work. I’m going to see Yonghe Emperor and report to him what just happened.”

“Understood!”

When all the elders in the hall left, the purple-robed elder’s expression turned dark, “The Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation actually came to the Immortal Region? I can’t let that prick ruin our grand plan.”

With that, the purple-robed elder turned into a flash of light, then disappeared from the hall.

Yet, the moment he disappeared, the space in the hall twisted, and a person appeared in the empty halls, then smirked towards where the purple-robed man had left towards before disappearing once more.

...

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen appeared at where he first met Cui Twelve based on his memories.

It was a wide plain, where ones would be able to see traces of smoke rising from a distant village.

Ye Zichen’s stomach grumbled. He had already been in the Immortal Region for nearly a day, but he hadn’t even touched a single drop of water or the tiniest bit of food.

The system’s definitely screwing me over.

Ye Zichen retorted in his mind and looked around...

“Brother Ye,” Cui Twelve suddenly appeared in front of Ye Zichen with a roast chicken in his hand.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but gulp when he smelled the delicious aroma coming off the chicken.

“Brother Ye, I thought you would be hungry. I roasted it myself,” Cui Twelve sat down with a smile. He put the roast chicken wrapped in lotus leaves onto the ground, then took out a jar of liquor and two cups.

“Try it...” Cui Twelve poured a cup of liquor for Ye Zichen then raised his eyebrows.

Ye Zichen didn’t think about it too much. He immediately picked up the cup and gulped it all down. The liquor felt fresh, but when it entered the stomach, it seemed to ignite a small fire within him which soothed his body.

More importantly, he felt as if his spiritual energy increased.

“Brother Ye actually didn’t suspect me of poisoning it?” Cui Twelve raised his eyebrows with a smile.

Ye Zichen shrugged with a chuckle, “Do you have any reason to?”

“That’s true,” Cui Twelve laughed, then poured a cup for himself. “This amazing liquor is hard to come by. I brought the best thing I’ve got to drink with Brother Ye.”

“This liquor’s rare?” Ye Zichen swirled the muddy liquor in his cup.

Cui Twelve explained with a helpless smile, “Brother Ye, you might not know, but this liquor is rare even in the God Realm. This jar of mine is something His Majesty granted me. If I wanted to exchange it with merits, I might not even be able to exchange for a jar even in a hundred years.”

“Wow, then I did get really lucky,” Ye Zichen pursed his lips with a smile, then poured a second cup for himself without any hesitation.

Cui Twelve felt a bit pained when he saw that, but he did not stop

Ye Zichen.

“Brother Cui, I wonder what did you come here for?”

“Brother Ye is actually from the Modern Realm, right?” Cui Twelve raised his eyebrows.

“Yes.”

Since the guys from the God Realm were very capable, Ye Zichen didn't want to think too much. After all, since Cui Twelve mentioned that, it meant that he clearly knew something.

What's more, Liu Qing was also in the Four Direction Palace.

“I'm actually from the Modern Realm as well,” Cui Twelve let out a long sigh.

Ye Zichen trembled, then looked at him in shock.

“Of course, I'm not from the same era as you were. I came here very early. It was still during the Republic of China era. I was randomly brought here by the Six Realms Patroller. I was actually really weak back then. Now, so many years have passed in the blink of an eye, I didn't expect to run into someone from the Modern Realm, like you or lil' sister Liu Qing.”

“I really didn't expect Brother Cui to be from the Modern Realm as well,” Ye Zichen suppressed his shock and replied plainly.

Cui Twelve nodded, then stretched lazily, “I actually came here for lil' sister Liu Qing.”

“For her?” Ye Zichen felt his heart turned cold when he recalled how Liu Qing acted. He smiled, then took off a chicken leg. “What did she tell you to come and find me for? To repay a favor? I don't need it.”

“To explain,” Cui Twelve squinted his eyes. “Brother Ye seems to be misunderstanding a lot of things. Am I right?”

Chapter 646 - Liu Qing's Letter.

A soft breeze blew by.

The wild grass on the plains swayed in the wind.

Ye Zichen paused for a moment when he heard Cui Twelve's words, then, he finished the chicken leg with a smile and shrugged, "What is it?"

"According to my understanding, you and Liu Qing are... a couple?" Cui Twelve asked in a testing manner. "Since both Liu Qing and I are from the Modern Realm, our relationship is naturally better than with the other Highnesses in the God Realm. The most I heard about from her was about you. It was things like how amazing you were and how much she misses you."

Ye Zichen nodded and listened carefully.

"It is actually very difficult to survive in the Four Direction Palace. Back then, I had always thought that she would be removed from the Four Direction Palace, but yet, this doll-like girl actually managed to stand firm in a short few months and become the Highness that His Majesty adores the most."

"Although Liu Qing likes to mess around, she is rather tough," Ye Zichen nodded.

"But what you don't know is that you are the reason she is continuing on," Cui Twelve looked up and looked Ye Zichen in the eye with a smile. "Regardless of how difficult the mission and cultivating was, she would always grit her teeth and continue. Do you know what she said to me when I checked up on her and told her that she didn't need to force herself so much?"

Ye Zichen shook his head.

Cui Twelve pursed his lips and smiled, "She said that the earlier she reaches the Sky Supreme level, the earlier she'll be able to come back to see you. That's the belief which supported her and

allowed her to become the Seventeenth Highness known throughout the entirety of the God Realm from a completely unknown girl.”

Ye Zichen’s hand holding the cup trembled. It wasn’t hard to imagine just what sort of troubles Liu Qing had experienced.

Although he felt pained over it, but... there was nothing he could do.

It was as Liu Qing had said. They were no longer people of the same world.

Ye Zichen picked up the liquor jar, tilted his head and began to pour the liquor down his throat.

Cui Twelve glared at him, then snatched the jar back, “Are you an animal!? I only have this much left!”

“Ahh...” Ye Zichen laid down onto the ground and watched the sky gradually turn dark.

The dark orange of a sunset seemed to dye the sky its color.

Ye Zichen sighed repeatedly, but was unable to form a sentence.

“I came over because Liu Qing asked me to. She knew that I would descend in these few days, so she asked me to give you this letter.”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then saw the letter in Cui Twelve’s hands.

“I swear I didn’t take a look when I was coming over,” Cui Twelve promised.

Ye Zichen received the letter, then opened it...

Ye Zichen, I’m Liu Qing.

I guess you have already met Big Brother Twelve. He is an extremely nice older brother and my only friend in the God Realm.

I heard that he was going to descend, so I asked him to hand this letter to you to clarify some things.

I didn't mean what I said that day. When I saw you, I really wanted to hug you and tell you the words I've said countless times in my dreams.

But Youmuu was there. I had no choice. He is His Majesty's most trusted subordinate and a person that he planted near me who I have no choice about.

I cannot show my true thoughts. I could only act cold.

I have no choice. I want to live.

I have to apologize here. I ignored your feelings for my own life.

But I have no choice. I am treading on thin ice under the surveillance of His Majesty. I have to make sure he is absolutely satisfied. I have to make him trust me. That's the only way I can survive in the Four Direction Palace.

That's because I understand that there will only be hope for changing all this if I can survive. I can only truly have a chance to hug you and tell you how much I miss you if I live.

The God Realm is full of dangers just like the rest of the Six Realms. I hope you can be careful and not be so hot-tempered like you were in the Modern Realm.

Live, you have to live on.

Also, please believe me. No matter when it is, I will always love you.

...

Ye Zichen felt his eyes water. He gripped the letter tightly and put it away carefully.

Ye Zichen didn't say anything for a long time, and merely sat on

the ground with an empty look in his eyes.

“I want to know what the God Realm is like,” Ye Zichen asked suddenly. His gaze had turned sharp.

Cui Twelve wiped his oily mouth and thought about it for a moment, “A place filled with power and dictatorship. The strong ravage resources and become stronger, while the weak can only live meekly in terror under the wings of the strong for their own life.”

“You too?”

“Of course,” Cui Twelve smiled wryly. “I may be a highness of the Four Directional Palace. That may seem amazing in the eyes of outsiders, but I do not even dare to lift my head up against His Majesty. A single word of his can decide my life and death. Understand? He is like the emperors of the old. We will die even if we displease him a little!”

“Is that so!?” Ye Zichen looked up darkly into the sky.

Every single word in Liu Qing’s letter made his heart ache, while all of the sentences clearly showed just how terrified she was.

Ye Zichen was unable to imagine just how savage His Majesty was to cause both Cui Twelve and Liu Qing to be like this.

“You are rather lucky to not be in the God Realm. If you are fortunate enough to reach the God Realm, heed my advice, do not choose the Four Direction Palace because of Liu Qing. Also, do not step foot into the territory of the Four Direction Palace before reaching the Sky Supreme level. If you do that, then not only will you hurt yourself, you’ll hurt Liu Qing as well.” Cui Twelve patted Ye Zichen’s shoulder with a sigh.

His advice seemed to hold a tremendous amount of pain and suffering.

“What is His Majesty called?” Ye Zichen suddenly asked.

“Bi’an!” Cui Twelve said. “Why are you asking?”

Why? Of course I’m going to make a wish to those divine stones and get rid of that retarded majesty.

[Bi’an!](#)

What a familiar name!

Ye Zichen suddenly raised his eyebrows. Isn’t that the name of one of the offspring of the dragon!?

“Are you sure it’s Bi’an? Isn’t that the offspring of the dragon?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “How did he become the majesty of the Four Direction Palace?”

“There are some things I can’t say, but the current God Realm is different from how it was like ten thousand years ago,” Cui Twelve replied quickly and looked up into the sky. “If I speak recklessly, the ones up there might find out. But I can tell you that all nine offspring of the dragon are in powerful positions.”

Ye Zichen scratched his chin and squinted his eyes.

The old dragon god had told him that the dragon race and the God Realm were allies, but the way he put it seemed to have made it sound as if their race was subordinate to the God Realm, and worked hard for them. That’s why the dragon race ended up nearly extinct.

But just what happened? How did the ones in power in the God Realm become the dragons!?

Bi’an (狴犴) is one of the nine offspring of the dragon. It is supposed to be a tiger-like beast who is often linked to prison.

Chapter 647 – Damn Rules

“It’s getting late. I’ve stayed a bit too long in the lower realm. Since I couldn’t experience the life of a daoist apprentice, then I’ll be heading on back,” Cui Twelve said with a smile, then glanced towards the distance.

“You’re going back just like that? Since you were going to be an outer sect disciple here, then it doesn’t matter all that much. You might as well stay a while longer. I also have plenty of things I would like to enquire about,” Ye Zichen, who was in deep thought, tried to convince Cui Twelve to stay. Ye Zichen still had countless questions he wanted to ask.

Cui Twelve was clearly a very good person to ask those questions to, but if he was to return so early...

“Nah, I don’t like staying here and being watched over. It really annoys me,” with that, Cui Twelve glanced towards an empty space not too far away with a meaningful smile.

He stretched lazily, then carefully put away the little bit of remaining liquor and patted Ye Zichen’s shoulder. “Be careful in the Immortal Region.”

With that, Cui Twelve put a spiritual compass on the ground.

A ray of light shot up from the compass and into the sky.

Cui Twelve stepped onto the compass and waved towards Ye Zichen with a smile, “See you in the God Realm, if it is to be.”

As Cui Twelve’s figure blurred and then disappeared from the plains, Ye Zichen continued to look at where Cui Twelve had departed from. While he felt kind of disappointed due to Cui Twelve’s departure, he couldn’t help but worry about Liu Qing’s situation in the God Realm once more.

...

After a long while, a flock of wild geese flew across the sky.

For some reason, Ye Zichen felt rather lonely as he watched the flock in the sky. He was foreign to the Immortal Region, and there was no one around he could talk to.

More importantly, it was getting dark, yet he didn't even have a place to stay.

Considering that there weren't any inns around here that he could stay at, Ye Zichen made up his mind to camp outside. He sat indifferently on the ground as he stuffed the remaining bits of the roasted chicken into his mouth, then called out to the system.

"System, come out here. I know you're watching me."

System Notification: An issue came up just now, but don't worry, someone will come to find you soon.

The issue the system was referring to was clearly how nobody seemed to care when Ye Zichen had arrived.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but grit his teeth and rolled his eyes as he held his phone tightly, "You put that simply. You know? I went to Yonghe Temple and mentioned that I'm the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, yet they completely ignored me."

System Notification: Yonghe Temple?

System Notification: Why did you go over there? Yonghe Temple is actually asilfhdsilfiusahdifnsdjghsidfhbaslkdfhsajfhjk.

Ye Zichen immediately started to wonder what the scrambled things at the end of the sentence were, but in the end, he could only give up.

"What the hell?"

System Notification: Damn Rules.

It was clear that the system's message was censored by something. It was a very rare situation, and something that Ye Zichen can't seem to recall ever happening.

System Notification: Just stop coming into contact with the guys from Yonghe. Find a place to stay these next few days. Someone will come and pick you up soon.

“What about the people from Yonghe?”

Ye Zichen frowned. The censored words, the “damn” and now forbidding him to come into contact with the people from Yonghe...

This...

System Notification: Just don't worry about it. Also, don't take Xuan-Yuan Sword out of the Treasure Chest before the Flame Emperor and the rest arrive, got it?

“Understood,” Ye Zichen nodded affirmatively.

System Notification: Then that's that. I'm rather busy as well, so let's stop here.

With that, the system's notifications gradually disappeared from the screen, which represented that the system really had stopped talking to him.

Ye Zichen recalled the conversation earlier with a dark look.

There's definitely something iffy about Yonghe.

He didn't know what it was, but he knew that he had to be more careful in the future.

Ye Zichen put the issue of Yonghe behind him, then suddenly remembered Taibai Jinxing. That was a man who definitely had a good idea of the God Realm.

After all, he stayed there for quite some time.

Ye Zichen clicked on his chat with Taibai Jinxing.

“Geezer Taibai!”

He sent out the message, but only to see it remain in the “sending” status. After a while, a red exclamation mark appeared

next to it.

Sending failed.

Ye Zichen scratched his head and tried again.

It failed again.

“This is strange.”

Ye Zichen took a look at his phone’s signal bar. It clearly showed that he had service. He even refreshed his Moments just to double check.

No problem.

What’s that geezer doing?

Ye Zichen scratched his head and put his phone away, then laid down onto the plains to look up at the clear moon.

Damn it, it’s a full moon.

Whenever people that are away from home look at a full moon, they can’t help but think about their hometown.

“I really wonder when I can return to the Modern Realm or not.”

Before Ye Zichen went to sleep, he set up a tent-like barrier around him. Although he was camping in the wild, he could see himself enjoying the sleep.

Thus, the night passed...

...

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Notification sounds rang out repeatedly from Ye Zichen’s phone, causing him to take it out sluggishly.

His screen was filled with messages from Yang Jian, while there were several other unread messages.

Ye Zichen looked up into the sky and saw that the sun was alright bright above his head. He patted his face, then opened the chat with Yang Jian.

“Bro!”

“Bro!”

“Bro!”

That word filled the screen.

Ye Zichen yawned, then replied the message.

“What?”

“You’re finally here,” Yang Jian replied instantly. “What are you planning to do about the incident in the Underworld?”

Underworld incident?

Ye Zichen scratched his head in confusion. He had slept through the night. What in the world happened with the Underworld?

“What happened?”

“Did you not check the group yet? Whatever, I’ll tell you. There’s an internal mess in the Underworld. The chiefs of all eighteen floors of hell randomly disappeared. The seals in the Underworld were all undone and the wraiths have all come out. The Underworld is in a complete mess now.”

Ye Zichen was shocked. He replied with a frown, “Are you sure?”

“The entire Heavenly Court knows about this. Do you think that’ll be fake? If you don’t believe me, then look at the chat, they’re still discussing it right now.”

“What do you want me to do about it?”

“Although the Underworld and the Heavenly Court haven’t been on the best terms, we were one entity before. You are the Chancellor of the Grand Secretariat right now, you have the right to decide whether we’re going to send out our armies out to help. I

feel like this is the best chance to begin repairing our relationship with the Underworld. Bro, what do you think?”

Although the Underworld and the Heavenly Court had a rather tense relationship until recently, the older generations of deities like Yang Jian still cared about their past bonds.

Thus, the moment this situation occurred, they all sought out Ye Zichen...

“That’s a pretty good idea, but... let me understand what’s going on first.”

Chapter 648 – The Great Sacred Emperor comes

Ye Zichen signaled Yang Jian to calm down for a moment, then clicked open the Red Packet Server.

God of Thunder: @Erlang Shen, what did Sky Sovereign say?

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: I didn't expect such a huge mess to occur in the Underworld.

Oh, it seems like he finally recovered.

Erlang Shen: He said he'll tell me later.

God of Fortune: It really is a huge issue in the Underworld this time. Even if we send out our armies, we'll still need several days to take care of all the wraiths from the eighteen layers of health. Ahh, it really is going to cost quite a bit. If Sky Sovereign agrees to send out our armies, then I'm going to turn into the God of Poverty.

Yue Lao: @God of Fortune, that's not right. We should help the Underworld when they're in need. What's more, this is something affecting the entirety of the Three Realms, so what if it costs a lot.

God of Thunder: Yue Lao is right.

God of Fortune: Alright, alright, I'm just saying. Generals, if you really are going to mobilize your armies, come to this little deity for funding and resource needs.

Monkey King: Hey, my monkeys are ready. I, Old Sun, wreaked havoc in the Underworld before, it's time to rebuild our relationship.

Erlang Shen: Just us talking about it is useless. Wait for my bro's news.

While the deities in the group chatted away, Ye Zichen scrolled

up in the chat to take a look, then finally found the very first message approximately ten-odd minutes later.

All-Seeing Eyes: Morning news! The Underworld is in an internal mess. All of the higher-ups are having a conference about it. All ten Ghost Marshals are there, and all of the Yama Kings are also present.

Wind Catching Ears: Morning news! The ghost servants in charge of the eighteen layers of hell all disappeared. The internal seals have crumbled, and the wraiths have broken through the hells to escape. Right now, the Underworld is gathering the soul reapers to catch all the wraiths once more.

Canopy Marshal: I might not be too educated, but stop kidding around.

God of Thunder: Seriously?

Erlang Shen: Don't bullshit around. The hells are as fortified as it can ever be. Seals crumbled? Those are seals set by the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven himself. Even our Jade Emperor can't undo them.

God of Fortune: Shhh. The Jade Emperor doesn't like other people saying that he's weaker than the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven.

Yue Lao: Ahem. I have received some insider news that what both All-Seeing Eyes and Wind Catching Ears said are true.

Barefoot Immortal: King Ksitigarbha just asked for help in the Buddhist Realm chat group. It seems like the news is real.

Erlang Shen: ... Ox-Head just sent me a message and asked if we, the Heavenly Court, would disregard the former grudges and mobilize our army to help suppress the wraiths.

God of Thunder: I got the message too.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Same here.

Canopy Marshal: I, Old Pig, received one too.

Yue Lao: It seems like the Underworld is truly in a very troubled spot. They are probably unable to handle the situation by themselves. Otherwise, they wouldn't go around and ask for help.

God of Thunder: Go and get Sky Sovereign. He's the Chancellor of the Great Secretariat. As long as he agrees...

Erlang Shen: I'm on it.

Ye Zichen left the chat with a thought. He was rather curious about why the Underworld group didn't have any new messages even though something so huge occurred.

He took a look at his list of chat, then noticed that...

Only Idealism was kicked from the Underworld Staff chat.

It was a news from half a month ago, but he didn't even notice previously.

No wonder I didn't notice any new messages. So, I was kicked.

Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, Ye Zichen checked on all the messages everyone sent to him. To no surprise, all of them were asking him how he was going to handle it.

Dingdong.

His phone vibrated.

There as a small red "1" on his contact list.

Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven has sent you a friend request.

Ye Zichen's hand trembled, then nearly dropped his phone to the ground.

He took a look at the request message. I've got something to discuss with you.

Accept.

“Sky Sovereign.”

The Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven immediately sent him a message after Ye Zichen accepted the friend request.

“Great Emperor.”

In all honesty, Ye Zichen felt rather nervous when facing him. Although he and the Jade Emperor were of the same level, the Jade Emperor was well known, while the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens was quite a mysterious person.

He was the leader of the Underworld, but does not busy himself with its matters normally.

Nobody knew what he was doing, and very few people even knew what he looked like.

However, he actually appeared and sent Ye Zichen a friend request.

“We have no time for pointless talk. I had contacted the Jade Emperor and he said that you’re in charge of the Heavenly Court right now. I would like to request you to mobilize the army to aid the Underworld.”

“Is the situation dire?” Ye Zichen frowned.

“Yes, although I appeared the moment the seals were shattered, there were still billions of wraiths that escaped. It’s impossible for only the Underworld’s army to capture them all, so I would like to ask for the Heavenly Court to send out your armies.”

“Of course,” Ye Zichen replied with a smile. “But I am very curious about just who managed to destroy the seals you set.”

The Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven turned silent.

After a while, he finally replied, “An expert, one that far surpasses the Jade Emperor and I. That level of expert is not definitely from our three realms.”

Not from this Three Realms, then that clearly means that it’s

someone from the Upper Three Realms.

“I already hurried over as fast as possible, but was still unable to catch a glimpse of the culprit. However, I did smell a familiar stench from him. He seemed to be... a demon.”

“Them again,” Ye Zichen clenched his teeth and his fists. “Great Emperor, don’t worry, I’ll tell the Heavenly Court to mobilize the armies immediately.”

“Thank you so much. I’ll be relying on Sky Sovereign,” the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens replied.

“Sure.”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens increased by 100. Current intimacy level: 200.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens leveled up. Current intimacy level: Trusted.

Ye Zichen took a glance at their intimacy level, then clicked open the Red Packet Server.

“@everyone. The Underworld is in trouble. We will be sending out True Lord Erlang Yang Jian, Pagoda-bearing Heavenly King Li and Third Prince Nezha to lead a hundred thousand heavenly soldiers to aid them!”

Erlang Shen: Understood!

Pagoda-bearing Heavenly King Li: Understood!

Nezha: Oh yay!

God of Thunder: @Only Idealism, Sky Sovereign, what about me?

“We need someone to defend the Heavenly Court, so stay home.”

Monkey King: I, Old Sun, wants to go as well.

Canopy Marshal: I, Old Pig, want to go as well.

“If you want to go, then go, but someone must be here to defend the Heavenly Court. So, God of Thunder, you have to stay. I just talked with the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens and found out that the person who broke the seals was a demon. Since they made a move against the Underworld, they might also do the same against the Heavenly Court. Although you aren’t going out to help, your mission is still of utmost importance. Understood?”

God of Thunder: Understood.

God of Fortune: Come to me for equipment and funding.

Old Lord Taishang: Go to the Old Lord Manor to get pills if you need to.

Yue Lao: Ahem. Come to the Red String Pavilion if you need a relationship...

Old Lord Taishang: Screw off.

The moment the order to mobilize the armies was given, the entire atmosphere of the group changed.

Ye Zichen smiled, but his gaze turned sharp. He squinted his eyes, then typed out on the keyboard.

“The mission this time is not only to capture the ghosts. It’s to defend against the enemies as well. If you meet demon scum, you have no need to report it first. Kill them all!”

Chapter 649 – Third Fatty Leads an Army

These demons are growing more and more outrageous. The most they did before was small stuff like create some abyssals.

Yet this time, they actually broke the seals on the hells in the Underworld to send out billions of wraiths?

Wraiths were different from ghosts. They are sprites that gathered the grudgeful feelings in their surroundings. In other words, they were ghosts formed from negative feelings due to being dissatisfied in their lives.

These ghosts were unable to reincarnate before they had been cleansed of their negative feelings.

However, these wraiths only held negative feelings because they were dissatisfied in their previous life. Furthermore, due to the tortures of hell in the Underworld, the negative feelings in these wraiths did not decrease at all.

Thus, their numbers only grew.

The escape of these wraiths will definitely cause a lot of trouble.

“Don’t lose Lord Fatty’s face when you’re out there you know? We’re going to help the Underworld capture wraiths, we’re also helping the civilians of the Immortal Region’s outer region. So, work harder and do what you can. Do not just treat it carelessly, understood!?” A familiar voice sounded out at a distance.

Ye Zichen looked up into the sky.

For some reason, the sky was already filled with people. These people were at least of the Human Immortal level and Ye Zichen couldn’t even see where the group ended.

“Boss Ye.”

At that moment, the fatty at the front of the group flew towards Ye Zichen.

“Third Fatty Jin!” Ye Zichen was shocked. Third Fatty Jin wore a white robe with red stripes, while he donned a daoist cap. “Where are you going...”

“Boss Ye, when did you come to the Immortal Region?” Third Fatty Jin’s face was filled with shock. “A situation has come up in the Underworld. Master ordered me to go and aid them.”

“You’re going as well?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Of course, the wraiths appeared in the outer regions of the Immortal Region. How could we, the sacred land of the Immortal Region sit idle?” Third Fatty Jin answered with certainty. “But Boss Ye, did you just get here?”

“I already came here yesterday.”

“Yesterday?” Third Fatty Jin frowned. “Why didn’t anyone come and get you? Never mind, there’s no point of thinking about it now. How about this. Boss Ye, come with me to the outer region of Immortal Region, then I’ll take you to see my master after we deal with the wraiths.

“Sure,” Ye Zichen nodded without any hesitation. He was planning to return over there when he heard about the wraiths situation anyways.

No matter what, there were too many people he had to protect there.

Third Fatty Jin nodded with a smile, then looked up at the group in the sky, “What are you blanking out for? Hurry up, let’s go!”

Whoosh.

The figures in the sky all flew forward at tremendous speeds.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but purse his lips with a smile, “You’ve got quite a bit of authority. Also, I don’t recall you wearing something like this before.”

“Ahh, don’t mention it,” Third Fatty Jin and Ye Zichen flew up

and followed behind the group. Then, the fatty smiled wryly. “My senior brother has disappeared ever since Mount Supreme. Esteemed Master did go and out search, but still couldn’t find him. Then, a while ago, each of the halls had to select a chief disciple, and since my master only has two and a half disciples... It was pushed onto me.”

Third Fatty Jin shrugged and looked as if he was rather unwilling.

Ye Zichen smacked him on the head, then chuckled, “Don’t get the benefit and complain about it. Plenty of people can’t become the chief disciple even if they wanted to and you are actually acting like you are unwilling to do so.”

Third Fatty Jin wanted to cry as he twitched his mouth, “If it were a few years ago, I would definitely be willing. But Boss Ye, don’t you know what age this is? This is a time of chaos! A chief disciple will have to take upon a chief disciple’s responsibility. For example, as the chief disciple, I have to set an example for others and deal with the wraiths this time. When in danger, I have to go and save my junior brothers. This means that my life is no longer my own. It’s not like you don’t know how afraid I am of death.”

When it came to the fear of death and acting pretentious, Third Fatty Jin was definitely amongst the top.

Ye Zichen patted him on the shoulders when he saw Third Fatty Jin’s troubled expression.

Capable people always have to give more than others.

Boom.

Suddenly, a ruckus occurred at the front of the group.

Third Fatty Jin frowned, “What happened?”

“Senior Brother, there’s...”

Ye Zichen saw a group of blood red monsters with sharp fangs

before the disciple in the front could finish his reply.

“The wraiths actually reached the sacred land,” Third Fatty Jin squinted his pea-like eyes, then tore open the space to retrieve a pair of hammers.

“You injured my junior brother. Die!” Third Fatty Jin fearlessly charged towards the wraiths with his pair of giant hammers. This was the first time Ye Zichen saw him fight.

Very strong...

His pair of hammers suit him very well.

Ye Zichen smiled. Although he was talking about how afraid of death he is, he still ended up burdening himself with the responsibility of the senior brother when he saw his junior brothers in trouble.

Since he’s acting so tough, then as the boss, I can’t slack either.

Ye Zichen bit his fingers and formed a sigil, causing a blood red scythe to appear in his hands. Since nobody in the group was from the Underworld, the only way to suppress the wraiths were to destroy their souls.

What’s more, the wraiths seemed rather menacing. It would be troublesome if they were allowed to harm those in front.

The blood red scythe was like the scythe of the grim reaper, it repeatedly harvested the souls of the wraiths wherever Ye Zichen passed through.

“Who is this? He’s so fierce!”

The surrounding disciples all stopped when they saw Ye Zichen make a move.

There really wasn’t much for them to do. Although the wraiths were rather troublesome opponents for them, they were merely small fries for Ye Zichen.

Third Fatty Jin raised his eyebrows, then began to swing his

hammers around with even more force.

Thus, all the wraiths within the sacred land disappeared under their cooperation.

When the final wraith had been dealt with, Third Fatty Jin returned his hammers to the spatial rift, then smiled towards Ye Zichen, “Boss Ye, I truly cannot catch up to you!”

“Stop kissing ass here,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes with the giant scythe on his shoulders. “How did they get in here? Isn’t the sacred land of the Immortal Region an isolated space?”

“The sacred land of the Immortal Region is its own space,” Third Fatty Jin mentioned. “But since the wraiths had reached here, it can only mean that...”

“What?”

Ye Zichen had a bad feeling when he saw Third Fatty Jin stop.

“The number of wraiths in the outer regions of the Immortal Region had already been thoroughly saturated. If nothing else happens, then when we step out of the portal, what we’ll see is a devastated outer region!” Third Fatty Jin said darkly.

Ye Zichen’s eyes opened wide. “What!? Then what are you blanking out for!? Let’s get out there!”

Chapter 650 – Battle

“You guys better be more focused. This isn’t the time for you to be afraid!”

A bearded man stood in the air outside of Maple City in an armor with a long sword in his hand.

The guards of Maple City stood beside him in armor as well, while menacing wraiths surrounded them.

“Roar...”

The wraiths shrieked and attacked the bearded man.

The man, who was busy scolding his soldiers, was caught off guard, causing him to be bitten.

“General!”

The guards couldn’t help but call out worriedly.

The bearded man frowned, then dispersed the wraith with a backhanded slash, before scolding his soldiers without any regards for his injuries once again, “If you have the time to worry about me, you should use it to think about how to protect the families behind you. As soldiers, you cannot have the word “afraid” in your dictionary. If you are afraid and back off... Then your family and the civilians who have placed their trust in you will be the ones hurt!”

The bearded man roared angrily, then looked fiercely at the surrounding wraiths and raised his sword high up in the air. “Kill!”

“Kill!” The soldiers have already lost themselves to their bloodlust as they charged relentlessly towards the endless swarm of wraiths.

They could not retreat. Maple City was their home. The loved ones they swore to protect forever were behind them.

They could only die. They could not retreat!

...

Ye Zichen and co. were attacked by fierce swarms of wraiths the moment they appeared in the outer regions of the Immortal Region.

However, those wraiths were not particularly powerful. They were merely terrifying due to their large numbers.

Thus, the wraiths around the teleportation point were cleared in mere moments.

“Boss Ye, we’ve dealt with everything here. Where should we go next?” Third Fatty Jin checked out the injuries of his surrounding junior brothers. Then, after ensuring that everyone was alright, he walked over in front of Ye Zichen and asked.

“Which city are we the closest to?” Ye Zichen carried his scythe on his shoulders. After killing all the wraiths, the crimson scythe seemed to glisten even more.

“Both Maple City and Hundred Flowers City are nearby, but in terms of battle prowess, the Hundred Flowers Gate is stationed at the Hundred Flowers City, so they should be fine while defending,” Third Fatty Jin replied.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Then let’s go to Maple City.”

Third Fatty jin nodded, then jumped up into the air and began to fly towards their destination. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen muttered to himself as he followed the group at the end and glanced at the black swarm afar, “Please be alive...”

...

“General, our people...”

At that moment, Maple City’s guards were already covered in blood. All the blood belonged to themselves. Quite a few guards, who had already lost their ability to fight, laid beside them. Thus,

not only did the remaining guards need to fight the wraiths, they also needed to protect their comrades, causing them to be in extreme trouble.

The minimum requirement to become a guard of Maple City was to be of the Earth Immortal level.

The wraiths were mostly of the spiritual body level, and only very few were of the Earth Immortal level.

Yet, these weak wraiths had nearly eradicated the elite guards.

“General, let us retreat. We’ll leave the North Gate and gather back at the city lord manor to activate the grand formation,” some of the guards suggested.

The bearded man wasn’t in a good situation either. His celestial grade armor was full of holes, while his muscular arms bled.

“I don’t want to hear anything like that!” the bearded man glared at the surrounding guards. “The City Lord and Junior City Lord are guarding the East Gate by themselves. Leisure House requested to guard the South Gate, while the travelers volunteered to guard the West Guard. The City Lord told me to guard the North Gate and gave me all the soldiers. You are actually telling me to retreat? I’m telling you, my soldiers never retreat. Got it?”

With that, the man charged back towards the wraith swarm without any hesitation armed with only his slightly dulled blade.

“Come, let’s see how fierce you can be!”

“I’m done!”

Yet, many guards chose to discard their weapons and ran towards the city gates in the face of despair.

There were truly too many wraiths, and they were unable to see their chances of victory at all.

They chose to run in face of terror and despair.

Dong.

Yet, they all hit an invisible barrier before running far.

“Open the seals! I’m coming in!” the guard pounded at the barrier.

However, the guards on the city wall shook their heads firmly with a bit of reluctance in their eyes. “The City Lord has ordered that the formation will not be removed before the wraiths have been all dealt with.”

At the same time, a group of wraiths appeared behind the soldier who tried to get back into the city. They leaped onto him and shredded him into smithereens within moments.

Seeing that, all of the surrounding guards gulped, then gripped their weapons tighter.

Since the city wasn’t letting them in, they had no path of retreat anymore.

The bearded man who was fighting with the wraiths in the air also smiled wryly. He had already knew that the city-protecting formation has already been activated after they came out.

Those who came out of the city to fight came out with the belief that they will die.

Crack.

The blade, which cut through countless wraiths, finally cracked. At the same time, the wraiths seemed to take that as a signal and instantly surrounded the bearded man.

“You want to eat me? I don’t think you’ll be able to!” the man’s body instantly turned bright red. He already made up his mind to act out his final act.

Self-explode.

“All of you scum, die!”

He punched away the wraiths around him, then flew to the place with the densest gathering of wraiths with bloodshot eyes.

Boom.

All of the wraiths were dispersed in a hundred meter radius. Meanwhile, tears began to form in the eyes of the guards, who still held the weapons and guarded the city.

“General!”

The guards, who had already lost their ability to fight and were lying on the floor, all called out painfully. Then, they all bit their lips and crawled to where the wraiths were.

Boom.

Boom.

Boom.

Explosions sounded out one after another. As the still living guards watched their comrades depart one by one, the flames of hatred became their driving force. They tore away the armor on their body and discarded all their defense before charging up to the wraith swarm.

“Die! Die! Die!”

The moment they noticed that they were unable to fight anymore, they all chose to self-explode.

As the combat force outside the city decreased, the guards on the wall could only watch as their comrades chose to self-explode to gain another moment of peace for the city.

An hour later... the guards defending the North Gate were wiped out.

The guards, who remained on the city wall to maintain the city-protecting formation, were already in tears. Sure, they might be still alive, but after witnessing the brothers who had fought alongside them for several dozen, or even several hundreds of years die...

It felt even worse than their own death.

Chapter 651 – Rescue

Boom.

Boom.

Boom.

Ye Zichen's group, who were continuously clearing out the wraiths in their surrounding area suddenly heard a series of explosions.

Ye Zichen killed off the final few wraiths, then he looked towards Maple City with a frown, "Do you know what's going on over there?"

"I feel like it's probably people using self-explosion," Third Fatty Jin answered indifferently. They had already grown numb towards self-explosions.

Along the way, they have already seen countless experts choosing to self-explode in order to earn even a sliver of more survival chance for their village.

"Demon scum!" Ye Zichen growled as he clenched his fist.

Third Fatty Jin looked towards him in confusion, "Demons? Aren't these wraiths?"

"I've chatted with the Underworld's head, the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven. He had said that over there, the person who had opened up the seals in the eighteen layers of hell had a demonic presence about them." Ye Zichen answered with a dark look, then shook his head with a sigh. "Never mind, this isn't the time for such discussions. Let's hurry onwards to Maple City."

...

Meanwhile, wraiths howled loudly outside Maple City. The guards on top of the city wall were covered in sweat, yet they still worked their hardest to maintain the city-protecting formation.

As time passed, the combat forces who were fighting outside the city slowly dwindled down.

That only caused the city defenseless city gates to be attacked by stronger and stronger wraiths, putting more and more pressure on the guards.

“City Lord, the North Gate and the West Gate have already fallen. There were too many wraiths, our brothers maintaining the spiritual formation can’t hold it anymore. You and junior city lord should hurry up and return. If worse come to worst, we’ll just fight to the death...” the guards on the east city wall shouted up to Luo Wei.

Luo Wei and Luo Yang stood proudly in the air above everyone.

Although the duo were surrounded by wraiths, no wraiths dared to proactively attack them.

These wraiths were truly terrified from all the killing the pair had done.

Luo Wei squinted his eyes when he heard the report from his city guards. In all honesty, the results were not surprising for him at all. Although all the wraiths were weak, they still were far superior in numbers.

Even compete stage Sky Immortal experts would not be able to handle the relentless assaults by the hordes of wraiths.

Even the face of Luo Yang, a Sky Immortal expert himself, was pale, and was breathing erratically. That was all because of overconsumption of his spiritual energy.

At the same time, Luo Wei did not actually expect Leisure House to be able to defend for so long like they had.

“My lord, come back,” the guards on the city wall advised again. In their eyes, anybody else could die, but the city lord could not. The city lord was like the heart of their city. If he died in battle, warriors and civilians alike, would fall into a frantic state.

“Lil’ Yang, go on back,” Luo Wei shoved Luo Yang behind him.

However, Luo Yang had wobbled a bit, then stood firmly where he had been in the air, “I’m not leaving if Father is not leaving.”

“What are you saying?” Luo Wei glared at him angrily. “You are merely a burden on me right now! Go back and rest, then return to the front lines when you can fight again.”

“No,” Luo Yang replied seriously. And at that moment...

“My lord!” the guards on the city wall suddenly shouted.

Luo Wei, who was wholly focused on Luo Yang, did not notice the wraiths who had actually chosen to proactively attack together.

He subconsciously turned around and covered Luo Yang with his body...

“Serve them with Thunder Palms!”

A group of people hurried over through the sky. Third Fatty Jin snickered when he saw the wraiths, then, several hundred Thunder Palm attacks landed on the wraiths with his orders.

“Massacre them all!” Third Fatty Jin charged forward into the swarm of wraiths with his pair of giant hammers.

“They’re here, they’re finally here!” Luo Wei, who had been hugging Luo Yang tightly, let out a long sigh of relief. The reason he had chosen to fight to the death outside the city walls without giving up was because...

He was buying time for the reinforcements from the sacred land of the Immortal Region to arrive!

...

“Old Xue, we can’t hold the gate anymore. Let’s retreat,” Stone muttered. He was armored from head to toe in what was clearly expensive equipment.

It wasn't only him, everyone from Leisure House were equipped like that.

It was a scene that would make a lot of outsiders jealous. After all, their equipment were all forged by Item Refining Grandmasters. Every set cost nearly a hundred million celeste each.

However, there was nothing much that they as outsiders could really do about it. After all, the Leisure House might not have much of anything else, but they did have a lot of money.

"No, what are the civilians in the city going to do if we retreat? Even if we don't care about them, what about our villagers!?" Xue Qi shook his head.

Stone thought it over for a moment after hearing that, "Then what do you want us to do? We've pretty much finished off all the Recovery Pills and Spiritual Nurturing Bills that Ye-zi left us. We only managed to hold on so long because of the pills. No matter how many wraiths we kill, there still are no signs of their numbers decreasing at all. We're going to end up dying here because we ran out of everything."

"What are you lot worried about? I'm here, aren't I?"

A blood red scythe tore threw the horde of wraiths in front of them.

Ye Zichen rested the scythe on his shoulders, then walked over in front of Xue Qi and reached out his hand to help Xue Qi up off the ground.

"Sorry, I'm late."

"You've always liked to appear at moments like this," Xue Qi's worried face relaxed. He grasped Ye Zichen's outstretched hand and pulled himself up.

Meanwhile, Stone also walked over with a carefree smile on his face, "You're finally here. Any later and your Brother Stone

would've been eaten by the ghosts.”

“Hahaha, that's only if they are capable of that!” Ye Zichen chuckled, then raised his scythe up high and shouted. “Kill them all!”

“Let's go!” Stone laughed, then everyone from Leisure House charged forward behind Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen was their mainstay. They were fearless as long as he was there.

...

At the city lord manor.

Many people were in the meeting hall. Due to the intervention of Ye Zichen, Third Fatty Jin and the Immortal Region disciples, the wraiths around the city were finally completely cleared.

Meanwhile, Third Fatty Jin had ordered his junior brothers to clear out the remaining ones.

“Chief Jin, it was all thanks to you that Maple City could escape the disaster,” Luo Wei, who sat on the main seat, stood up and bowed towards Third Fatty Jin.

Surprisingly, Third Fatty Jin actually stood up humbly and smiled, “I am here by my master's orders. What's more, it was not just me who aided Maple City. Everyone here did.”

“Yes, I also have to thank Leisure House as well as the travelers and soldiers who died for Maple City!” Luo Wei looked up into the sky solemnly, then bowed thrice.

Everyone mourned silently. This was only Maple City, the other cities in the Immortal Region definitely weren't in any better situation.

“City Lord Luo, I wonder if you have a method of contacting the other cities?” Ye Zichen frowned as he thought.

Luo Wei looked at him with a complicated expression, then

nodded, “Yes.”

Chapter 652 – Identity

Everyone looked towards Luo Wei and watched him take out a jade tablet, then he began to swirl his fingers on its surface.

“Old Luo, don’t be so anxious. We’re sending reinforcements your way already,” the jade tablet flashed, then a loud chuckle rang out from it before Luo Wei could even say anything.

“Were you not attacked?” Luo Wei asked after a brief shock. From that city lord’s tone, their situation was far better than he had possibly imagined.

“The Underworld and Heavenly Court have reinforced all the different cities, so we didn’t suffer too many losses. How is the situation over there? Can you hold out?”

“The Immortal Region’s reinforcements are here,” Luo Wei replied with a confident smile.

The voice from the jade tablet clearly paused for a moment, then laughed loudly, “You really are lucky. Then, we’ll tell our soldiers to go back to defend their cities first. But we are going to come over to Maple City. You better prepare a feast for us.”

“You want a feast, at this time!? Are you serious?” Luo Wei’s expression immediately grew dark. “The majority of Maple City’s soldiers died, and there were even casualties among the travelers, and you’re telling me to host a feast!?”

“Luo Wei, don’t mind him too much. A’cheng just speaks like that all the time,” a female voice sounded out from the jade tablet. “No need for a feast. Just wait for us at Maple City.”

“Mm,” Luo Wei was in a bad mood, thus, he returned the jade tablet to his pocket with a stiff expression.

Everyone in the room heard their conversation, and Ye Zichen’s worrying heart finally stopped worrying.

At that moment, his phone rang. He looked apologetically at the others in the room, then took out his phone and walked outside the door.

The one who had sent him a message was Su Yan.

Ye Zichen slapped his thighs. He was completely focused on the cities in the outer regions of the Immortal Region, so much so, that he had completely forgotten the possibility of the Endless Beast Region getting attacked by wraiths too.

He clicked on the message, then saw a worrisome message on the screen.

“Were you guys attacked by wraiths? Big sister said that the wraith attacks were happening everywhere. It’s already been dealt with for Keke and I. We’re getting ready to bring you some reinforcements.”

“It’s been dealt with over here as well. Are you two alright?”

The moment Ye Zichen sent the message, Su Yan sent him a video chat request.

Accept.

Not long later, Su Yan’s beautiful face appeared on the screen with Xia Keke and Lu Lu sitting beside her.

“Zichen-gege,” Xia Keke waved towards him with a giggle.

Ye Zichen let out a soft sigh when he saw that all three seemed unharmed. So he waved with a smile, “Hi.”

“Hehe, I told you Zichen-gege will be fine. No trouble are troubles in front of him. You two wouldn’t believe me. Hmmph,” Xia Keke wrinkled her nose, then reached her hand out towards Su Yan and Lu Lu.

Ye Zichen glanced over at the other two...

F*ck.

Did they make another bet?

“My god, when did you three start to always bet on me?” Ye Zichen shrugged speechlessly.

Xia Keke giggled.

Lu Lu shrugged innocently.

Meanwhile, Su Yan smiled, “Keke was hellbent on it. I had no choice.”

“Xia Keke!” Ye Zichen called her name in a fierce manner.

Xia Keke immediately stood up straight, “Present!”

After shouting that, she scratched her head with a coy smile, “Oops, I always slept in classes in uni, so I got used to getting caught and called by the mentor.”

Su Yan and Lu Lu giggled. At the same time, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but to chuckle as well.

However, Su Yan and Xia Keke’s expressions darkened, “I wonder when we can return.”

“We will return one day,” Ye Zichen pursed his lips with a smile. It seems like everyone who came from the Modern Realm wonders about that.

I suppose I’m not one to speak about others. I would often think about it at nights as well.

Just when will we be able to return and live the lives of normal people?

Although we are doing well here, we are still people who originally lived in the Modern Realm.

“Lil’ Yan, Big Sis told me to ask you whether we need to go over to help Ye Zichen. The other smaller clans need our aid too,” Su Zhu’s figure appeared in the video.

Ye Zichen waved, “Su Zhu-jie.”

“Oh, you’re chatting here?” Su Zhu waved towards the screen with wide open eyes like a curious kid. “Ye Zichen, you can hear what I’m saying here?”

“Yes,” Ye Zichen smiled.

Then, Fatty Yin’s figure appeared on the screen as well.

“So Zhu-jie is still with Fatty. Haha, it seems like we’ll get to witness your wedding very soon.”

“Little kid Ye, I give you full marks for that assist,” Fatty Yin laughed.

Su Zhu blushed, then rolled her eyes at Ye Zichen. “If you keep on saying that, then I’m not going to allow Lil’ Yan to go and find you. Alright, it seems like you are fine, so we won’t be going over.”

“Akright,” Ye Zichen nodded.

After Su Zhu pulled Fatty Yin from the room by his ear, Ye Zichen pursed his lips and smiled. Then, when he recalled what Su Zhu said earlier, he couldn’t help but ask, “Can you come over to see me?”

“Mhmm,” Su Yan smiled softly. “Big Sis suddenly agreed for me to go and find you. Keke, Lu Lu and I are planning to go over to the Immortal Region to see you a while later.”

“That’s amazing,” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows with a smile, while the three girls in the video also smiled dumbly.

They chatted a bit more, then turned off the video chat. Ye Zichen also managed to return to the meeting hall in a carefree mood after seeing that they were injury free.

“Zeze, Ye-zi’s looking great. What did you go off to do just now?” Stone chuckled.

Ye Zichen smiled without replying, then returned to where he sat originally and noticed that there was a hint of complexity mixed in with Luo Wei’s gaze.

“City Lord Luo.”

“Although I don’t want to admit it, but Chief Ye’s Leisure House truly helped out the city lord manor greatly,” Luo Wei was not a person was unable to comprehend propriety. He wanted to kill Ye Zichen that day purely to prevent the demons from causing trouble in the Immortal Region.

However, Ye Zichen’s various actions had truly helped him too much.

“Does City Lord Luo still does not believe my identity?”

“Just how are you supposed to make me believe you?” Luo Wei sighed softly. “We won’t talk about it. I, Luo Wei, owe you one, but if you are a demon, I will not let you off.”

“Demon?” At that moment, Third Fatty Jin suddenly looked at Luo Wei speechlessly and raised his eyebrows. “You just accused Boss Ye of someone from the Demon Realm?”

Luo Wei fell silent. Although he suspected Ye Zichen of his identity, he didn’t want the Immortal Region to know of Ye Zichen’s identity in fear of him actually being innocent.

Sometimes, humans were just so complicated.

Ye Zichen smiled indifferently, “Does City Lord Luo think that I’m someone of the Demon Realm just because I have the wings of a Fallen?”

“Chief Ye,” Luo Wei was shocked. He did not expect Ye Zichen to just blurt it out.

He wanted to give an excuse for Ye Zichen, but Third Fatty Jin suddenly snickered, “Ridiculous. You actually just accused Boss Ye of being someone of the Demon Realm? That’s the funniest joke I’ve ever heard. Do you even know who he is?”

Chapter 653 – Completely Messed Up

Third Fatty Jin was extremely worked up by it. Even though Luo Wei was a late stage Sky Immortal expert and the City Lord, Third Fatty Jin still didn't take him seriously.

Just who is Ye Zichen?

He is the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, a monumental being in the Immortal Region, and the one who had fought Chiyou of the Demon Realm.

Luo Wei suspecting Ye Zichen being someone of the Demon Realm was the greatest insult towards the Yellow Emperor's reincarnation.

"Fatty," Ye Zichen frowned. From his point of view, there was no need for Third Fatty Jin to get so angry.

Time will unveil the truth.

No explanation was as effective as letting time display the truth of whether he was a demonic spy or not.

"Heh," Third Fatty Jin snorted coldly towards Luo Wei with disdain, but he did understand why Ye Zichen called out to him.

The atmosphere in the room became rather tense. Luo Wei looked towards Third Fatty Jin in confusion.

Then he looked towards Ye Zichen. Did I make a mistake? But I did see with my own eyes that Ye Zichen bearing the wings the ancient texts stated would only appear on Fallen of the Demon Realm.

But it seems like Ye Zichen is on good terms with those of the sacred land of the Immortal Region.

Based on the history between the Immortal Region and the Demon Realm, if he is truly of the Demon Realm, he should have been thrown into a dungeon by them already.

“City Lord Luo, I hope you don’t take it to heart. Fatty doesn’t mean anything much by that,” Ye Zichen smiled and tried to ease the awkward atmosphere in the room.

At this moment, Third Fatty Jin rolled his eyes at Luo Wei, “Don’t say that I didn’t warn you. If you keep on suspecting Boss Ye of being a demonic spy, then you will be blacklisted from the Immortal Region even if you are the City Lord of Maple City.”

“Fatty.”

I already told him not to lash out, he’s actually being so relentless about it.

I know that Third Fatty Jin is getting even for me, but Luo Wei doesn’t know I’m the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation. His suspicions is just his wariness. There’s no reason to hold him at fault.

If it was any other City Lord, then they might have just laughed this over due to how mighty the sacred land of the Immortal Region was.

Yet, it was Luo Wei.

He was famous for being stubborn.

“Chief Jin, that’s not nice. I can’t suspect anything just because you are on good terms with Ye Zichen? How about you speaking out his identity? I do want to know just who he is to make Chief Jin trust him so much. Or could it be that Chief Jin is actually colluding with him...”

“Outrageous!

Bang.

Third Fatty jin shot up from his chair. His chubby face was now filled with a terrifying sharpness, “Do you dare to repeat what you just said!?”

Luo Wei did instantly regret it after he spoke out like that. No

matter what, he shouldn't suspect someone of the sacred land of the Immortal Region colluding with demons.

“You City Lords of the outer regions have truly lived great days for too long. You actually dare to say everything now!? You're sick of being the City Lord, right? Alright, I'll report back to my master and get him to revoke your position.”

“Fatty,” Ye Zichen yanked Third Fatty Jin.

However, the latter stood straight and glared at Luo Wei with a snort, “Boss Ye, don't mind me. This isn't a matter about your identity anymore. A City Lord of the outer regions actually suspected me, who is currently representing the sacred land of the Immortal Region. If other people find out, then just how will they view us!?”

“Chief Jin, don't threaten me with the position of the City Lord. I already said it earlier, why not speak out Ye Zichen's identity? If I was truly wrong, then I will definitely apologize and give up this position of the City Lord,” Luo Wei said sullenly.

Everyone in the room looked at the two in shock.

Everything was fine just now, why did it just suddenly change?

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and was unsure of what to do. It all started due to his identity.

“Boss Ye's identity will freak you out. A mere City Lord like you does not have the right to know that,” Third Fatty Jin scolded, then turned towards Ye Zichen. “Boss Ye, let's stop staying here. I'm getting pissed just looking at this guy.”

“What's going on here? I heard Chief Jin getting mad from miles away.”

The City Lord manor's guards arrived in the meeting hall with several armored people behind them.

After those people were the people from the Heavenly Court led

by Yang Jian and co. alongside those from the Underworld led by Ox-Head and co.

“Chief Jin, something’s wrong with Old Luo’s mind, so don’t get on his level,” the one who spoke was a square-faced man. He looked rather like a general.

His words caused the rather cool-looking woman in armor beside him to giggle.

Luo Wei couldn’t help but snort, “You always speak too much.”

The square-faced man chuckled, then took off his helmet and put it by his waist with a laugh, “Allow me to introduce you all. These masters behind me are from the Heavenly Court and the Underworld... Ugh... What’s going on?”

Just as he was about to introduce Yang Jian and co., he noticed that they were already chatting with Ye Zichen.

“Bro!” Yang Jian quickly went over.

Ye Zichen also greeted him with a warm smile, “You guys are here.”

“We led our armies down right after you sent the message in the group. It was fortunate that we came down in time, so we managed to prevent a lot of damage,” Yang Jian chuckled.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li also took off his helmet and greeted Ye Zichen, “Sky Sovereign.”

“Heavenly King Li, I’ve troubled you by telling you to lead your army down here before you have fully recovered,” Ye Zichen smiled apologetically.

Heavenly King Li quickly shook his head, “Sky Sovereign, don’t make fun of me. These small injuries are nothing. What’s more, I didn’t have to fight to deal with the wraiths.”

“Hehehe, greetings to Sky Sovereign,” Nezha also giggled.

Ye Zichen rubbed Nezha on his head, “Third Prince, your clothes

make you really look cool!”

“Really? I think so too,” Nezha replied joyously.

Ox-Head was momentarily shocked, then couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows, “You guys know each other?”

“Old Ox, I forgot to introduce you. This is...” Yang Jian pointed towards Ye Zichen.

“I, Old Ox, know Brother Ye. I still owe him several dozen merits. Wait, no, he should be someone of the Underworld, why do you... Wait no, I’m getting really confused. Someone explain what’s happening to me.”

“Someone of the Underworld?” Not only Yang Jian laughed, Heavenly King Li couldn’t help but chuckle as well. “This is the Heavenly Court’s Sky Sovereign Nameless, the our current Chancellor of the Grand Secretariat. How could he belong to the Underworld?”

“Chancellor of the Grand Secretariat?” Ox-Head rubbed his head. “Brother Ye is indeed of the Underworld...”

“Bullshit!” At that moment, Third Fatty Jin, who hadn’t spoke up till then, walked over with a glare and cursed. “Boss Ye is someone of the Immortal Region. If you don’t believe me, ask Boss Ye yourselves.”

Whoosh...

All three groups looked towards Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but smile coyly when he felt their interrogating gazes, “Then... uhm...which Realm should I belong to?”

Chapter 654 – None of them are commoners

The atmosphere turned extremely awkward!

All three parties stared straight at Ye Zichen, while the cause of all this looked back at the three parties idiotically...

Just which side do I belong to?

If I were to be honest, I'm the closest to the Heavenly Court guys, but I did chat quite a bit with the ones from the Underworld. At the same time, I'm also the Yellow Emperor's reincarnation.

"Don't mind all that, I'm definitely on your side," Ye Zichen answered ambiguously, then forcefully changed the topic. "Don't keep all your attention on me. City Lord Luo and the others are looking over."

With that, Ye Zichen looked towards Luo Wei and his group, and saw that the group were completely dumbstruck.

That was especially true for the square-faced man, who knew of Yang Jian and co.'s original identity.

They went dumb.

They went completely dumb.

Ye Zichen scratched his head with a wry smile. He never expected the meeting to go like that. Thus, he could only cough helplessly to bring Luo Wei and co. back to their senses.

"This must be the famous Master Ye, right?" the squared-faced City Lord reached out his hand with a smile, "I am the City Lord of Greenwater City, Huo Zhen. This beautiful heroine beside me is Lin Xiyi, the City Lord of Hundred Flowers City."

"I can't bear the title of a heroine. I am far inferior to Master Ye. Master Ye became beyond famous with the engagement ceremony between the Zuo and Mu families," What stood out from Lin Xiyi was not her beauty. Rather, it was how valiant she appeared.

She gave off a quite capable feeling, one that he had only felt from one other person before...

“City Lord Lin is actually called Lin Xiyi? I once had a friend with a name very similar to yours.”

“Master Ye, why not tell me who it was. Perhaps, I might know that person?” Lin Xinyi smiled.

Ye Zichen spoke the name with a chuckle, “Lin Xiyue.”

Huo Zhen’s expression instantly turned rather strong. Lin Xiyi’s smile also froze in place.

Upon seeing that, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows, “What happened?”

“Is Master Ye’s name Ye Zichen?” Lin Xiyi asked in a testing manner.

“Yeah,” Ye Zichen nodded. Then he instantly realized what the issue was. He opened his eyes wide and smiled wryly. “Wait, it can’t be. Lin Xiyue is your...”

“Lin Xiyue is indeed my younger sister,” Lin Xiyi couldn’t help but smile wryly as well. “She has mentioned Master Ye’s name many times ever since her return from the Modern Realm. I really did not expect the Ye Zichen she talked about to have been Master Ye.”

Ye Zichen was very speechless. It seems like everyone I came to know in the Modern Realm was no normal person!

“Haha, the world is truly tiny. I didn’t think that Master Ye would be related to City Lord Lin in this way,” Huo Zhen chuckled, then bumped Luo Wei’s shoulders. “Geezer Luo, stop spacing out here. You aren’t going to make all of us just stand, right?”

“Why don’t I see Nangong Cheng here?” Luo Wei frowned as he spoke.

“He had pissed you off earlier during the voice transmission, so

he said that he must apologize. I think he went to find a treasure for you. He did tell us that there's no need to wait for him," with that, Huo Zhen looked over at Luo Wei with a creepy smile. "Hey, Old Luo. Tell me the truth. Do you have a thing with him? He has always been single, and you never found another wife after all these years... Zezeze..."

"Screw off," Luo Wei cursed Huo Zhen. "If you have the time for that, then get yourself hooked up with Xiyi first."

Huo Zhen instantly gave up on his teasing. He could merely laugh dryly in response.

His relationship with Lin Xiyi was rather awkward. All the leaders of the most powerful factions in the Immortal Region and the other City Lords knew about his holding affection for Lin Xiyi.

However, sometimes, these feelings were only one-sided, and nothing to be done about them.

"Ahem, let's find a place for us to sit first."

...

Although Luo Wei had refused to hold a feast while communicating through the jade tablet. However, he couldn't help but organize a small one with so many experts present.

At the tables, Yang Jian and everyone all fought over the right to sit beside Ye Zichen.

Third Fatty Jin tried to get involved as well, but a look from Yang Jian caused him to quit his fighting bitterly.

"Why didn't Canopy Marshal and the Great Sage come as well?" Ye Zichen raised his cup as he asked.

Yang Jian chunked a peanut into his mouth and replied, "They all went over to the Endless Beast Region. The attack of the wraiths actually covered a really wide area. Even the Endless Beast Region was affected, so they needed to go over to help them out."

“It was all our Underworld’s fault. We’ve troubled everyone. I, Old Ox, will punish myself with this cup,” Ox-Head downed a cup of liquor apologetically.

Yang Jian and co. all waved it aside. Luo Wei and the other City Lords did not dare to accept his apology either, so they all stood up and downed a cup of liquor as well.

“It all happened too suddenly in the Underworld. It’s not like the Underworld wants to see so many wraiths escape, so Big Brother Ox, you should stop blaming yourself,” Ye Zichen yanked Ox-Head back down in his seat. “but only Big Brother Ox and Big Brother Horse came over this time?”

“The Immortal Region was attacked, but these wraiths did originally come from the Underworld. The Underworld is actually in a worse situation when compared to over here. The Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven ordered Old Horse and I to aid the Immortal Region personally. As for the others, he had ordered them to clean up the wraiths in the Underworld, which did not escape before the Great Emperor Equalling Heaven showed up,” Ox-Head replied with a wry smile.

Ye Zichen nodded.

That made sense. Since the Underworld was where the problem had occurred, it was definitely in a worse shape when compared to the Immortal Region.

“Do you need our help? If you don’t want people from the Immortal Region getting involved, Yang Jian and the others can help you instead.”

“Yeah, Old Ox, just tell us if you need help. There’s no need to worry about the Underworld or Heavenly Court right now. My bro’s influential enough, his relationship with the Underworld is great as well, so there’s no need to hold back. We’re all one family,” Yang Jian agreed.

Ox-Head shook his head, “No need for that. I definitely will not hold back though if we really need your help.”

“Mm, go to them if you need help. If they don’t help you full-heartedly, then I’ll cut their bonus,” Ye Zichen chuckled.

The face of Nezha, who was munching on a chicken drumstick, instantly turned stark white, “Sky Sovereign, please don’t cut my bonus. I promised Immortality Peach-jiejie to buy her new clothes next month with it.”

Everyone found it rather humorous.

On the other hand, Heavenly King Li laughed dryly, then glared secretly over at Nezha.

“Heavenly King Li, Nezha’s all grown up now.”

“I’ve let Sky Sovereign has seen something unsightly,” Heavenly King Li smiled coyly, while the others all stopped laughing.

Ye Zichen tapped his fingers on the table, then leaned back on the chair and raised his eyebrows. “Let’s stop kidding around and get down to business. This sudden incident in the Underworld has caught us completely off guard. I wonder did any of you notice that this seems to be a rather well planned and organized crime?”

Chapter 655 – Prediction

“Master Ye, anyone can tell that this was organized and planned, right? You basically didn’t say anything,” Luo Wei said a bit prickly.

Third Fatty Jin instantly slammed the table and stood up with a frown, “You are just intentionally trying to cause trouble, right?”

“Chief Jin, what do you mean by that? I am just stating a fact. If the demons’ destruction of the underworld’s seals and unleashing of the wraiths to bring chaos to the Three Realms was not planned and organized, then was it supposed to be a sudden idea?” Luo Wei retorted firmly.

He held a grudge against Third Fatty Jin.

However, neither of the two could accurately say why they had a grudge against each other.

“Hey, you...”

“Fatty,” Ye Zichen stopped Third Fatty Jin. It was not the time for them to be fighting amongst themselves.

Third Fatty Jin sat down unwillingly.

Ye Zichen looked towards Luo Wei and nodded, “I understand City Lord Luo’s words, but I wasn’t talking about what you thought. I was talking about the wraiths themselves.”

“What about them?” Ox-Head was very confused.

Ye Zichen pursed his lips then put what he was thinking about, and his guesses into words, “Wraiths are created due to souls being tainted by grudgeful energy. It can be said that wraiths have no actual consciousness. But think back to the fight. When you were rescuing others or defending against the wraiths, did you notice that the wraiths seemed very much organized?”

Everyone in the room turned silent as they recalled the situation.

After a while, Huo Zhen looked up with a frown, “I wouldn’t have noticed if not for Master Ye, but now that you mention it, I really did feel like the wraiths were attacking in a very organized manner.”

“Indeed,” Lin Xiyi raised his eyebrows.

“Then now, please think about the numbers attacking the cities and villages in the outer region of the Immortal Region. Let’s put the Endless Beast Region aside for a moment since none of us saw what happened with our own eyes!” Ye Zichen brought up another point.

The moment he said that, everyone grew silent.

There was indeed a difference in numbers.

“It seems like you all understand now. The number of wraiths attacking were different. The numbers attacking a village is far less than a city. What’s more, there is a difference based on which city it is. Maple City was attacked by the most, while Pool City was attacked by the least... Meanwhile, where does attacking Maple City affect most?”

“The sacred land of the Immortal Region!” Luo Wei suddenly said with a dark and surprised expression. “These wraiths...”

“City Lord Luo is still underestimating it,” Ye Zichen shook his head. “The enemy’s ambition does not end at the sacred land of the Immortal Region.”

“Master Ye, please explain,” Luo Wei also put his own personal feelings aside and asked humbly.

Ye Zichen smiled, “The entirety of the Three Realms.”

Everyone in the room looked at Ye Zichen in shock. They could not understand why Ye Zichen had said something so shocking.

“I will make a bold guess here that before the wraiths were unleashed, someone had already given them some subconscious

thoughts. That's why the wraiths didn't just randomly fly all over the place when they escaped from the Underworld, and instead appeared in the location of their intended target."

"Big Brother Ox said that most of the wraiths remained in the Underworld, and only a small portion of them escaped. Yet, even so, they still have caused serious damage to all the cities and villages. Then, what if all of the wraiths got out? What would happen to the outer regions of the Immortal Region? Utter annihilation! That's very possible, isn't it?"

Luo Wei, Huo Zhen, Lin Xiyi and the rest of the City Lords nodded. Even if that didn't happen, if the Underworld, Heavenly Court and the Immortal Region hadn't actually sent out their armies, they might not have even made it through this wave.

"Then, what would the Immortal Region do if the outer regions were devastated? They would naturally blame the Underworld for the mismanagement. Considering the already tense relationships, a war might actually break out."

"Then... what about the Heavenly Court? The Heavenly Court didn't get involved at all. They were not the victims, nor the ones at fault," Yang Jian frowned.

"Don't you know what the Jade Emperor is like?" Ye Zichen laughed indifferently. "If he saw the Underworld and Immortal Region fighting, would he stand idle? He'll definitely send out a surprise army while the two are clashing with each other."

Yang Jian turned silent, and even Heavenly King Li, who had always been loyal to the Jade Emperor, was unable to word any defense.

Since they had already known the Jade Emperor for so long, they naturally understood what he was like.

He definitely would do something like that.

"When that happens, the Three Realms will be covered in

torrents of bloodshed. Endless wars will break out. Although the Three Realms might not have such a huge grudge against one another, but as the fight continues, it will reach the point where peace cannot be reached. Then, all that will follow is war, and more war!” Ye Zichen continued. “What that happens... Who do you think will be the happiest?”

“The Demon Realm!” Nezha raised his hand and blurted out. Actually, everybody knew the answer, but they were unable to utter such a solemn answer. Perhaps, only Nezha, who still had the heart of a child, could actually speak out the truth.

“I can’t believe those guys are so sinister!” Yang Jian’s fists creaked, while the others all had a dark look on their faces.

“Alright now, at least things didn’t go the way they planned,” Ye Zichen smiled, then stretched lazily. “But whoever is behind this definitely did not expect the Underworld to react so quickly. Or perhaps, he didn’t expect the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven to deal with this in person, causing some of the wraiths to be unable to escape. He also did not expect the Three Realms, who had tense relationships with one another, would actually lend each other a hand in this time of needs, causing his plans to be ruined. When you consider this, then the Demon Realm did do something good. Their actions actually caused the relationships between the Three Realms to straighten out a lot, right?”

“Haha, bro, you’re right,” Yang Jian chuckled, then laughed mockingly. “Those demon scums probably never expected that their actions only caused the relationship between our Three Realms to smoothen. Now, we’re a proper family, and completely united. If those demon bastards dare to appear in front of grandpa again, then I’ll definitely teach them a good lesson!”

Luo Wei and co. also nodded their heads.

Nezha shouted out, “Yeah, that’s right!”

“But I do have something to point out right now,” Ye Zichen

interrupted the calm atmosphere, then turned back to Ox-Head.

Noticing that, Ox-Head nodded, “I understand what Brother Ye wants to say. You want to tell me that there is a spy for the demons in the Underworld, right?”

Chapter 656 – Chaos is Coming

The atmosphere in the room grew a bit dark again, especially for the group from the Underworld.

They had already guessed that there was a spy amongst them. They could still clearly remember everything that had happened inside the Howling Valley.

King Kṣitigarbha had investigated in secret, but he never found anything conclusive.

Due to no other similar event happening before, the idea of it was put aside. However, they never expected the spy to be the cause of them receiving such a huge “gift”.

“There’s definitely a spy, and he is clearly high level,” Ye Zichen smiled. In order for the other people to not suspect the spy while the spy came into contact with the eighteen layers of hell, the spy had to at to be at least the level of a Ghost Marshal.

Judging from that, the people to be investigated decreased by a lot.

“Indeed,” Ox-Head nodded with a dark look. It was clear that he had a bit of an idea of who it might be.

“It seems like Big Brother Ox-Head has some ideas, so I won’t speak on it anymore. No matter what, that is an internal issue of the Underworld. Since the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens has come out of closed cultivation, it should only be a matter of time before the spy is caught,” Ye Zichen stretched lazily.

Ox-Head nodded coldly.

Horse-Face looked at the two in confusion, “Big Brother Ox-Head, what are you talking about?”

“It’s gonna be hard for you to understand what we’re talking about with your level of intelligence, so just focus on eating,” Ox-

Head rolled his eyes in annoyance.

Horse-Face twitched his mouth, but did as Ox-Head said.

“The main issue is that the Underworld doesn’t have any ideas of who it might be,” Ox-Head squinted his eyes with a frown. “Everyone is under suspicion in this sort of situation, and even though the Great Sacred Emperor has come out of closed cultivation, he can’t recklessly accuse someone without any solid evidence. After all, you have to know that all of the ghost servants and above are generally old people in the Underworld, that is even more true of those of our level, whose positions have not been changed in several tens of thousands of years.”

“Then it will depend on the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven’s choice. He’s the supreme leader of the Underworld.”

...

The wraiths-eliminating missions continued, and due to Yang Jian and co., neither Ye Zichen nor the ones from Leisure House needed to fight anymore.

Instead, they remained in Maple City to help the City Lord give aid to the surrounding villages.

“F*ck, those demon scum are truly vicious. I’m just too weak. If I were of the Sky Immortal level, then I would definitely teach them a good lesson,” Stone couldn’t help but curse in anger after seeing the conditions of the attacked villagers and their survivors.

“Stop exaggerating, so what if you had the strength of a Sky Immortal?” Xue Qi, who was in charge of the resources, couldn’t help but retort. “Look at Ye-zi. Is he strong? Does he hate the demons? But isn’t what he can do limited here? Don’t oversimplify the problem!”

Stone sighed softly, then looked at Ye Zichen, who was smiling towards the children in the villages, “Old Xue, just who do you think Brother Ye is? That fatty from the sacred land of the

Immortal Region nearly got into a fight with Luo Wei because of him, and both the Underworld and the Heavenly Court guys seemed to be quite close with him.”

“Who knows, but he definitely isn’t a common person,” Xue Qi smiled.

Stone couldn’t help but roll his eyes and ignore Xue Qi.

Who can’t tell that Ye Zichen’s identity isn’t a common person?

“The situation with the village over here isn’t too bad, let’s move onto the next one.” Ye Zichen walked out of the village to beside Xue Qi and co. He was still wearing a flower necklace the children made for him and the villagers all waved goodbye.

“I wonder if Luo Wei will be pissed off,” Stone suddenly said.

Ye Zichen, who was saying his farewells to the villagers with a smile, turned around, “Why?”

“It was clearly the City Lord’s manor who is giving out the aid, but you seem to have gotten all the good reputation,” Stone raised his eyebrows

Ye Zichen shook his head with a chuckle, “Reputation doesn’t matter now. C’mon, let’s hurry up to the next village. Let’s try and get to two more villagers before the day ends.”

“Alright, no problem!” Stone jumped onto the carriage.

Ye Zichen and Xue Qi looked at each other with a shake of their heads and smiles, then got ready to get onto the carriage as well...

At that moment, one of the disciples that Third Fatty Jin had led from the Immortal Region flew across the sky, wobbling on his sword.

When he saw Ye Zichen on the ground, he put away his sword and directly fell from the sky.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen quickly went up to them. He first checked the disciple’s pulse, then stuffed a pill into his mouth.

“Khoff khoff,” the bloodied disciple on the ground opened his eyes and started coughing intensely.

“What happened to you? Didn’t you guys go to clear out the wraiths...”

“B-Boss Ye,” the disciple grabbed Ye Zichen’s arm and pointed towards the north. “S-Save... S-Senior Brother... S-Save him...”

Bang.

The disciple fainted before he could finish. Ye Zichen passed some spiritual energy along to him until he was not in any life-threatening danger before he looked towards Stone and Xue Qi.

“What happened to him?”

“If I’m not wrong, then Third Fatty Jin probably got in danger. Stone, take him back to Leisure House. Xue Qi, continue sending out the disaster aid. I’m going to go in the direction the disciple pointed towards to find Fatty,” Ye Zichen handed out the missions calmly. Then, when Xue Qi and Stone both nodded, he immediately flew up into the air and rushed towards the north.

“Stone, remember to mention to the City Lord to prepare to send out reinforcements when you get back,” Xue Qi added after Ye Zichen left.

Stone, who just placed the disciple onto the carriage, frowned, “Old Xue, do you think that they will need it?”

“It’s better to be safe than sorry,” Xue Qi clenched his teeth. “I already felt like everything couldn’t have gone so smoothly. Since they want to wreak havoc, they wouldn’t have caused such a huge commotion if it was going to be dealt with that easily. Like I thought, the second wave of attack from the demons have come.”

Stone also noticed the severity of the issue. Thus, he nodded towards Xue Qi, then hurried the carriage away.

Xue Qi let out a long sigh as he continued to push the cart with

the resources forward, “Chaos is coming!”

...

“Just what is going on? With Third Fatty Jin and co.’s strength, they shouldn’t have ended up like that with the wraiths they are dealing with,” Ye Zichen frowned heavily and scanned below with his Fiery Eyes of Truth.

Aside from losing too much blood, the disciples seemed to have a hint of deathly aura around him. However, since it was rather light, Ye Zichen erased it immediately.

“If it was only wraiths, then it shouldn’t have been like that. Could it be that...”

Thinking up to that point, Ye Zichen stopped thinking about it. He didn’t dare to consider what might happen. He immediately fully spread out his spiritual consciousness to search for Third Fatty Jin.

Chapter 657 – Hero

“Retreat, retreat...” Third Fatty Jin roared loudly at the junior brothers behind him as he stood in front of them with his pair of hammers in his hands.

Over ten thousand wraiths stood in front of him. However, their numbers was not the biggest issue. If they were merely normal wraiths of the spiritual body level, then they would not pose much of a threat to the group at all.

However...

Even the weakest wraith was of the Earth Immortal level.

All of the wraiths had already taken physical form. Their originally gray irises were now completely black. Their fangs dripped with blood, while they repeatedly tore at Third Fatty Jin with their razor sharp claws.

“Senior Brother!”

“Scram!” Third Fatty cursed as he swung his pair of giant hammers around. “What the f*ck are you guys looking at? I told you to scram. Don’t you get it? SCRAM! Stop getting in the way!”

“Senior Brother.”

All of the disciples were covered in blood. Many of them were missing an arm or a few sections from their bodies.

The only word to describe their situation aptly was “pitiful”.

“Someone went to find Boss Ye. Boss Ye will come and save us.”

“Boss Ye!?” Third Fatty was momentarily stunned. Then he cursed angrily. “Who the heck told you to do that? Do you want to see Boss Ye die as well!? You bunch of complete and utter failures. F*ck off. Don’t let me ever see you again.”

“Senior Brother, we’re not...”

Bang.

The disciple felt something hit his head before he could even finish his sentence. He looked down, then saw that one of Third Fatty Jin's hammers had been swung at his head.

"Scram! I told you guys to scram!"

"Senior Brother."

"Please, I'm begging you. Run. Do you all want to die here? What am I supposed to say to Master if you all die? So, I'm begging you, run!" Third Fatty Jin pleaded helplessly.

Many of the female disciples were already drowning in tears.

"Go," one of the disciples clenched his teeth, then dragged the disciples around him and left on top of a sword.

Seeing that, Third Fatty smiled with a bit of comfort.

"They're all a bunch of cute little kids," Third Fatty Jin turned back, then snarled, revealing his bloodied teeth. "How about... eating me instead of these kids? But then again... I won't just stand here like an idiot even if you do want to eat me."

He reached into his pocket and took out a blood red pill.

That was the Blood Demon Pill Great Emperor Qingming had given him before he left for battle. It was able to make a person's blood boil and squeeze out his full potential...

However, that meant that his meridians will break after the six hours of pill effects, causing the user to become a normal person.

He actually scoffed at Great Emperor Qingming when the latter gave him the pill, since he could not imagine him being foolish enough to eat it.

Yet, right now, he still chose to eat it.

"Being a hero for a moment is better than being a useless animal for a lifetime. Even if I die, at least I once gained glory."

The blood vessels on Third Fatty Jin begun to swell several moments after he chunked the pill into his mouth without any hesitation.

His nerves tensed up, while his tiny eyes emitted a crimson light.

Third Fatty Jin was instantly covered in a red glow. At that very moment, even his black hair seemed to be dyed red. The rampaging spiritual energy around him seemed to flash with a blood red light, while it helped him seemingly breakthrough without a limit.

Complete stage Human Immortal.

Sky Immortal.

Early stage Sky Immortal.

Mid stage Sky Immortal.

That effects of the pill only seemed to have stopped working when it brought him extremely close to the late stage Sky Immortal level. Third Fatty Jin was momentarily stunned as he felt his body fill up with power before he smiled evilly.

“Animals, come and eat me!”

Boom.

He smashed his hammer onto the ground, creating a huge crack.

He laughed, then charged towards the center of the wraith swarm with a bloodthirsty smile.

Dong.

Several wraiths would instantly disperse every single time he swung his hammer. Yet, at the same time, several other wraiths would also leave behind a few claw marks on his body.

“Tsk, this is no big deal, try again!” Third Fatty Jin could not spare any time to care about his wounds. Or rather, he didn’t want to care about them anymore.

He understood very well that after taking the Blood Demon Pill, he'll only be a useless person even if he manages to survive. Thus... So what. He might as well use these final moments to make the entire Three Realms remember him.

“Come!”

His shout caused a huge soundwave to pierce through the wraiths, animals in the surrounding forests scattered and howled.

Meanwhile, the Immortal Region disciples, who were racing towards Maple City on their swords, all couldn't help but close their eyes when they saw the fleeing animals.

“I was wrong to fault Eldest Senior Brother. He is truly worthy of being the chief disciple.” The person who spoke was the disciple who agreed to leave first. He is the number one disciple amongst those who were not Great Emperor Qingming's inner disciples.

He was also Third Fatty Jin's competition when the sect was deciding upon the chief disciple.

In the end, he had lost.

He had always bore a grudge for that, and scoffed at Third Fatty Jin's position as the chief disciple. It was only at that moment that he finally accepted it with all his heart.

In order for us to escape unscathed in front of those wraiths.

He actually chose to stay behind to block them off... If I was him... It would have been very very difficult for me to make that decision.

Even if I could make that choice, I wouldn't have made it without any hesitation like he did.

“Senior Brother...” many of the fleeing disciples uttered out to Third Fatty Jin. At that very moment, it could be said that Third Fatty Jin's influence over them have increased thousand-fold.

“C'mon, we don't know how long Senior Brother Jin can block

those wraiths off. We should hurry back to Maple City. The Underworld was so sure that the wraiths could only reach the Earth Immortal level at max and that there could not be Human Immortal level ones. Yet, there were actually Sky Immortal level wraiths just now. We have to get an explanation from the Underworld!”

“Yes, we have to!” the Immortal Region disciples all flew towards Maple City menacingly.

Meanwhile... Third Fatty Jin was already forced onto the edge of a cliff by the wraith swarms.

His strength did shoot up massively after taking the Blood Demon Pill. However, when facing a swarm of over ten thousand wraiths averaging around the mid-stage Human Immortal level, even if he was an Immortal King...

There wasn't really much he could do.

“Gah, I regret it now,” Third Fatty Jin squinted his eyes as he edged closer to the edge of the cliff. “I’ve decided not to let you guys eat me. Bye bye.”

He took another step backwards and tumbled down the cliff.

All of the wraiths surrounded the cliff, but did not dare to follow him down.

Third Fatty Jin smiled as he felt the air resistance against his back. “At least... I’ve managed to be a hero once.”

Chapter 658 – Argument

Third Fatty Jin slowly closed his eyes, then opened his arms wide as he fell...

“Ahh, I guess the focus should be moved away from here now. Maybe the camera of the higher powers will switch scenes now,” Third Fatty Jin couldn’t help but mutter as he fell down the cliff. Even at the end, he still couldn’t keep his coolness for more than one brief moment.

“Well, will the camera move away now that the main character is here?” At that very moment, Ye Zichen flapped his black and white striped wings and grabbed Third Fatty Jin. “You want to die at such a young age? Did you get married yet? Did you confess to that senior sister of yours yet? Did you return all the money you owe the old guy at the cafeteria yet? Have you indulged yourself in the worship of your junior sisters yet? If you didn’t do any of that yet, then your life was too meaningless!”

“Boss Ye,” Third Fatty Jin opened his eyes wide in joy.

No kidding, nobody wants to die. He had no choice just now, so he merely wanted to finish his life in as cool of a manner as possible.

That was just to leave behind his most glorious moment in front of whoever was able to see it, but the truth was that...

He didn’t want to die!

Wait, no. I’ve never told Boss Ye any of that. How did he know?

“Boss Ye, how did you know that I like my senior sister and owe money to the old man at the cafeteria...” Third Fatty jin was shocked.

Ye Zichen was momentarily shocked as well, then laughed, “I was right? I was just bullshitting.”

...

“Can I curse you?” Third Fatty Jin couldn’t help but retort after a few dozen seconds of silence.

“If you want me to throw you down here, then sure. People’s words can’t be that bad on their deathbed, so do it. I can take it,” Ye Zichen smiled.

Third Fatty Jin shrunk his neck, then thought about his bright future. “Never mind, I’ll resist it.”

“Also, I want to tell you something else...” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. “It seems like you’ve screwed me over. We can’t get out.”

“Huh?”

“Did you not feel it? It seems like you can only enter this valley, but can’t get out. There’s a wind wall at the very top. I can’t fly through that. I’ve already tried a few times already.”

“Boss Ye, please don’t mess with me.”

“I’m not messing with you,” Ye Zichen smiled wryly.

Third Fatty Jin immediately swore, “Then, why the f*ck did you come down for? You screwed up my best moments. I gave in when I should, I felt moved when I should, and now you’re telling me that we can’t get up there!? I thought I was going to sacrifice myself to bring happiness to the entire human race, but great... Now the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation is going to die with me. My master is definitely going to curse me so much that I’ll jump up from my grave!”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but scratch his head with an awkward smile, “Alright, my fault. You want to try again?”

“F*ck off. We’re dying together then,” with that, Third Fatty Jin wrapped his arms around Ye Zichen like an octopus.

Ye Zichen’s expression instantly turned dark, “F*ck, let go. I can’t fly anymore... Ahhhhh....”

...

At Maple City's City Lord manor.

"Brother Xue, you are definitely overthinking things. The wraiths are, at most of the Earth Immortal level, they won't be able to threaten Brother Ye at all," Yang Jian patted Xue Qi's shoulder.

Xue Qi felt worried ever since Ye Zichen left.

Thus, after he brought the aid to one more village, he went straight to the City Lord's manor to ask the city lord to mobilize the army.

"If you don't believe me, then ask Ox-Head. He's from the Underworld, and knows the strength of the wraiths very well. What's more, Nezha and Luo Wei both went out already, so it's only a matter of time before Ye Zichen returns."

"I can promise you that the wraiths will not be stronger than the Earth Immortal level," Ox-Head comforted.

At this moment, several hundred Immortal Region disciples landed within the city lord manor.

"The Immortal Region disciples are back. It seems like Ye Zichen should have returned as well," Yang Jian stood up from his seat with a smile, then walked to the entrance of the City Lord's manor along with everyone else.

When they got there, they saw that the group had bloodshot eyes. Although they were covered in wounds, they all stood straight and were staring at...

The Underworld's Ox-Head and Horse-Face.

"You guys..." Yang Jian couldn't help but ask.

Sun Yuanjia, who had once fought over the position of the chief disciple with Third Fatty Jin, smiled, then pointed his sword at Ox-Head in an interrogating manner, "Ox-Head, I'm asking you. Were

you the one who said that wraiths would only be of the Earth Immortal level at max?”

“Yes,” Ox-Head nodded. “I did say that before. Everyone here should be clear by now since we’ve already fought so many wraiths.”

“Were there any exceptions?” Sun Yuanjia continued his questioning.

“Yes, but even those exceptions would not be stronger than the Earth Immortal level. The constitution of wraiths limits their potential, meaning that they can only reach the complete stage of the Earth Immortal level at best.”

“Hahaha...” Sun Yuanjia suddenly laughed outrageously, while the junior brothers behind him stared at Ox-Head quite coldly.

“What are you guys doing? Why does this all feel a bit strange? Why are you guys so heavily injured? Didn’t you go to clear away the remaining wraiths? Did you end up meeting demons? Then what about Brother Ye? Did you guys see him?” Yang Jian fired off questions like a machine gun.

Sun Yuanjia smiled mockingly, “Wraiths? We did clear wraiths, and we didn’t meet the so-called demons.”

“Then how did you guys get injured?” Yang Jian raised his eyebrows

Sun Yuanjia snorted, “Our injuries are from the wraiths.”

Yang Jian was shocked upon hearing that.

Ox-Head also shook his head, “Impossible. Wraiths are merely numerous, but unless you end up bumping into a wraith horde, you wouldn’t have gotten this sort of injuries. What’s more, the clearing of wraiths has already been happening for several days. Yang Jian’s side and my side already cleared most of it, so it’s impossible for there to be a wraith horde left.”

“Not a wraith horde? There were several tens of thousands of wraiths!”

“How...”

“But the weakest amongst them are of the complete stage Earth Immortal level, and the strongest is of the Sky Immortal level!” Sun Yuanjia gritted his teeth, while his arm holding the sword trembled. “Our Eldest Senior Brother stayed behind himself to buy time for us to run. The only reason we came back here instead of going back to the Immortal Region directly is just to ask you one question – Why did you lie to us!”

“I didn’t. That’s impossible!” Ox-Head shook his head once more. “Wraiths cannot break through the Earth Immortal level. What’s more, you said that there were several tens of thousands of wraiths all of at least the complete stage Earth Immortal level. That’s ridiculous!”

“Then you’re saying that I’m lying!?” Sun Yuanjia’s expression grew even darker. He pulled down his jacket and pointed at the shocking injuries on his body. “Are all the injuries on the Immortal Region’s disciples lies!?”

Chapter 659 – The Herb Garden Underneath the Cliff

Since the relationship between the Three Realms had only just begun to improve slightly, Yang Jian suggested to the group to go to the place of the incident first in order to prevent a long-lasting grudge from forming.

All of the Immortal Region's disciples except for Sun Yuanjia remained in the City Lord's manor to rest, while he brought Yang Jian and Ox-Head to the place of the incident.

“Where are the wraiths you were talking about?” Ox-Head spread out his spiritual consciousness, but did not detect the signs of any wraiths within a fifty kilometer radius.

“Then, do you think that I’m lying?” Sun Yuanjia glared at Ox-Head in anger. “Such a long time has already passed. Do you think that those wraiths would stay here and wait for you guys to come and surround them?”

“Is that so!?”

Ox-Head still refused to believe that wraiths could reach the Sky Immortal level, so his words radiated with hints of disbelief.

Sun Yuanjia wanted to get angry again, but Yang Jian stopped him. Yang Jian understood that he could not allow the two to keep on arguing, otherwise, the Immortal Region and Underworld might really end up in a fight.

“This way...” At this moment, Yang Jian walked forward with a frown. He squatted on the ground and surveyed the area for a moment, then stopped in front of a cliff.

“The hints of battle is very obvious in the surroundings, but seemed to have stopped here.”

“Can you confirm who it is?” Ox-Head asked.

Yang Jian sighed, “The only thing I can confirm is that one side should have been using giant hammers. I’m not sure of the other side.”

“The hammer-wielder would be my senior brother. The other side is the wraiths I was talking about,” Sun Yuanjia’s eyes turned red as he clenched his fists. If it wasn’t for the Underworld providing wrong information, we wouldn’t have become prey to the wraiths’ ambush so easily.

If that hadn’t happened, Third Fatty Jin wouldn’t have needed to stay behind to buy time for the other disciples to escape.

Since the battle seemed to have stopped at the edge of the cliff, then it might just mean that...

“Ox-Head, we, the Immortal Region, will not just let this go,” with that, Sun Yuanjia turned around and flew away atop his sword.

Yang Jian tried to stop him, but could only sigh when he saw Sun Yuanjia’s resolute expression.

“Could it really have been wraiths?” Ox-Head couldn’t help but frown.

Yang Jian shook his head, “We can’t be sure whether it was wraiths or not, but the ones from the Immortal Region already holds animosity towards the Underworld. They might really seek you out in the future.”

“Heh, so what? Do you think the Underworld is afraid of them? The puny Immortal Region doesn’t even have an Immortal King level expert. It’s merely due to good will from us that they would become their own realm. They aren’t even worthy of fighting the Underworld!” Ox-Head’s words contained a hint of disdain.

Yang Jian patted his shoulders, “You stole the character that I’m supposed to be. These words should be said by someone with my personality. But, on a more serious note, what we need to worry

about is not whether the Immortal Region could go and cause trouble for the Underworld. Don't forget, the demons are still lurking, this is no time for us to have an internal conflict."

"Then what can I do about it?" Ox-Head did understand that, but now that Sun Yuanjia was firmly convinced that it was a problem with the Underworld, the actual person involved was nowhere to be seen and there were no other witnesses, he could only feel all the more troubled as it was his words against Sun Yuanjia's.

On the other hand, Sun Yuanjia did act outrageously even if his words were true.

Due to Third Fatty Jin's position in the Immortal Region, he definitely have a spiritual tablet there. As long as it doesn't shatter, it would mean that he is still alive. Sun Yuanjia would be able to see that when he returned to the Immortal Region. If it had shattered, then it wasn't too late to cause trouble to the Underworld either. If it didn't, then all they had to do was rescue Third Fatty Jin together.

Yet, Sun Yuanjia's words directly caused their relationship to become tense once more. Ox-Head could not understand just what the Immortal Region had to gain from that.

"There's something wrong with that Immortal Region disciple as well," Yang Jian raised his suspicions. "His words were too extreme, and he never once mentioned anything about trying to save Third Fatty Jin. All he was doing the entire time was trying to force you to admit your mistake, and kept on pitting the name of the Immortal Region against the underworld's."

"Yeah," Ox-Head nodded.

Yang Jian walked beside the cliff and looked down, "Our priority right now is finding Third Fatty Jin. We have to find him, dead or alive. But right now, I feel like there's more to this cliff, so we shouldn't proceed forward anymore. I'll get Old Li to take a look when he comes over. He's seen a lot, so he might have some ideas."

“No problem.”

...

“Can you f*cking let go of me now? We’re both going to fall to our deaths now,” Ye Zichen continuously yanked at Third Fatty Jin’s arm.

Third Fatty Jin quickly released his grasp with a coy smile for the sake of his own life.

Ye Zichen immediately flapped his wings to slow down their fall and eventually landed slowly onto the ground.

“My god, Boss Ye, we’re rich!” Third Fatty Jin, who just landed on the ground, quickly ran forward with lit up eyes.

There was a garden of herbs not far in front of them.

The garden swirled with the fragrance of herbs, which seemed to calm people down. As Third Fatty Jin glanced at the mountain of priceless herbs in front of him, he could only gulp and muttered...

“Thousand-Year Crane-Tail Grass.”

“Ginseng spirit.”

“Thousand-Year Qilin Grass.”

“My god, even a single strand of these herbs would provide me with enough fortune to last more than my lifetime!”

Third Fatty Jin’s mouth was essentially dripping saliva as he stared at the herbs with his mouth wide open.

Ye Zichen retracted his wings, then put on a jacket before walking in front of the herb garden. He felt a bit confused. The valley has cliffs on both sides, logically speaking, light shouldn’t be able to reach this spot.

But this valley is so bright. It’s just like it’s daytime!

Also, this herb garden is clearly been treated tenderly.

Could there be someone here!?

“Boss Ye, we’re seriously rich now,” Third Fatty Jin grabbed Ye Zichen’s arm in excitement. “If we harvest the entire garden of herbs, then we’ll basically be harvesting an entire Treasure Tower!”

“Stop being an idiot. Even if you can harvest it, we need to be alive to actually spend it,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, then gripped his phone tightly to look at the signal bar. The small wave which replaced the signal bar ever since he arrived in the Three Realms was gone.

He opened up his social network app, which also told him to check his network settings.

He looked up at the cliffs on both sides, and the barrier of wind in the middle.

“System. System. Ye Zichen to system!”

In these dire circumstances, Ye Zichen finally remembered the system. However, the system didn’t reply.

“Crap, I think we’re in big trouble,” Ye Zichen gritted his teeth with a dark look on his face.

Meanwhile, Third fatty Jin rubbed his hands repeatedly beside the herb garden.

“No, I can’t wait. I’ll have nightmares if I don’t pick up this huge mountain of money in front of me,” with that, Third Fatty Jin took out a small clay vase and slowly walked in front of a strand of herbs...

Cling.

A pebble knocked the vase out of his hands.

Third Fatty jin looked up and saw a young girl standing angrily in front of him with her hands on her waist.

“Stop. I won’t let you bully my little brothers and sisters!”

Chapter 660 – Herbman

The scolding caused Third Fatty Jin, who was about to harvest the herb to stop. Just as he was zoning out, the ginseng spirit popped out of the ground and ran in front of the girl.

“Don’t worry, big sis will protect you,” the girl patted the ginseng spirit’s head.

The spirit nodded in a human-like fashion, then went back into the soil.

Third Fatty Jin opened his eyes wide and looked at the girl...

“Why is there someone here?”

“Who exactly are you people!? Why are you bullying my little brothers and sisters? I’m telling you, don’t think that we are easy pickings. Hurry up and leave this place before I get mad,” the girl had her hands on her waist like a hen protecting her chicks.

‘Little brothers and sisters...’ Third Fatty Jin repeated the phrase, then squinted his eyes as he looked towards the girl...

The girl clearly seemed more immature compared to other young teenagers in the Immortal Realm.

Together with the way she addressed the spiritual herbs... If I’m not mistaken...

Third Fatty Jin’s eyes lit up as he muttered to himself silently.

What sort of merit did I achieve in my previous life? I’ve actually found a herbman!

Herbman, like their name suggests...

Are herbs that have taken human form.

The herbs who can do so are the absolute best amongst spiritual herbs, and taking human form would take several tens of thousands of years.

Not only Sky Immortal experts, even Immortal Kings would fight with each other for this level of spiritual herb.

Back then, before the Jade Emperor had broken through to the Immortal King level, he had once offered up everything he had in hope of getting a herbman to help him break through.

However, he did not succeed.

Thus, he could only undergo several tens of thousands of trials to finally break through.

Not only were herbmen able to help people break through cultivation levels, they also had plenty other effects. It can be said having any level of strength for those who can get a single herbman was only a matter of time.

“Why are you looking at me that way? Go away,” the girl pouted.

Third Fatty Jin took a few steps backwards and stopped in front of Ye Zichen. “Boss Ye.”

“What going on?” Ye Zichen was kind of confused. He thought that it was impossible for anyone to survive in their surroundings. However, the moment he even had that thought, reality mercilessly smacked him on the face.

Yet, this girl seems a bit dumb. Did she end up hitting her head when she fell down?

“Herbman, this girl is a herbman!” Third Fatty Jin muttered carefully. “We’re truly rich now. Dominate that herbman with all your strength. After we gain that herbman, we’ll not only be able to do whatever we want in the Three Realms, we’ll be able to do the same in the Upper Three Realms!”

Third Fatty Jin glanced over at the girl occasionally as she spoke.

“She’s that strong?”

“Of course!” Third Fatty Jin muttered. “It’s normally very hard to capture herbmen, those old geezers won’t allow themselves to

be caught easily. But this one's different. She has probably never left this valley, so she's as pure as a small white flower. That's very beneficial for us."

"Oh, then?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

"Then we'll capture her. Boss Ye, a life of fortune might just come to us if we take the chance," with that, Third Fatty Jin turned around and gave a signal to Ye Zichen, telling him to adapt to the situation. Then, he walked towards the girl with a pill in his hand.

"Little sister, do you want to eat this?"

Third Fatty Jin heard about giving pills to herbmen from his master. The entirety of an herbman was treasure, so they would naturally be very picky. They were only interested in pills.

And just as he expected, the girl's eyes were filled with interest and her little nose twitched the moment Third Fatty Jin took out the pill.

"Are you really going to give it to me?" her eyes became filled with a desire for the pill.

Third Fatty Jin smirked, "Of course, this pill is for you."

As Third Fatty Jin handed the pill over slowly, the girl blinked and considered taking the pill from his hands. However, the moment Third Fatty Jin smirked, so did the girl.

Bang.

The girl kicked Third Fatty Jin a dozen meters back, then punched and dispersed the seals Third Fatty Jin had placed.

"Hmmp, I can tell that you're not a good guy. Do you think that I'm an idiot and would get tricked?" the girl looked up proudly, however, the desire for the pill in Third Fatty Jin's hands were clearly real.

She really did want to eat that pill!

“This makes no sense!” Third Fatty Jin, who was on the ground, rubbed his bottom in confusion. How did the girl notice my plan?

My plan was great. I set up the formations in secret while I held the pill out.

A herbman like this girl who haven't experienced the world shouldn't know about spiritual formations. Since her attention is on the pill, she wouldn't care about those spiritual formations she doesn't know about.

Then she wouldn't have been able to escape after the spiritual formation was set up!

“You're a baddie, just like those guys before,” the girl pouted like an angry tiger cub.

Third Fatty Jin and Ye Zichen were both shocked...

There was someone who had come here before us.

“Little girl, did someone come to the valley before?” Ye Zichen couldn't help but ask.

“Why should I tell you?” the girl tilted her head with a wrinkle on her nose. “You're friends with that guy. I'm not going to tell anything to a bad guy.”

Ye Zichen chuckled silently, then took out a pill and placed it in his palm.

“I'll give you this candy if you tell me.”

“Hmm...” the girl licked her lips, while desire filled her eyes. However, she forced herself to look away with a snort. “Hmph, you still want to trick me? I'm no fool!”

“I wouldn't,” Ye Zichen chuckled the pill towards the girl.

The girl immediately jumped up to grab the pill, then placed it into her mouth.

A blissful look like that of a kitten's appeared on her face with

her cute dimples and closed eyes.

“You’re a good guy,” the girl looked up at Ye Zichen with a smile. “If I tell you, then can you give me another candy?”

“Of course,” the pill Ye Zichen gave her was merely of the lowest grade. He was able to afford it even if she wanted to eat ten thousand of those per day.

“Then I’ll tell you. About half a month ago, an old man with black clothes came here. He was so mean. He wanted to pull all of my little brothers and sisters away the moment he got here, and tried to capture me by tricking me with candy.”

“Old man in black clothes? Can you be more specific?”

“Mhmm, I think he had a flaming skull on his forehead,” the girl replied.

Ye Zichen frowned, while a person appeared in his mind.

The old man who nearly killed the Great Sage and Yuan Hong in the Demon Realm seemed to have that mark on his forehead.

“What happened after that? Ye Zichen asked nervously. He understood the strength of that man very well, in fact, he was so strong that even the system couldn’t do anything about him.

“I beat him, and he ran away!” the girl giggled. “Hmmp, he was so mean, and tried to bully me. I was angry, so I beat him!”

Chapter 661 – The System's Arrangement

Beat him until he ran away?

Ye Zichen opened his eyes wide and checked out the girl in front of him.

The girl looked very thin, yet she gave off a vibe of a young lady from a traditional family. Her eyes seemed to radiate purity and looked as if she had never been tainted by any worldly affairs.

If this girl really did beat away the old man who even makes the system wary...

Then, just how strong is she!?

“Why are you looking at me like that?” the girl blinked in confusion. Then, she suddenly walked over in front of Ye Zichen and reached out her hand. “Give me candy.”

“Here you go,” he took out a pill and placed it into the girl's hand. Then, he took out another one and waved it in front of her. “Then tell me, where did the old man go after you beat him up till he ran away?”

“He flew away,” the girl pursed his lips and thought about it for a moment. “He found out that he couldn't beat me, so he just flew away from up there without saying anything.”

Ye Zichen frowned at that.

How did that old man leave? There's clearly a natural wind barrier up there that you can't forcefully break through.

Or can Supreme level experts ignore the existence of those?

Dingdong.

The phone in Ye Zichen's pocket rang. He quickly took out his phone and saw that there was still no signal.

It's the system!

He's the only one who would be able to contact me!

Ye Zichen opened the chat app on his phone and saw that it was indeed a message from the system.

System Notification: Congratulations, I heard you fell into the Death Valley.

Ye Zichen's expression instantly grew dark when he saw this.

"I can tell you have a damn smug look on your face. I have no time for that. Hurry up and get me out. There's a wind barrier above, so I can't get out myself."

System Notification: I can't do anything about that.

"Uhm... Can you give me more candy?" the herbgirl walked over and said softly behind Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen turned around and handed her an entire bottle of human-grade recovery pills without thinking,

The girl immediately walked beside him joyously, then sat down to chuck the 'candies' into her mouth one by one.

"Why are you so useless? That old guy from the Demon Realm came here, but he was able to disregard it and leave."

System Notification: The old guy from the Demon Realm? Who are you talking about?

"The old man who hurt the Great Sage and Yuan Hong."

System Notification: How's that possible!? Why did he go over there? How do you know?

"I have a herbgirl beside me, she said that old man wanted to capture her."

System Notification: You have a herberman beside you?

At this moment... the system was actually standing on the edge of the cliff that would lead to the Death Valley. Meanwhile, Fatty Yin also stood beside him with the Eight Formation Origin Chart.

The system's eyebrows were locked together. Starting from a moment that he didn't realize, the world had begun to progress in a direction that he didn't know about.

Both the powerful old man from the Demon Realm and the herbgirl were people he had no recollection of.

"What happened? Did something happen?" Fatty Yin put away the chart. "The person who set up the wind barrier is definitely an expert amongst expert formation grandmasters. My knowledge of formations is only at an amateur level, I'm unable to break through the formation here even with the help of the Eight Formation Origin Chart."

"There's a herbman in the valley."

"Herbman?" Fatty Yin trembled. He edged carefully to the tip of the cliff and looked down at the seemingly bottomless valley. "There's a herbman in the valley? The Ye brat told you?"

"Yeah, I'm talking to him now," the white-shirted man nodded. "The direction the world is going in has already changed. Meeting a herbman is definitely a great news for him."

"Of course, even the super experts from the God Realm and Liches want a herbman by them. Heck, herbman are extremely rare even in the Upper Three Realms. The Ye brat is truly overflowing with luck. He actually managed to bump into a herbman here," Fatty Yin exclaimed. "But... the most important thing right now is for us to get him and the herbman up here."

"He'll definitely be able to come up," the white-shirted man said firmly. "The wind barrier here closes every three months. He'll be able to fly up when it closes, but during these three months, the Three Realms will end up in a complete mess."

The white-shirted man's expression darkened. He could still remember what had happened as clear as if it was just yesterday.

The Immortal Realm attacked the Underworld. The Great Sacred

Emperor Equaling Heaven had to personally suppress the Five Emperors. The Jade Emperor mobilized the Heavenly Court's armies to suppress both sides like a praying mantis, while the Demon Realm attacked right after like oriole behind the mantis, completely catching all three realms off guard.

The Three Realms ended up in turmoil and disaster followed...

"No, I can't let this history repeat itself. I definitely can't!" The white-shirted man bit his lips and looked down to read Ye Zichen's reply.

"Yeah, there is a herbman over here."

"Uhm, hey dude, I'm a very insecure person, can you not just randomly disappear?"

"System, fuck you. I'm seriously worried right now!"

System Notification: The wind barrier in the valley closes every three months. I'll remind you to come out when it closes. Try to improve your own strength as much as possible during these three months. There are plenty of spiritual herbs in the valley, it'll be a lot easier for you to find them with a herbman by you. What you need to do is just to continuously strengthen yourself... Continuously! Got it?"

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth when he saw the message.

Three months.

I have to stay underneath the cliff for three months?

"Is there no way to get out early?"

System Notification: I don't know how that demon got out, but that is the only method I know about.

"Alright, then I'll stay here for three months."

Ye Zichen shrugged. To no surprise, there wasn't any more replies, and the system notifications disappeared.

“F*ck,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes as he watched the messages disappear. However, it was clear that the system had already told him what he needed to know, so he put his phone away. “I guess I’ll make myself at home here.”

“Hehe, what was that in your hands just now?” the girl, who was eating pills beside Ye Zichen giggled. It was clear from her expression that she felt very close to Ye Zichen.

In terms of intimacy level, their level was at least Trusted.

“It’s a fun thing. You want?”

“Nah, I like the candies you gave me more,” with that, the girl tried to pour more pills out of the vial. Then, when she noticed that there were no more, her delicate face frowned as she muttered. “It’s all gone.”

“Here you go,” Ye Zichen took out another vial and chucked it to her without thinking.

“You have to properly improve your relationship with her if you want her to help you find herbs.”

...

“Fatty, are there any portals to the Immortal Region around here?” the system put his phone away as well and turned to Fatty Yin.

“I don’t think so, but I’m not familiar with those guys from the Immortal Realm,” Fatty Yin shrugged. “I’m a supreme from the Yao Realm, how could I have contact with the Immortal Region guys?”

Creak.

The white-shirted man clenched his fists tightly, then gritted his teeth with a squint of his eyes. “It seems like we’re going to have to forcefully tear the space around the Immortal region.”

Chapter 662 – Meeting of the Immortal Region’s Higher Ups

“Chief Martial Uncle, please seek justice for Senior Brother Jin!” Sun Yuanjia, whose body was covered in wounds, knelt outside Great Emperor’s Qingming’s hall, while the injured disciples, who returned with him, all kneeled down behind him.

Their eyes were either filled with tears or with rage.

“What are you lot doing? Chief is in closed cultivation. Just what exactly is this supposed to be!?” An elder of the sect scolded them all angrily.

Sun Yuanjia looked up with a frown, “Martial Uncle Liu. Senior Brother Jin... died in combat.”

“What?” the elder took a step back in shock, while the other elders opened their eyes wide. “Martial Nephew Jin died in combat? Didn’t you just go to help the Underworld clear out wraiths? How could he have died?”

“The mission was going rather smoothly, but right at the very end, the Underworld provided us with false information, wishing ill of us. They made Senior Brother Jin take us to deal with about ten thousand wraiths. The Underworld person promised that the wraiths were not going to be stronger than Earth Immortals, but after we got there, we noticed that even the weakest was of the complete stage of the Earth Immortal level,” Sun Yuanjia pursed his lips and replied with bloodshot eyes and his fists clenched. “If you don’t believe me, ask all the junior brothers behind me!”

“The Underworld wishes ill of us. We should kill them!”

“Senior Brother Jin...”

The rest of the disciples either cursed begrudgingly or wept. None of the elders present were sure of what to do.

Sun Yuanjia took the chance to inch forward, then loudly kowtowed on the ground thrice.

“Chief Martial Uncle, please come out of closed cultivation.”

Bang. Bang. Bang.

“Chief Martial Uncle, please come out of closed cultivation.”

Bang. Bang. Bang.

“Chief Martial Uncle, please come out of closed cultivation.”

Although Sun Yuanjia’s blood had already stained the white bricks of the hall, he continued to repeat the same action over and over again.

Under his lead, the other disciples also copied what he did and kowtowed on the ground.

The surrounding elders tried to stop them, but realized that it was futile in this sort of situation.

Creak.

The door of the hall opened.

Great Emperor Qingming walked out of the hall dressed in a green robe with a tired look on his face. He looked down at the disciples, “What are you doing? Do you still have any respect for the elders and I?”

“Chief Martial Uncle, Senior Brother Jin...”

Great Emperor Qingming raised his hand and slapped Sun Yunjia’s face through the air before the latter could finish.

Ugh.

Sun Yuanjia could only spurt out a large mouthful of blood, then stumbled backwards, only stopping when he hit a pillar.

“Chief Senior Brother.”

The other elders couldn’t help but call out.

Great Emperor Qingming squinted his eyes with a snort, “I think the one who wishes ill of us is you.”

“Chief Senior Uncle, Martial Nephew doesn’t understand,” Sun Yuanjia knelt down on the floor and clenched his chest, then gritted his teeth. “Senior Brother Jin died in battle, he is your disciple. He is the chief disciple of our sect. Martial Nephew does not think that I did anything wrong!”

“Nothing wrong... There were millions of ways you would have handled this, but you just had to go and choose the most extreme one. If you’re going to continue to act so ignorantly, then I can only grant you death,” a huge palm appeared in the air.

The surrounding disciples and elder wanted to speak up, but...

“Who dares to stop me!?”

They all shut their mouths.

“Sun Yuanjia, this sovereign is asking you right now. Are you someone working for the demons? If you answer honestly, then I can allow you to leave as you have contributed to our sect in the past,” Great Emperor Qingming frowned.

Sun Yuanjia laughed like a maniac, “Hahaha, that is hilarious. I, Sun Yuanjia, have been in the sect for over a hundred years, and I’m going to end up getting labeled as a demon spy? This is hilarious, seriously hilarious. Fine, if the head of our sect thinks that I’m a demon spy, then just kill me.”

“Heh, then I will grant you your wish,” the palm in the air descended.

When the palm reached Sun Yuanjia, he laughed, “I accept that Martial Uncle is suspecting me, but I still have to say that the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation also died in combat together with Senior Brother Jin.”

Boom.

The palm shattered.

Great Emperor Qingming rushed over in front of Sun Yuanjia, “Repeat what you said just now again?”

Great Emperor’s Qingming raging spiritual energy pressured Sun Yuanjia, yet, the latter still replied through gritted teeth, “Ye Zichen is the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, right?”

Whoosh.

Great Emperor Qingming instantly disappeared.

The disciples and elders all looked towards the first elder of the inner sect.

“Everyone leave. Take Sun Yuanjia away to rest.”

...

Bang.

Suiren, who was in a beast-hide, smashed the stone table in front of him into smithereens.

“Qingming, are you for real?”

“Those were what the disciples of the inner sect said. I cannot be sure of how accurate it is. But I did leave a mark on the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation before. I have tried to search for it, but could not find it,” Great Emperor Qingming replied with a frown.

Suiren’s expression turned dark, “How do you think we should handle this?”

“Brother Yellow Emperor is of extreme importance to the Immortal Region. We should go and question the Underworld,” said Shun, the Fire Emperor.

“Yes, the Human Sovereign is of crucial importance to us. We don’t have to fight the Underworld, but at the very least, we have to ask them about the it,” Yu, the Earth Emperor, also voiced his opinion.

“Don’t you think that there is something wrong with all this?” the Water Emperor – Yao, couldn’t help but ask. “Why did the Human Sovereign suddenly end up in trouble in these sorts of circumstances? The one who passed us the news was a disciple of our Immortal Region sacred land, while he placed the blame completely on the Underworld. I feel like we should think about everything further.”

“I agree with Brother Yao’s opinion,” said Ku, the Wood Emperor.

“Zhuanxu, what do you think...” Suiren asked.

“What is there to consider?” Zhuanxu looked around. “Ku, the Yellow Emperor is your great grandfather...”

“Uncle, he is merely the reincarnation. What’s more, right now, we shouldn’t...”

“We shouldn’t what!?” Zhuanxu glared. “Even if he is the reincarnation, he is still the Yellow Emperor, he is still your great grandfather. Suiren, since Fuxi and Shennong aren’t here, you are our leader. Tell us what we should do. But in my opinion? Fight! If the Underworld doesn’t help us find the Human Sovereign, then I’m going to fight even if the Great Emperor Qingming faces us in person. I do want to see just how much stronger is an Immortal King compared to us complete stage Human Immortals!”

“The Human Sovereign is of utmost importance to us. Mobilizing our army is too impulsive, but we do need to question them. We’ll do this. Ku, Zhuanxu and I will go to the Underworld. Everyone else remains on guard here. Any objections?” Suiren frowned.

Zhuanxu wanted to speak up, but when he considered that he was going to the Underworld as well, their stance shouldn’t turn too terrible.

“No.”

When the other people all nodded, Suiren ended the meeting.

“Then, that’s it.”

Chapter 663 – Repeat of History

Meanwhile, in the Underworld.

Everything seemed a lot bleaker after the wraith attack. Suiren and co. sat down in the Great Emperor Equaling Heaven's hall and awaited his arrival.

"He's actually putting on airs," Zhu anxu muttered angrily. They have already arrived in the Underworld for more than an hour, his patience had already been worn away.

"Uncle, someone needs to take charge when the Underworld was hit so heavily. We already saw that when we came here, so let's just wait patiently," Ku comforted.

Zhu anxu couldn't help but curse, "Just who's personality did you inherit? My older brother didn't have this sort of meek personality. Back then, when you were the Emperor, you acted strongly as well. Did staying in the Immortal Region all these years cause you to lose your edge?"

"You are too anxious. We need to be more rational when facing situations such as this," Ku maintained his indifferent tone.

Zhu anxu pointed at him angrily, then slowly put his hand down again. "Hmmp, you have to be rational in some situations, but being irrational is better in others."

"Brother Zhu anxu, what happened, why are you so angry?" A chuckle echoed through the hall. Although nobody was there, they knew that the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven had arrived.

"Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven, that's some air you've put on. My bottom is already sore from all the sitting, and you've only just now arrived," Zhu anxu couldn't help but sneer.

"Brother Zhu anxu, why are you acting like this? Didn't you see the chaos that the Underworld is in when you arrived?" the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens smiled. "I do need to control

the situation a bit, right? I hurried over immediately afterwards.”

“Heh, you have so many excuses even though your management of the Underworld is certainly terrible,” Zhuangxu mocked in reply.

“It isn’t really Brother Zhanxu’s place to finger-point at my management of the Underworld, is it?” Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven’s tone turned colder.

Hearing that, Ku immediately spoke up, “Great Emperor, please do not take his words to heart. My uncle didn’t mean anything by it.”

“Whether he meant anything or not is not of my concern. I wonder what did you come to the Underworld for?”

Suiren pushed Zhanxu down before the latter could speak. Instead, he looked towards Ku, and signaled for him to be the one to speak.

“Great Emperor, we came here for the Sovereign,” Ku said calmly.

“Sovereign. What does your Sovereign have to do with the Underworld? What? The reincarnation of the Sovereign passed away, and you are asking me for him? That’s alright, I’ll call the judge over now.”

“Call your f*cking ass,” Zhanxu stood up from his chair and cursed. “You’re the one who f*cked up and died after reincarnating.”

“Zhanxu, I don’t want to mind you because the Immortal Region did mobilize their army to help suppress the wraiths of the Underworld, but don’t get too full of yourself. Even it was Shennong, Fuxi or your uncle Shaohao, they would still need to speak to me courteously. To put it in a worse way, just who the heck are you?”

“Say that again!?”

“Zhanxu,” Suiren frowned, then stood up from his chair. “Great Emperor, Zhanxu’s tone was poor, but you should mind the way you speak as well, right?”

“What about it?” Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens laughed. “Honestly, the only one I think highly of in the Immortal Region is the Yellow Emperor, but he was forced by you guys to go through the cycle of samsara. Both the Jade Emperor and I used several hundreds of thousands of years to reach the Immortal King level. The Yellow Emperor was halfway into the realm in merely a thousand years, but you guys thought that it wasn’t fast enough... Heh, if you like Immortal Kings so much, then why didn’t you go and reincarnate? Isn’t it good for you, as one who’s already half dead, to give it a shot?”

“I lack the talent.”

“Lacking talent is an excuse now?” Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens snickered. “in terms of talent, the Jade Emperor is the one with the worst talent. Let’s be honest, the Immortal Region is just full of some self-righteous, hypocritical and petty people. It truly is a loss for Brother Yellow Emperor to belong to the Immortal Region.”

“Great Emperor, let’s not talk about that shall we?” Suiren suppressed his anger and said calmly. “We have business with you.”

“Zeze, you managed to endure that? That’s impressive. I’ll give you some time because of your endurance. Say it, what is it?”

“The Immortal Region mobilized some people to suppress the wraiths, but the Underworld lied about the information, causing us to suffer huge losses,” Suiren frowned. “What do you have to say about that?”

“King Ksitigarbha told me about that, but my people were right. Wraiths have a unique constitution, meaning that they cannot break through the Earth Immortal level, so there is no point in

even mentioning the Human or Sky Immortal levels. I feel like there is something wrong with your disciple. What's more, I did search for them myself, but did not find any of those so-called 'super wraiths'."

"Then you're saying that a disciple of the Immortal Region was lying?" Suiren asked.

"One side is definitely lying, and I don't think it's my people," Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens smiled.

However, Zhanxu couldn't stand it anymore, "Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven, that's just too much. I'm telling you, the status of the Human Sovereign Yellow Emperor and the chief disciple of Great Emperor Qingming are unknown at this time. The source of everything is your wraiths. The Yellow Emperor is of utmost importance to the Immortal Region. Those were your wraiths, you should take full responsibility for this matter."

"There really is something wrong with you people from the Immortal Region," Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens sneered. "The Yellow Emperor is a saint-like person of the Immortal Region. Yet, when something happened to him, the first thing you guys did was not to go find and rescue him. Rather, you came to criticize me? If you have the time for that, then couldn't you go and find him, or his body, before doing that? You keep on talking about just how important the Yellow Emperor is to you guys, but just what exactly are you doing? You're trying to fault someone? Don't you find that ridiculous?"

"What do you mean?" Zhanxu roared in anger.

"Nothing. I just find you guys rather interesting," Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens snorted. "I can't be bothered with you self-righteous fellows. Please take your leave."

"Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens!"

However, the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens did not

reply anymore.

Zhanxu smashed the table in the room into smithereens, while Suiren's expression turned dark.

“Return to the Immortal Region, send out our armies!”

...

What they did not know was that the first thing the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens did after leaving the hall was talk to King Ksitigarbha.

“The Yellow Emperor's reincarnation seems to be in danger. Ksitigarbha, go and send people out to search for him. The area is approximately within a one thousand five hundred kilometer radius of Maple City.”

“Understood,” King Ksitigarbha left on Diting.

Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens sneered, “What irresponsible people they were.”

...

“You actually going to be able to do it? I can't hold it anymore,” the Eight Formation Origin Chart above Fatty Yin shimmered with a blinding light.

The white-shirted man hacked over and over again on the space ahead.

“Don't worry, I'm going to be done soon.”

“Hurry up, I really can't hold it anymore,” bead-like droplets of sweat flowed down from Fatty Yin's face and onto the floor. At that very moment...

Riiiiippp.

The white-shirted man's longsword tore a hole in the surrounding space. He immediately flicked his arm...

“Let's go,” he grabbed Fatty Yin and entered the spatial crack.

However, when they arrived within the sacred land of the Immortal Region...

“What’s going on?” Fatty Yin looked at the mass of people underneath him in confusion.

The sword in the white-shirted man’s hand disappeared into nothingness. “It seems like I’m still too late. History is about to repeat itself, again.”

Chapter 664 – The Herberman is Mine

“I really didn’t expect this valley to be a land of fortune,” Ye Zichen took a bite out of the juicy fruit in his hand.

The herbgirl stuck by him and occasionally chucked a pill into her mouth.

Although she was only eating normal pills, it was really thanks to her being a spiritual herb herself.

Otherwise, anyone else would have exploded due to all the spiritual pills being eaten.

“Over there,” the girl suddenly raised her hand.

Ye Zichen looked forward and saw a strand of Mandela Grass.

The grass itself was white, like a daikon.

That was a type of herb which will cause people to sleep after ingesting it. During the slumber, the person’s strength will steadily increase. It had rather mild effects, so even spiritual body leveled people could ingest it. At the same time, the increase in strength from it was percentage based, so it was something rather sought after by many Sky Immortal leveled experts.

However, Ye Zichen merely took a glance at a rare herb like that.

“It isn’t all that old for a long time. Let’s leave it.”

During the months he had been in the valley, he had already taken quite a bit of Mandela Grass. Actually, just a few days prior, he had taken one that was nearly a thousand years old, and only woken up after four days of sleep.

When he woke up, he was already of the late-stage Sky Immortal level. For others, every tiny bit of increase in the Sky Immortal level was normally as hard as reaching for the stars, yet, for Ye Zichen...

All he had to do was sleep.

“Oh,” the girl pouted. It has gotten harder and harder for her to earn candies, and when she thought about the remaining few vials of candy in her pocket, they would only last her two more days.

“Never mind, let’s end the search here. We’ve come out for so long already, Fatty’s still waiting at home for us. He’s definitely really bored.” Ye Zichen stretched lazily.

The girl bit her lips and replied unwillingly, “Let’s search a bit more.”

“Lil’ Lorie, you were clearly against finding herbs for me to eat at the start. Why are you even more interested in it than me now?” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but shake his head with a chuckle.

Lorie was the name he gave the girl, and it was settled since she liked the name as well.

Lorie was a pure girl, and everything she thought about could clearly be seen on her face. When Ye Zichen saw her sad face, he immediately knew that she was actually worried about not having enough pills to eat.

“I was thinking that since we already came out, we should bring some back,” Lorie bit her lips and answered pitifully.

Ye Zichen patted her head, then pulled out the strand of Mandela Grass.

“Then we’ll take it back,” with that, he took out ten bottles of vials of recovery pills and handed it to Lorie. “Here’s your commission.”

“Hehe, Ye Zichen, you’re amazing,” Lil’ Lorie put the jade vials carefully in her pocket, then grabbed Ye Zichen’s hand. “C’mon, let’s go home.”

“Didn’t you say that you want to search for a bit longer?”

“No need now, I’ve got enough to eat.”

“Oh you kiddo.”

When the two returned to the herb garden side by side, they found Third Fatty Jin sitting on the ground in a half-dozing state, while the ginseng spirit he had tried to harvest initially stood opposite him.

They stared at each other without uttering a single word.

“Fatty.”

“Boss Ye, you finally returned. I feel like I’m going to die,” Third Fatty Jin walked over quickly, while Lorie skipped over to the ginseng spirit’s side and occasionally gave it a pill.

“What did you guys manage to get this time?” Third Fatty Jin received a cigarette from Ye Zichen and asked after puffing up a mouthful of smoke.

“What else could we have gotten? We can’t go too far since the herb garden is here, and we’ve already harvested most of the spiritual herbs around here already,” Ye Zichen leaned on a boulder and looked up at the cliff above. “How long have we been here for?”

“There’s no actual day or night here, so how would I know?” Third Fatty Jin shrugged and smiled wryly. “I wonder when we can get out. Oh, speaking of that, I was rather annoyed when I stayed in the sect before, but now I realize that staying in the sect is an amazing thing.”

“Your sect might be going insane since the chief disciple is nowhere to be found...” Ye Zichen smiled.

“Not really, that’ll be more of the case for you,” Third Fatty Jin put out his cigarette and leaned on a boulder. “Your friends must be really worried, and it’s the same with the Heavenly Court and Underworld guys. Boss Ye, how did you actually end up with them?”

“It’s a long story,” Ye Zichen shook his head, then took out his phone. While in the valley, he would check his phone every few

days and even proactively called out to the system.

However, there was never any response.

“Who!?” Lorie’s vigilant call suddenly sounded out in the herb garden.

Ye Zichen and Third Fatty Jin stood up straight and looked around.

Lorie was frowning heavily, facing the herb garden, while two black-robed people stood in front of her.

How did someone appear so suddenly? Did the wind barrier up there close?

Ye Zichen lifted his hand, then looked at his phone and saw that the system didn’t actually send him any messages.

“Senior, this is the herbman you talked about?” the slightly hoarse voice asked in a questioning manner.

The person beside him nodded, “Yes, a herbman. This herbman is on the level of a herb king, her strength is above mine. However, the higher grade the herbman, the more effective the herb is. If I can capture her, then it would be great news for the Demon Realm.”

“Then, what do you need me to do?”

“Wow, it’s you again,” Lorie frowned, then put her hands on her waist. “I only just beat you away the other time. You actually came back.”

“There’s no helping it, you’re a herbman, so even if you chase me away ten thousand times, I will still return,” the demon elder smiled. “Come with me. I will leave the herbs in your herb garden alone.”

“Why should I leave with you? I don’t like you at all,” Lorie pouted angrily. “Leave now, if you don’t, then I’m going to hit you again.”

With that, Lorie raised her fists. Yet, although she was threatening the other person, it didn't feel like that at all.

“Yiyun, set up the formations.”

“Understood,” one of the black-robed men stepped forward and threw several shimmering stones onto the ground in front of him.

The old man beside him smiled at Lorie. “You still have time to consider right now. If you come with me, then I can provide you with limitless pills every day, but if I capture you, then that's a different story. Your entire body will become an ingredient for the Demon Realm.”

“You're making a mistake here,” Ye Zichen walked out from behind the boulder with a cigarette in his mouth. “She's mine now. You really should see who the heck you are when trying to cause trouble here.”

Chapter 665 – Who can do anything to me!?

“There are actually other people here?” The sudden appearance of Ye Zichen and Third Fatty Jin had clearly surprised the elder. He turned back to look at them, then raised his eyebrows with a smile. “Child, were you talking to me?”

“Indeed,” Ye Zichen nodded, then smiled in a manner full of ridicule. “Who else would I be talking to? We’re the only ones here.”

Then, he nodded towards Su Yiyun, whose expression seemed to have changed under the hood.

That was when the fingers on his right hand began to tremble. He saw Su Yiyun’s face underneath the hood.

Although Su Yiyun was only a year older than Ye Zichen, his face was already covered in wrinkles, and his long hair already turned a silvery white.

It was clear that he had already expended too much of his life force. Even though they were now on opposing sides, Ye Zichen still couldn’t help but wonder just what Su Yiyun had gone through.

“Yiyun, it seems like you two know each other,” the elder smiled when he noticed Ye Zichen’s gaze on Su Yiyun.

“Senior Qiu, what are you saying? Ever since I had joined the Demon Realm, I have become one of its people. Acquaintances from the past are nothing to me. I only care for the Demon Realm. Everything else is meaningless,” Su Yiyun said without any emotion in his voice. In fact, his indifferent tone sent a chill down everyone’s spines.

“You have the right idea, and that’s especially true with your skills in formations. When you reach the Upper Three Realms, even His Majesty would definitely place great importance in you.

God Realm, Yao Realm, Liches... The ones who will unite the Six Realms will definitely be we demons,” the elder revealed a proud expression as he spoke.

Su Yiyun also nodded without saying anything else.

“Ye Zichen, he’s the one I told you about,” Lorie pointed towards the demon elder.

Ye Zichen nodded. After he had heard about that mark, he was certain that it was this old monster from the Demon Realm.

What’s more, since even the system couldn’t do anything against the old man, Ye Zichen was sure that old monster was definitely going to be trouble.

“Child, due to Yiyun, I can ignore your disrespect earlier. Leave, this herbman is not yours to have” the elder looked up.

However, Ye Zichen squinted his eyes with a smile and walked over beside Lorie, “I think not.”

At the same time, he also called out to the system repeatedly in his mind.

Since both the old man and the system were from the Upper Three Realms, the system was the only one who could even fight the old man.

Wait, no...

There’s Lorie now as well.

“Why are you talking like that? I told you I’m not going with you. If you are still going to act so outrageously, then I’m going to hit you,” Lorie waved her fists and pouted.

The truth was that the elder was rather wary of Lorie. After all, he had been beaten up by Lorie the previous time he was there.

Whoosh.

At that moment, someone appeared in the sky above them.

“Senior Qiu Hai, Lord Black Dragon instructed me to tell you that... Ye Zichen, why are you here!?” Gu Li descended from the air with a frown, then looked towards Ye Zichen again with a look of disdain. What’s more, his meaningful smile became even more apparent when he looked towards Su Yiyun.

“What did Black Dragon instruct you to tell me?” Qiu Hai was rather displeased. He’s chit chatting with someone else in my presence? Is he even taking me seriously!?”

“Ah, it’s like this,” Gu Li turned around once more, then replied respectfully. “The Immortal Region, Underworld and Heavenly Court are locked in an endless fight. Lord Black Dragon said that it is the right time to demolish them all together.”

“What!?” Ye Zichen’s face was covered in shock.

Third Fatty Jin’s eyes were also filled with fear, “Fight!?”

“Ye Zichen, why are you still here? It’s not like you at all. The outside world is in endless combat. I heard that you’re rather close with the other realms, why are you able to stay here like this? With your personality, shouldn’t you be rushing over to save them?” Gu Li had a mocking smile on his face.

Ye Zichen and Third Fatty Jin looked at each other, “How’s that possible!?”

“Didn’t you know?” Gu Li pursed his lips. “Oh, isn’t this is interesting.”

With that, he looked back towards Qiu Hai, “Senior, this brat is the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor. He has disrupted our plans several times. If you are in a good mood, you can consider capturing him as well.”

“Gu Li!” Su Yiyun said darkly.

“What? Does Master Su have anything to say to me? Oh, actually, I would have forgotten if you didn’t call out to me. Lord Black Dragon told you to immediately return to the Demon Realm.” Gu

Li's expression was covered in endless mockery.

Su Yiyun clenched his fists tightly under the cover of his robe, then glared fiercely at Gu Li with his blurred, but blood red eyes. "Senior Qiu Hai, since Lord Black Dragon has important business with us, then let us return. We can take the herbman here for ourselves at any time, but the chance to conquer the Three Realms will not wait. What do..."

"We will always have the chance to do that. What time is even unsuitable for us to conquer the Three Realms with Senior Qiu Hai here?" Gu Li laughed.

However, nobody expected...

Clap.

Su Yiyun grabbed Gu Li by the neck, and the veins popping up on his arms was clear that Su Yiyun was truly angry. "Gu Li, stop challenging my bottom line. You already know that I don't have a good temper."

Su Yiyun slowly lifted Gu Li off the ground, while Gu Li's face turned red as he repeatedly kicked his legs in an attempt to get free.

"Yiyun, what are you doing?"

"Heh," Su Yiyun slammed Gu Li down to the ground with a cold snort. "I don't like fighting over things, but it doesn't mean that I don't know how to do that. I will give Qiu Hai face and will let you go alive this time, but if you challenge my bottom line again, then I don't mind sending you into the cycle of samsara once more. You can try me if you want."

"You resisted it?" Gu Li laughed mockingly as he crawled up from the ground.

Su Yiyun glared at him solemnly, "You truly want to die?"

"Master Su is taking it too seriously. I haven't lived enough of my

puny life yet, so how could I wish for death. But you, since we're afraid of Senior Qiu Hai, aren't you afraid that..."

"What do I need to fear?" Su Yiyun's eyes were instantly filled with cold pride. He looked indifferently at Qiu Hai with colorless eyes that seemed to tremble even Qiu Hai's heart. "Do you dare to do anything against me?"

"Su Yiyun," Qiu Hai's expression changed. He couldn't understand why he actually felt a bit of fear when facing Su Yiyun. "Do you know what you're doing?"

"Do I not?" Su Yiyun pulled down his hood, completely shocking everyone.

His body was filled with strange chaotic runes that seemed to have a vague connection with each other.

Then suddenly, all of them levitated off his body.

They floated into the air and became a long chain.

"You..." Qiu Hai was dumbstruck.

Su Yiyun smiled indifferently, then snorted, "Which of you can do anything to me!?"

Chapter 666 – Two Immortal Kings

As all of the runes linked together in a chain, Su Yiyun's youth seemed to return. His ancient-like face gradually grew younger, while his long, silvery hair became black once more.

The chains of runes wrapped themselves around him twice, while the runes glowed with a faint grey light.

“Senior Qiu Hai, you are indeed a mighty Sky Supreme from the Upper Three Realms, but the you here is merely a Body Double. There are some things you should not stick your hand into,” Su Yiyun squinted his eyes, which let out a dark light. “Ye Zichen's life is mine. Even if he were to be killed, it would be by me, understand?”

Qiu Hai felt a chill in his heart when he heard Su Yiyun's certain tone. Thus, in order to maintain his honor, he nodded calmly. “Master Su has already understood primordial formations, even your position in the Upper Three Realms will certainly be no lower than my own. Let us do as Master Su said.”

“That's for the best,” Su Yiyun twitched his mouth and snorted coldly, then turned back and walked towards Gu Li.

He grabbed Gu Li by the collar and stared straight into Gu Li's eyes with his ice cold eyes. “Stop provoking me. Understood?”

“Master Su, since Senior Qiu Hai said that already, then I will naturally have to give you face,” Gu Li maintained his smile. It was clear that he didn't not fear Su Yiyun at all, instead the smile seemed more to be a meaningful and mocking one.

Ye Zichen and co. all looked towards the trio with great vigilance. They knew that demons were crafty, so they could be planning something.

Thus, although the ones from the Demon Realm seemed to be fighting amongst themselves, Ye Zichen and co. still did not dare to

let down their guard.

“Then, let us return to the Demon Realm,” Su Yiyun waved his right hand. A crack in space appeared in the valley. Qiu Hai and Gu Li both walked in silently, while Su Yiyun did the same after turning around to glance at Ye Zichen.

For some reason, Ye Zichen felt a bit of heartache when he saw Su Yiyun’s gaze.

It was as if Su Yiyun’s eyes were filled with endless reluctance and unwillingness.

Ye Zichen did not know why Su Yiyun would reveal such an expression to him. That was something that only Su Yiyun knew himself. Only he would know just what he would face when he return to the Demon Realm.

More importantly, he had used up a lot of lifeforce to forcefully shatter the primordial runes, then let them take form.

He had already used a lot of his lifeforce just to study the primordial formation, and now that he forcefully shattered the runes, he really didn’t have much time left to him.

As Su Yiyun stood in front of the spatial crack, he suddenly formed ten-odd finger incantations.

Then, he headed into the spatial crack. When the crack disappeared, Ye Zichen and co. suddenly noticed that there was a new defensive formation in front of the herb garden.

“Ol’ Three, just what were you thinking?” YE Zichen frowned and glanced at the place where the spatial crack had been.

At that moment, his phone rang.

System Notification: The wind barrier has opened. Hurry up and come out.

Finally. However, Ye Zichen still asked with a frowned, “I just met the guys from the Demon Realm again. They said that the

Three Realms are involved in infighting. What's going on?"

System Notification: Long story. I'll tell you in detail when you come out.

"Alright, I'll go up right now."

System Notification: I'll wait for you by the cliff.

Ye Zichen returned his phone to his pocket, then looked up with a worried expression. Third Fatty Jin also had a similar expression on his face as he pondered about the infighting.

He could not understand. Why are the Three Realms fighting?

"Fatty, let's prepare to go back."

Ye Zichen stretched out his three pairs of wings.

Third Fatty jin nodded, then walked along beside him.

Lorie bit her lips and asked with an expression that revealed a reluctance to separate, "Are you leaving?"

"Yeah, it's time for us to leave," Ye Zichen nodded, then rubbed Lorie's head. "What? You're worried that you won't have enough candy? Here, I'll give them all to you."

With that, Ye Zichen withdrew his entire pill stock from the Treasure Chest, essentially forming a hill right there on the ground. "These candies should last you a long time."

"I don't want the candies," Lorie shook her head. "I want leave this valley with you."

"That's no good," Ye Zichen refused without thinking. "The outside world is in an intense fight. You have no experience outside, thus making you appear like an idiotic cute and naïve girl. You're going to help whoever sells you out count how much you were sold for! What's more, you're the queen amongst your fellow herbmen here, what if you get captured?"

"I'll just follow you then," Lorie pursed her lips and looked at Ye

Zichen seriously. "I'll just follow along by your side from now on and do what you tell me to. I'll listen to you. That's fine, right? Also, what if that old man comes to kidnap me again?"

Lorie frowned, putting on a pitiful look. Ye Zichen could choose to ignore everything else, but her final sentence did cause him to change his mind about taking her with him.

Yeah, what if that old demon comes for her again?

"Boss Ye, let Lorie follow us out. Although the outside is in a mess right now. Lorie is definitely a lot stronger than we are in terms of protecting herself as a herb king," Third Fatty Jin added.

Ye Zichen hesitated, then rubbed Lorie's head, "Then let's head out together.

He reached out to hold Lorie by her shoulder to start flying out, but Lorie shook her head, "Wait a moment, let me pick up all my candy."

...

"The one who left this formation is definitely a powerhouse from the primordial times," the white-robed man stood on the side of the cliff and sighed heavily. "This heaven-barring formation is actually capable of separating this valley from the Three Realms. It's impossible for anyone without peak spiritual formation knowledge to actually set it up."

"If you have the time to comment, you might as well wonder how we're supposed to explain everything to him when he gets here?" Fatty Yin shook his head with a smile.

At that very moment, a blinding pillar of light blazed in the north-west direction of Maple City.

The light was of a rainbow color and celestial music seemed to echo in the air.

Everybody bowed towards the ray of light.

“An Immortal King,” Fatty Yin looked towards the direction where the light had originated from. “This Immortal King should be near Mount Biluo. Could one of the yao kings in Mount Biluo... No, it should be that lucky kid who inherited Mount Supreme.”

“Mhmm,” the white-robed man nodded. “It should be him. Everything is going according to my script.”

But, at that very moment...

Deafening celestial music rang out, and another blinding rainbow-colored pillar of light landed beside the white-robed man.

Fatty Yin raised his eyebrows, “Another Immortal King!?”

Chapter 667 – Timing

“Senior Qiu Hai, you have finally returned,” Black Dragon welcomed Qiu Hai back with a warm smile, while countless demon elites stood behind him along with the Twelve Demon Sovereigns.

The current situation of the Three Realms was an opportunity for them to completely topple the power structure in the Three Realms.

“The elites have all gathered here, and the abyssal have moved out. All we lack now is a person to take command, and since you are a reputed senior from the Demon Realm, the command is naturally yours to take if it pleases you,” Black Dragon repeatedly uttered flattering words.

However, Qiu Hai was not in the mood for that at all.

Su Yiyun, Gu Li and Qiu Hai had a strange atmosphere surrounding them.

Su Yiyun had a cold look on the upper section of his face, while the robe covering the bottom half made it impossible to discern his expression.

Gu Li wore a mocking and meaningful smile on his face while he looked between Su Yiyun and Qiu Hai. All he wanted to do was watch the show. He had never actually expected Su Yiyun to return to the Demon Realm alongside him and Qiu Hai.

It’s all up to Qiu Hai now. I wonder how this old guy is going to deal with what happened in the Valley of Death.

“Senior Qiu Hai.”

“Mhmm,” Qiu Hai looked back, while an uncaring look appeared in his eyes. “What were you saying just now?”

“We are awaiting your command. The Three Realms should be in a rather huge uproar and starting to fight amongst themselves

now, should we...”

“Then we’ll do as you said,” Qiu Hai nodded indifferently. “But ignore giving me the command. I’m not worried with you in charge, after all, you have been in command for some time.”

A look of hesitation flashed across Black Dragon’s eyes.

Seeing that, Gu Li chuckled, “Senior Qiu might be a bit tired. Lord Black Dragon, please don’t think about it so much. Master Su, am I right?”

“Hmm?” Su Yiyun looked up with squinted eyes, while his dark pupils radiated hints of threat.

Black Dragon glanced at the trio in confusion for a while, then finally called out sullenly, “What happened while you three were gone?”

...

Dazzling rainbow colored light illuminated the valley. Ye Zichen was also rather shocked by the pillar of light. After all, it landed right on him.

As he flapped his wings and landed on the cliff, both the white-robed man and Fatty Yin looked at him in shock.

“Ye Brat, you’re an Immortal King now?”

“I am?” Ye Zichen also looked up towards the pillar of rainbow-colored light in confusion.

I did eat a lot of spiritual herbs in the valley during the last three months, but I’m only of the late-stage Sky Immortal level right now. I’m a bit off from the complete stage Sky Immortal level.

What’s more, judging on my past experience, this light should change my body in some way, but I don’t feel anything?

It can’t be Third Fatty Jin either, he’s just a tag-along and is even weaker than me.

Wait, could it be...

“Ahh, this feels great,” Lorie leaned back with a giggle. Her child-like body seemed to gradually mature while bathing in the holy light.

The naivety on her face begun to lessen, and her delicate face became even more mesmerizing.

“Lil’ Lorie,” Ye Zichen was only shocked for a split-second before accepting what was going on. She could beat up that old man in the valley, so she’s naturally of the Immortal King level or higher.

Both the white-robed man and Fatty Yin also nodded. However, they couldn’t help but feel a bit of disappointment in their hearts.

Ye Zichen isn’t the Immortal King...

“I didn’t expect this Heaven-Barring Formation to be able to hide one’s strength. It seems like the girl is at least at the level of a Supreme,” the white-robed man shook his head with a smile.

Ye Zichen glanced at the rainbow-colored light at a distant, “Immortal King?”

“Qiu Yuan should have completely inherited everything the elder who left Mount Supreme behind left him, so he has managed to ascend to the Immortal King level,” the white-robed man smiled.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Doesn’t that mean that the Three Realms now have four Immortal Kings? Seriously... I, the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation, clearly dedicated myself fully towards it, but I couldn’t become the third...”

“That’s normal, the ley line has not yet surfaced. It’s impossible for anyone to become an Immortal King without someone forcing the power to him, or being a natural supreme like the girl.”

“Fine then,” Ye Zichen chuckled helplessly. “How long is she going to last in this state?”

“That’ll depend on how much her body can hold. Reaching the

Immortal King level in the God Realm basically means that you are halfway to the Supreme level. Anybody of any level associated with Supreme will use divine energy instead. The purpose of the holy light is to transform the celestial spiritual energy within their bodies into divine energy. The more her body can hold, the longer she'll be bathed in the light," the white-robed man explained in detail.

Ye Zichen nodded, then noticed that his phone was vibrating violently.

He took out his phone, and noticed that there were 999+ unread messages.

Most of the messages were about the Heavenly Court and Underworld searching for him, while there were 99+ messages from Yang Jian and the Great Sage.

There were also several dozen messages from other deities. It was clear that they were very worried about him during the time that he was missing.

Just as he wanted to reply, he noticed that several dozen messages appeared in a new group.

Yang Jian: The Jade Emperor has already ordered us to move out nine times. Although I haven't faced the Jade Emperor, I've continuously told the messenger that I need to see the token, but this isn't going to last.

God of Thunder: Same here.

Nezha: My father has already turned off his phone. He said that the Three Realms are originally a family, he doesn't want to send out his troops to hurt our kin, since that'll only allow the demons to take advantage of us.

God of Fortune: Indeed. I've been rather troubled by the war funds recently.

Yang Jian: @Old Lord Taishang, how about you go and advise

him as one of the Three Pure Ones?

Old Lord Taishang: The Jade Emperor is already dedicated to this. He kept on saying that this is his chance to unite the world. All of the great emperors of the four directions have messaged him as well. It really looks like they're going to do it. I'm only one of the Three Pure Ones, and I doubt it'll work even if I was his father.

Yang Jian: F*ck, the messenger is here at my doorsteps again. What should I do?

God of Thunder: Get your wife to talk to him. Tell her to say that you're not here. We have to stay calm and wait for Sky Sovereign to come back to handle this. He'll definitely have a way.

Canopy Marshal: But does anyone know where he is?

The group turned silent. Ye Zichen read the messages once more with a frown, then looked up and saw the white-robed man looking at him.

“What did the Heavenly Court people say?”

“Don't care about that. I want to know what happened with the Three Realms,” Ye Zichen stared at him. “Why are they fighting?”

“The Yellow Emperor's reincarnation is missing, the Immortal Region's higher ups want an explanation from the Underworld. The Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens is proud and that angered the Immortal Region people. So they sent out their army against the Underworld's in rage. The Underworld has been resisting, and the Heavenly Court is taking advantage of that. It's that simple,” the white-robed man replied casually.

Ye Zichen frowned even further. “I'm back now. Hurry up and take me to the Immortal Region. I need to tell them to stop fighting.”

“Why stop their fighting?” the white-robed man smiled mysteriously. “Isn't this the best time to lay out a trap?”

Chapter 668 – Retreat in order to advance

The white-robed man's words immediately made Ye Zichen realize that everything wasn't as simple as he thought.

He looked towards the white-robed man in confusion. However, before he could speak up, Fatty Yin chuckled, "Do you really think that he would allow the Three Realms to fight amongst themselves?"

"Then..." Ye Zichen hesitated for a moment. Judging from the chat just now, it was clear that they were fighting.

Otherwise, the Jade Emperor wouldn't have gathered the great emperors of the four directions and told Yang Jian and co. to move out.

"Stop hesitating and worrying. With this guy here, the Three Realms won't actually start fighting," Fatty Yin patted Ye Zichen's shoulder as he spoke mysteriously with a smile. "But this guy has seriously tired me out. I've been running around doing errands for him, so much so that my legs are turning into sticks."

"What's going on? Can you tell me so that I can stop worrying?" Ye Zichen frowned.

The white-robed man smile, "You'll understand when the time comes. Alright, let's wait for this girl's blessing to end. She might even be able to give the demons a surprise."

...

"What happened?" Lord Black Dragon looked at Su Yiyun and co. with a frown. He already noticed that something he didn't know about definitely happened between them.

Su Yiyun maintained his cold and silent look, while Qiu Hai was his senior from the Demon Realm, so Black Dragon did not dare to ask him.

Thus, he set his gaze upon Gu Li, then interrogated, “Gu Li, you explain.”

“Lord Black Dragon, you truly know how to trouble someone,” Gu Li pursed his lips and smiled, then swept his gaze meaningfully over Su Yiyun and Qiu Hai. “You told me to bring Senior back, so I did. I don’t know anything else.”

“You don’t want to say it?” Black Dragon said darkly.

“No, it’s just that I don’t dare. I have always valued my life. I had better stay silent at times like this, otherwise, what will I do about my fragile life if I offend someone?” Gu Li smiled. Anyone could tell that he was signaling to someone in the room.

“Then are you not afraid of offending me?” the moment Black Dragon said that, an apologetic smile surfaced on Gu Li’s face.

“Lord Black Dragon, you might not like to hear me say this, but... I really am not worried about you. Although I’m just a small fry in the Demon Realm. You... can’t really do anything about me.”

“Gu Li, that’s simply too much!” one of the Twelve Demon Sovereigns said angrily.

Gu Li looked in his direction, then picked his ear, while his gaze turned menacing, “You’re seeking death!”

Dong.

The one who had spoken up instantly fell down, while a spot on his chest turned blackened and charred.

“You really think too much of yourself. Yet, you’re nothing in my eyes.”

The demon sovereign’s expression was filled with shock.

Gu Li smiled, then hooked his arm around Su Yiyun’s shoulder, “What do you think about my performance?”

“Heh,” Su Yiyun chuckled coldly.

The rest of the Demon Sovereigns stepped forward, while Gu Li looked at them provokingly with a smile, “What? You want to fight me here?”

“Gu Li, that’s enough!” Su Yiyun said calmly.

Gu Li shrugged, “They did it first. Master Su, you should be on my side. You know, in some ways, you are on the same side.”

“I said enough!” Su Yiyun’s tone radiated his impatience. He turned towards Black Dragon and bowed deeply. “Lord Black Dragon, I ask for punishment.”

The scene had put Black Dragon in a rather terrible mood. He was always the cautious type, so he would think about a lot of things just from small hints.

Gu Li’s resistance and words instantly caused Black Dragon to become a lot more wary of Su Yiyun and Gu Li.

“Master Su, why would you do so?” Black Dragon asked in confusion.

“I have always hidden something from you. Although I belong to the Demon Realm, I am still unable to put my past behind me. One example would be the Yellow Emperor you’ve been wanting to capture,” Su Yiyun’s words shocked everyone.

Li Min’e opened her eyes wide upon hearing those words.

What’s he saying that? That’s just seeking death!

Li Min’e quickly ran over to Su Yiyun’s side, then bowed towards Black Dragon apologetically. “Lord Black Dragon, Yiyun has been rather tired from all the formation research. Please don’t mind what he just said.”

“Min’e, no need to defend me,” Su Yiyun grabbed Li Min’e by her arm and shook his head before dragging her behind him. Then, he turned back towards Black Dragon. “Lord Black Dragon, I, Su Yiyun, will never act as a petty villain. Ye Zichen is my brother, I

can't possibly forget about it. I won't deny that everything I did before was just a façade. All of the curses and damage I did to him, those were all me trying to protect him."

"Master Su, do you know what you're saying?" Black Dragon's gaze turned even more dark, while clenching his fists.

"I know exactly what I'm saying, but Lord Black Dragon has been very nice to me. I don't want to hide it from you. Actually, Senior Qiu Hai and I met Ye Zichen in the Valley of Death just now."

"Why was he there?" Black Dragon was greatly confused.

"Yeah, why? I didn't expect him to be there either. Gu Li wanted senior Qiu Hai to capture him, but Ye Zichen is my dear friend, I didn't want to see him harmed, so I let him go. That's what you wanted to hear about. Su Yiyun maintained a calm expression. "That's my betrayal towards the Demon Realm. I won't deny that. I have returned to put an end to all that. If you are willing to continue to take me in, then I, Su Yiyun, will do everything in my ability to help you. If you want to execute me, then do it."

With that, Su Yiyun put down his guard, closed his eyes, while he let his hands fall to his sides.

Li Min'e's face was instantly covered in nervousness. The moment Su Yiyun finished, she started to defend him. "Lord Black Dragon, Su Yiyun definitely has no intention of betraying the Demon Realm. He just treasures his relationships a lot, but isn't that what you admire about him?"

To everybody's surprise, even the other Demon Sovereigns and demons in high positions began to do the same as Li Min'e.

"Lord Su is of great use to the Demon Realm. Please have mercy on him due to everything he has accomplished before."

However, that was of no use, since the final decision rested on Black Dragon.

Unbeknownst to all, Gu Li was on the verge of breaking down in

laughter.

He nodded in his head repeatedly, and silently praised Su Yiyun.

That was close. I didn't expect this guy who has nothing special about him, to actually be capable on such moves.

Retreat in order to advance. That's impressive!

Chapter 669 – Qiu Yuan's Strength

The light faded and the music ended.

Qiu Yuan stood with a calm expression in Mount Supreme's great hall. After receiving Mount Supreme's inheritance, he had become someone who stands at the top of the pyramid in the Lower Three Realms.

Yet, he could only bow apologetically towards the statue in the depths of Mount Supreme.

“Senior Duan Gu, I am very sorry. Even though I gained your inheritance, it cannot change my opinion.”

There was nobody else in the hall, so it would seem like Qiu Yuan was merely talking to himself, but soon, a long sigh sounded out.

“No worries, my abilities have already been passed onto you. It is your choice to do what you want with them. I have no right to intervene.”

“Senior is just. This junior will never forget it,” Qiu Yuan bowed deeply towards the hall once again, then walked out.

The moment he left the hall, everyone searching for their fortune within Mount Supreme were also teleported out of Mount Supreme.

They looked at each other in confusion. Then, Bai Hai, who had come from the God Realm, smiled softly while looking at Mount Supreme, which is gradually fading away. “The master of it has come out, the fortune has ended. Let us take our leave.”

A lot of people revealed a look of pity when they heard his words. All of them were either people who didn't gain anything from Mount Supreme or those who are greedy for more. However, regardless of how they felt, they were unable to change the fact that Mount Supreme was going to fade away.

Bai Hai smiled when he saw their expressions. Then, he walked beside Bian Tianrui, “Brother Bian.”

“Don’t show me that face,” Bian Tianrui was rather annoyed. He was one of the first to enter Mount Supreme, and had stayed there for several months. Yet, he didn’t even get a plain divine artifact.

He descended with a mission, and if he were to return empty handed, he would definitely get punished.

“Brother Bian, why are you like that? Did you not get anything?” Bai Hai smiled. “I suppose that’s the case. Brother Bian, I wish you the best of luck. The Four Direction Palace is not like the other places. I do know that Lord Bi’an has a terrible temper.”

“Don’t show me that smug,” Bian Tianrui said darkly. He naturally knew Bi’an have a terrible temper. No matter what, he is the Seventh Highness of the Four Direction Palace. The new highness is being favored, and he asked me to come down because of that.

He promised to bring back at least three treasures, but now...

“Young Master, you’ve finally come out,” Iron Bull ran over.

He had been circling Mount Supreme while Bian Tianrui was within searching for treasure.

“Iron Bull,” Bian Tianrui revealed a joyous look. Then, he looked around and smirked. “It seems like my fortune has arrived.”

With that, he chuckled, and pointed at the surrounding people, “Hand over the treasures you got from within Mount Supreme, otherwise, die!”

Everyone was shocked. Bian Tianrui sneered.

“Brother Bian, why do you do this?” Bai Hai shook his head with a sigh.

Bian Tianrui hooked his finger, “Don’t try that with me. Hand over what you found. I know you brought people down here as

well, but are you sure that whoever you brought would be able to match Iron Bull?”

“General Iron Bull is feared everywhere. I cannot be sure.”

“Then hand it over,” Bian Tianrui smiled fearlessly, then eyed the others before turning to Iron Bull. “Tell them to hand over at least one treasure each. If they don’t... kill them.”

“No problem,” Iron Bull walked over and reached out his hand.

However, the surrounding people naturally wouldn’t do as Bian Tianrui said. After all, they risked their lives to gain the treasures of Mount Supreme.

“Why should we give them to you? Don’t make a mistake, everyone here are reputed in the Immortal Region. We have already messaged our clan’s seniors to come and get us.”

“You speak too much,” Bian Tianrui gave Iron Bull a cue.

Iron Bull immediately reached towards the young man’s head.

His strength was definitely enough to completely crush the young man’s head.

“Sire, what are you trying to do?”

At that moment, Qiu Yuan appeared before the young man and stopped Iron Bull’s right hand.

Bian Tianrui’s eyes lit up when he saw Qiu Yuan, “Iron Bull, get him. Make him spit out all of Mount Supreme’s treasures.”

“You’re trying to use force?” Qiu Yuan smiled, causing his formerly meek body to immediately radiate a terrifying pressure.

Iron Bull frowned, then heard Bian Tianrui roar loudly, “Unseal!”

Boom.

A series of runes floated off Iron Bull’s body, then shattered. Iron Bull’s eyes turned blood red, while raging wings swirled around

him, causing the surrounding people to be unable to open their eyes.

Yet, Qiu Yuan merely smiled calmly.

A sword appeared in his hand. It was a sword so brilliant that it even moved Bian Tianrui's heart.

No need to grab them all. My mission is complete just with this sword!

“Iron Bull!”

Iron Bull charged towards Qiu Yuan with a loud roar. The latter merely tapped the ground and leaped up. As his sword connected with Iron Bull's arm, it caused a series of spark to fly up into the air.

“Interesting,” Qiu Yuan squinted his eyes. The long sword immediately became surrounded with flame and lightning.

“Thunderflame Sword. It's the Thunderflame Sword!” Bian Tianrui looked over with a heated gaze. “Iron Bull, grab his sword!”

Iron Bull charged over. Qiu Yuan leisurely took a step backwards, then hacked his sword down onto Iron Bull's arm.

Iron Bull wailed in pain.

Bian Tianrui immediately clenched his fist, but felt someone pat his shoulder.

“Bai Hai.”

“No need to look anymore. Iron Bull has already lost,” Bai Hai shook his head with a smile.

Bian Tianrui squinted his eyes in suspicion, then said angrily, “What are you saying?”

“He's the one who gained the inheritance of Mount Supreme. Is this the limit of his strength? Iron Bull has already opened all three

layers of his seals, but look at how Qiu Yuan is acting,” Bai Hai indicated towards Qiu Yuan.

Bian Tianrui looked over, then realized...

Qiu Yuan was still maintaining a faint smile on his face the entire time.

Iron Bull is someone who's able to fight equally with several Sky Immortal experts without undoing any seals, and every single seal undone would increase his strength by twenty percent or so, but he was still no match for Qiu Yuan with all three seals undone.

Just how strong is Qiu Yuan right now!?

An Earth Immortal?

“I'm heading back now. Brother Bian, if you are worried about being punished after heading back, then I do have an idea that might help you,” Bai Hai smiled.

Bian Tianrui immediately asked, “Please.”

Chapter 670 – Before the War I

“Brother Bian, aren’t you just worried about your life after you return?” Bai Hai smiled.

Bian Tianrui didn’t want to admit it, but when he felt Bai Hai’s piercing gaze, he hesitated, then nodded his head wryly.

“Brother Bian, it seems like your position in the Four Direction Palace is truly...” Bai Hai smirked.

Bian Tianrui frowned with a snort, “That’s none of your business.”

“Brother Bian, there is no need for you to act like this,” Bai Hai took out a fan from somewhere and used it to fan himself. He maintained a calm expression with a meaningful smile on his face even though Iron Bull and Qiu Yuan’s fight radiated spiritual energy which fluttered his clothes. “Brother Bian, you only have to do a simple task if you want to stay alive.”

Bian Tianrui frowned even more. Then he finally refused without even thinking after Bai Hai finished his suggestion, “How could I? Where am I supposed to put my face if I go beg her?”

“Brother Bian, you’re still thinking about face when your life is on the line?” Bai Hai snickered. “Her position in the Four Direction Palace is extremely high. You can only go and make a request of her using my method if you want to live.”

“Impossible!” Bian Tianrui flung his arm angrily. Suddenly, Iron Bull, who was fighting Qiu Yuan, had the latter pierce a sword into his chest, causing blood to fall down onto the ground.

“Iron Bull!” Bian Tianrui hurried over. He looked up at Qiu Yuan, who was wiping the blood off his sword, then gritted his teeth and grabbed Iron Bull by the shoulder. “Retreat.”

“Brother Bian, don’t forget what I said. Do as I said if you want to live.”

Bian Tianrui hesitated for a moment, then left frantically.

“Aren’t you guys leaving?” Qiu Yuan descended from the air after wiping his blade clean, then turned towards the shocked group of people.

The group immediately bowed in thanks. Then soon after, only Bai Hai and Qiu Yuan were left outside Mount Supreme.

“I saw you beside Big Brother Ye before.”

Bai Hai nodded with a smile, “Brother Qiu, congratulations to you for inheriting the Senior’s inheritance.”

“There’s nothing to congratulate me about,” Qiu Yuan said. He didn’t want to cultivate, nor did he want to get involved with anything to do with cultivation. Duan Gu’s inheritance might be great for any other person, but it was just endless trouble he couldn’t get rid of.

“Brother Qiu, you do have a similar personality with Senior Guan Gu. No wonder you are the chosen one,” Bai Hai smiled, then raised his eyebrows. “See you in the God Realm in the future. I hope that Brother Qiu can give me a bit of face due to Brother Ye when you next meet me.”

With that, a brilliant formation appeared underneath Bai Hai. Then, he disappeared alongside the formation.

“Ugh, I was so unlucky,” Qiu Yuan spat on the floor, then looked up at the pillar of rainbow colored light at a distance.

“Yuan’er,” City Lord Qiu hurried over with the three Yao Emperors in the air, then landed beside Qiu Yuan.

City Lord Qiu gave Qiu Yuan a bear hug with a joyous look in his eyes, “You truly didn’t disappoint Father.”

“Brother Qiu,” the three Yao Emperors didn’t dare to put on any airs either. Strength was what was important in the coming age of chaos. Qiu Yuan’s strength as an Immortal King allowed him to

stand on equal grounds with the three Yao Emperors. In some ways, he was even above them.

“That direction should be Maple City, right? Someone broke through into the Immortal King level over there as well?” Qiu Yuan couldn’t help but frown as he looked at the pillar of rainbow colored light.

City Lord Qiu and the three Yao Emperors nodded, “It really was a coincidence, both of you had your divine blessing together. But it’s a good thing. The Three Realms is in a mess now, the more strong people we have, the more capable we are of protecting ourselves. But I wonder... whether the one at Maple City was someone of the Immortal Realm.”

...

“The light over at Mount Supreme has dispersed,” Ye Zichen pointed.

The white-robed man nodded, “It’s about time. Although Duan Gu was rather famous in the God Realm, the method of inheritance through forcing the power into him wasted too much divine energy. On the other hand, I really didn’t expect this girl by your side. Or perhaps, it’s to be as expected of a herb king!”

“Don’t try to get any ideas about her,” Ye Zichen said warily. He understood very well that the value of a herb king was enough to cause others to have ill intentions.

“Hey, I can’t possibly go and steal yours, right?” the white-robed man shook his head with a smile. He squinted his eyes and looked into the sky. “I wonder just what’s going on in the Demon Realm. There’s been no news from there.”

...

Su Yiyun stood quietly in front of Black Dragon with his head lowered in the Demon Dragon Palace. Meanwhile, several demon sovereigns and an army of several hundred thousand demons stood

behind him.

Su Yiyun's earlier words had truly caused a commotion through the gathered army, even the soldiers who had no right to speak couldn't help but silently whisper amongst themselves.

Thus, shock rang out through the army.

Black Dragon stared at Su Yiyun with a dark look.

Su Yiyun fearlessly met his gaze.

"Su Yiyun, I never once treated you poorly."

"I, Su Yiyun, am not as low as to forget Lord Black Dragon's aid," Su Yiyun answered slowly. "However, Ye Zichen is my closest brother, I can't do anything to him."

"Good brother," Black Dragon nodded with a dark expression and smiled. "Then what do you mean by what you said earlier? If I don't kill you today, then in the future, when you meet Ye Zichen..."

"I cannot swear that I will kill him myself, that's something I can't do. But I will definitely serve the Demon Realm full-heartedly. I have already let him go too many times. It is unfair for Lord Black Dragon if I continue to do so."

"So you do know that it was unfair," Black Dragon's eye were filled with mockery.

Li Min'e wanted to speak up once more, but the demon sovereign beside her yanked her away and shook his head at her.

It was all down to Black Dragon's negotiation with Su Yiyun, anyone else speaking up would only have the opposite effect.

Thus, the Demon Dragon Palace fell into silence for a long time.

"If, I was to give you a chance to serve the Demon Realm..."

"I will definitely do everything I am capable of," Su Yiyun knelt down on one knee and answered firmly.

Black Dragon squinted his eyes, then glanced at Su Yiyun for a while before finally answering. “Fine. I’ll give you this chance.”

“Thank you, Lord Black Dragon.”

Hearing that, Li Min’e and the Demon Sovereigns couldn’t help but let out long sighs. Gu Li nodded with a light smile, while praising Su Yiyun for his superior actions.

“But...” At that moment, Black Dragon’s tone suddenly changed.

Su Yiyun, who was kneeling on the floor, was stunned. Then he heard what Black Dragon said.

“No need for you to do anything for this action. Stay here to defend. Do you have any issues with that?”

Chapter 671 – Before the War II

Black Dragon looked meaningfully at Su Yiyun in the hall in an attempt to gain some sort of information from the latter's expression.

Yet, what he didn't know, was that his attempt was exactly what Su Yiyun wanted.

"Understood," Su Yiyun raised his hand, lowered his head and answered.

A look of confusion flashed across Black Dragon's eyes, but he didn't say anything else, and merely nodded, "Then that's decided."

"Lord Black Dragon," At that moment, Gu Li suddenly stepped forward.

Su Yiyun, who had finally stopped worrying, frowned. If one was to consider unexpected factors, Gu Li was definitely the biggest one.

I hope no trouble happens!

Gu Li smiled towards him, while Black Dragon asked, "What do you want to say?"

"This subordinate also wants to stay here," Gu li smirked, then glanced meaningfully at Su Yiyun.

"Give me a reason!"

"Lord Black Dragon, don't you understand what I'm trying to say?" Gu Li couldn't help but smile.

Black Dragon pondered for a bit. All of the elites are out to attack the Three Realms.

I didn't notice anything from Su Yiyun's expression, but he can't be completely trusted right now.

I'm still worried about him causing trouble if I bring him with me.

But he might do something if I leave him here at our base.

Gu Li might not be a long time subordinate of mine, but he is Chiyou's reincarnation.

He and Su Yiyun don't get along, so I guess leaving him here is a decent idea as well.

"Alright."

"Then thank you, Lord Black Dragon," Gu Li maintained his smile and occasionally glanced over at Su Yiyun.

"Then I'll leave the Demon Realm to you two. Don't disappoint me," Black Dragon said. Then, after Su Yiyun and Gu Li both nodded, he let out a long sigh, then shouted loudly. "Attack!"

And thus, the mess of an incident ended with the order.

All of the demon soldiers looked stern and advanced into the teleportation wormhole in front of them.

"Master Su, I truly admire you," Gu Li raised his thumb at Su Yiyun. "I am indeed impressed by you able to make Black Dragon, a very careful person, choose to allow you to live in that sort of dangerous moment. It really is a pity for you to not be an actor back in the Modern Realm!"

"I don't want to hear that crap from you," Su Yiyun said with a solemn look. His heart was racing earlier. His life was truly on the line. If Black Dragon truly wanted to kill him, he wasn't sure that he would actually be able to survive against all the demon elites. "And why are you staying behind? Don't give me that crap about keeping tabs on me. Only Black Dragon would believe that."

"I naturally have my own ideas," Gu Li smirked, then stretched lazily. "The Demon Realm is sure peaceful now. Ahh, if only this palace was mine."

With that, Gu Li left the palace with a shake of his head.

Su Yiyun frowned, but he didn't think so much into it. Instead, he used his spiritual consciousness to search around. When he was sure of there being nobody around him, he took out his phone and sent a message.

...

"My Lord, why didn't you execute Su Yiyun? We don't need this sort of disloyal person in the Demon Realm," the head of the Twelve Demon Sovereigns couldn't help but ask in the wormhole.

Black Dragon looked forward in anticipation, "Su Yiyun is of huge importance to my future plan. What's more, we can't just kill a formation grandmaster whenever we want."

"But..."

"I know what you're worried about. I'm the same," Black Dragon sighed. "I'm still quite worried about leaving Su Yiyun and Gu Li behind. Go and send someone back to watch them in secret. Make sure to inform me of any situation that arises."

"Understood."

...

Meanwhile, Lorie's divine blessing had not yet ended near the Valley of Death. It had already been six hours, and Fatty Yin had been exclaiming during that entire time.

Six hours of divine blessing meant that Lorie had, at the very least, the strength of a Sky Supreme.

Dingdong.

The white-robed man's phone rang. Everyone looked towards him, then saw him take a phone identical to Ye Zichen's.

He typed out something on it, then smiled, "They're finally coming."

“Who? The demons?” Ye Zichen stood up from the ground with a frown. “Do you need me to do anything?”

“Relax,” the white-robed man signaled Ye Zichen to calm down. “All the demon elites have left the Demon Realm. Since there are too many of them, they can’t use portals and can only use wormholes. According to my predictions, it would take at least three days for a stable portal that can transport so many of them to reach the Immortal Region. We’ll have plenty of time to get ready.”

There was a clear look of carefreeness in the white-robed man’s eyes. It was as if he didn’t think much of the demons’ advances at all.

He really is laying a trap for them!?

“Just what sort of thing are you planning!?”

“Have you never heard of the fact that heavenly secrets cannot be revealed?” the white-robed man smiled mysteriously.

At that moment, the celestial music disappeared, and the rainbow colored pillar of light faded away.

Lorie look a lot more mature, but even so, her innocent heart was still as clear as day.

Bang,

“Ouch.”

Lorie pouted unhappily when she hit the ground, but when she saw Ye Zichen, she immediately crawled back up and ran over with a giggle before taking some pills out of her pocket to eat again.

Ye Zichen caressed her hair in a spoiled manner.

“It looks like she is really close to you.”

“Don’t get any ideas about her. Although she’s pure, she can tell who’s actually good to her. I never thought about using her as a medical catalyst or anything else, I just felt like she’s a bit slow, so

I'm keeping her by my side so that others don't bully her," Ye Zichen said, then glanced at Lorie.

Coincidentally, Lorie was also looking at him.

When their eyes met, Lorie giggled like an idiot and poured out another pill from a vial and popped it into her mouth in a happy manner.

"I guess this is your fortune," the white-robed man looked at Lorie and Ye Zichen's expressions and nodded with a smile. Perhaps these natural beings are truly pure, but they can tell who are the ones actually nice to them.

I guess this is fate. Back then, I tried to use all my fortune to get a herbman, but failed to do so.

But Ye Zichen actually found a herb king in the Three Realms.

Perhaps the future will truly change!

Chapter 672 – Before the War III

The white-robed man shook his head and returned the phone to his pocket. “Alright, since her divine blessing is over, let’s not stand around. I need to go and get some subsequent things sorted. Fatty, you go and find a place to stay with Ye Zichen.”

“Mm, no problem,” Fatty Yin smiled.

The white-robed man nodded towards him, then leaped into the sky.

“C’mon, let’s go with Lord Fatty,” Fatty Yin hooked his fingers at Ye Zichen, Lorie and Third Fatty Jin,

Lorie frowned slightly, then muttered as she looked at the fatty with a lecherous smile on his face, “Are we going with him? He doesn’t look like a good person.”

“He’s not a bad guy,” Ye Zichen rubbed Lorie’s hair with a smile, then raised his eyebrows at Fatty Yin. “Where are we going? Can’t we go back to Maple City?”

“Of course not,” Fatty Yin replied with a stern look. “You can’t just randomly go around right now. I can’t take the responsibility if you mess up that guy’s plan.”

Then, he hooked his fingers at Third Fatty Jin, “Hey, the little fatty over there. Yes, you. Lord Fatty’s talking to you. Don’t think about returning to the Immortal Region. Just stay calm and follow Lord Fatty, got it?”

With that, Fatty Yin grabbed Ye Zichen and Third Fatty Jin, then disappeared from the Valley of Death.

...

Time flowed by.

Neither Ye Zichen nor Third Fatty Jin expected the living place Fatty Yin found for them to be a black bear’s cave. It was a cave

that Fatty Yin had fought with the black bear plenty of times in order to take over the place.

In the end, the bear had finally submitted under his domination and gave up half of the cave.

During the time they were in it, Ye Zichen continuously tried to get an idea of the white-robed man's plans, but Fatty Yin's mouth was sealed. He refused to answer no matter how Ye Zichen asked.

"Fatty Yin, I'm going to ask you one last time," Ye Zichen leaned on the wall with a cigarette in his mouth outside the black bear's cave. "You know that Su Yan is Su Zhu's little sister and we have a really close relationship. If you don't tell me, then I really am going to tell Su Yan to say bad things about you in front of Su Zhu."

"Kid, don't try to threaten me," Fatty Yin's expression showed that he was weighing the consequences. It was clear that he cared about a lot Su Zhu, but when he thought back to what the white-robed man asked of him... "I won't tell you even if you tell Su Yan to say bad things about me to Su Zhu. What's more, I, Lord Fatty, didn't do anything bad, so do it if you dare."

"Remember, that's what you said," With that, Ye Zichen took out his phone and found his chat with Su Yan.

Meanwhile, Fatty Yin peaked at what he was doing on the phone. When he saw that Ye Zichen was trying going to talk to Su Yan... "Hey, bro, that's not right..."

Fatty Yin lifted his hand to try and stop Ye Zichen, but the latter had already lost the mood to tell of him.

The chat was filled with messages from Su Yan...

"How is it over there? I heard the Immortal Region and Underworld are at war, are you alright?"

"Why didn't you reply for so long? Are you busy with something?"

“A video chat request was sent, but has been canceled.”

“Ye Zichen, what happened?”

Ye Zichen could feel how much Su Yan cared for him from her every word. After reading that, Ye Zichen slapped himself.

Damnit, I forgot to tell Su Yan that I’m fine after returning.

“I’m fine, don’t worry about me.”

Not long after Ye Zichen sent the message, Su Yan sent him a video chat request.

Accept.

Su Yan’s eyes were filled with anticipation, then when she saw Ye Zichen through the chat, her eyes lit up.

“You scared me to death. I thought something happened since you didn’t reply for so long.”

“What could have happened?” Ye Zichen pursed his lips with a smile.

That was when he noticed that she wasn’t in her room, and instead she was on a vast plain, where plenty of fox yaos in armors were walking around.

“You are...”

“The Immortal Region and Underworld’s war has affected the Endless Beast Region as well. I asked Second Sis, and she seemed to have said something like we’re going to have to send out our armies as well, but I’m not sure who we are going to fight,” a troubled look surfaced on Su Yan’s face. She really didn’t want to war to happen. “Keke and Lu Lu returned to their clans as well. All of us larger clans have to send out our armies, but the three of us made a promise in secret that we’ll definitely stand on your side in a war.”

Ye Zichen understood very well that Su Yan’s sweet smile was forced.

Nobody liked war. War meant death...

For them, who lived in a modern era of peace, war was a distant topic. But, even if a stray animal died on the streets, the hearts of the people who saw it would fill with pity.

And this was a real war!

Those who died were actual people around them.

"I can't speak anymore to you. Liu'er-jie told me to gather as well. Zichen, you can do it. You must live on!" Su Yan encouraged him a bit, then ended the chat.

Ye Zichen returned his phone to his pocket with squinted eyes, while Su Yan's words remained on his mind.

The Endless Beast Region got involved as well.

"Fatty Yin, please tell me the truth. Just what is he planning? Even the Endless Beast Region got involved!" Ye Zichen roared angrily.

Fatty Yin licked his lips, "I really can't say."

"Ridiculous," Ye Zichen pursed his lips, while a mocking look filled his eyes. "I am the trigger of the war, but the two of you refused to let me see anybody when I returned. You said that you're afraid that I would ruin your plans. I don't even have any right to know what I caused!?"

"Ye Zichen, that guy definitely wouldn't harm you," Fatty Yin patted Ye Zichen's shoulders.

At that moment, a white figure landed in front of them. "Throwing a tantrum?"

"I just want to know your plans," Ye Zichen stared at the censored face of the white-robed man.

The man shrugged with a smile, "Sure, you can know our plans now."

With that, a few conversation scenes appeared in Ye Zichen's mind.

It was like a movie, and when the scenes were all played, Ye Zichen opened his eyes wide, "You-You..."

"Shocked?" the white-robed man smiled. "But this isn't over. It's really hard for the people I arranged to stand up against the demons. Your power is needed now."

"Me?" Ye Zichen asked in confusion. What power do I have? Those people who the white-robed man talked to...

They're all tough people.

"Don't look down on yourself. You still have Yang Jian and those people!"

Chapter 673 – Before the War IV

“Do you feel like it isn’t messed up enough yet?” Ye Zichen laughed mockingly with a speechless shrug when he heard the white-robed man’s words.

The chat group had already made everything very clear. The Jade Emperor had been watching the situation with the Immortal Region and Underworld the entire time, and was going to launch a surprise attack to catch them off-guard.

Wouldn’t it get even more messed up with the Heavenly Court people down here?

“Do you have no faith in your rally? Do you think that I told you to increase your intimacy level with them for nothing?” the white-robed man pursed his lips with a smile. “Ignoring the others. Let’s just talk about Yang Jian... Who do you think he’ll choose between you and the Jade Emperor?”

“Just what are you planning?” Ye Zichen frowned. From the sound of his words, it sounds like he told me to increase my intimacy level with the Heavenly Court deities because he knew this would happen.

“Everything I planned is for the Three Realms,” the white-robed man sighed softly. “Go and get Yang Jian and co. We’ll need their strength to deal with the demon elites.”

Ye Zichen looked at the white-robed man for a while, but the damn mosaiced ‘screen’ completely covered the latter’s face, so he couldn’t get anything from the man’s expression at all.

Ye Zichen pondered for a moment, then chose to believe in the man....

He took out his phone from his pocket, opened the chatting app and entered the private group Yang Jian and the others created.

God of Thunder: Old Yang, I can’t stand the pressure anymore,

I'm moving out.

God of Fortune: I gave out the funds too.

Old Lord Taishang: I already handed out the supplies.

Erlang Shen: Do you guys really want to attack the Immortal Region and the Underworld? The Jade Emperor's being a fool, but don't you guys see what's going to happen?

Erlang Shen: If we attack now, then what'll we do if the demons come?

Erlang Shen: We won't be able to stand it with dangers facing us on both ends.

Canopy Marshal: The Jade Emperor just asked me if I can lead a hundred thousand soldiers as well...

God of Thunder: He probably went to talk to everyone who can lead an army in the Heavenly Court. It looks like he's determined to fight.

Erlang Shen: Damnit!

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: I'm not sure if you guys know, but the Great Sage has been organizing the Endless Beast Region to mobilize their army. But, he didn't say why he was doing that.

Erlang Shen: What the heck is the monkey joining in for? I'm going to go insane!

God of Thunder: Old Yang, this isn't a situation when you can refuse to mobilize the army just because you don't want to. If you don't mobilize your army, then the Jade Emperor will just strip you of your command and go to find someone else. Since that's the case, we might as well lead our armies out ourselves. At least we will consider about our bonds, and we can mobilize our army without actually fighting.

God of Fortune: I wonder where is Sky Sovereign. If he comes out now and holds out the Jade Emperor's token...

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Sigh...

The group was filled with complaints. It seems like the Jade Emperor pressured them some more, and urged them to mobilize their armies to attack the Immortal Region and the Underworld.

Ye Zichen frowned, then looked up at the white-robed man.

“What should I tell them?”

“Tell them to move out, then station outside Maple City,” the white-robed man replied calmly. “But remind them not to do anything to the normal people in the Immortal Region’s outer region. Tell them to stay there for now.”

“Then...”

“Then we’ll wait for the demon elites fall into our trap.”

Ye Zichen took a deep breath, then nodded before sending a message in the group.

“I’m back.”

The moment Ye Zichen sent the message, the chat stopped moving for approximately thirty seconds.

It was clear that his sudden reappearance shocked all the deities.

God of Fortune: Sky Sovereign!

God of Thunder: Am I seeing things? That was by Sky Sovereign, right?

Old Lord Taishang: The one in charge is finally here.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Sky Sovereign, you know what’s going on in the Three Realms now, right?

Canopy Marshal: Good, good.

Erlang Shen: Bro, wow. Where did you disappear off to for so long? We’ve been so anxious.

“I went to a sealed off place recently, and only just managed to

get free,” Ye Zichen typed. “I know more or less about what’s going on with the Immortal Region and the Underworld. Someone tell me what’s going on with the Heavenly Court?”

Old Lord Taishang: Jade Emperor’s being an idiot, and is determined to knock down the Underworld and the Immortal Region.

Erlang Shen: Recently, I’ve gotten like seven orders for me to mobilize my army per day.

God of Thunder: We’ve been having meetings at the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches essentially every day. Everything we’ve been discussing is how we can take over the Immortal Region and the Underworld.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Due to the Jade Emperor being so determined, the Queen Mother got into a fight with him, so she quit the management of the Heavenly Court. Now, the Jade Emperor is the sole leader.

Third Prince Nezha: Hehe, Sky Sovereign is back. I found out from Immortality Peach-jiejie that the Queen Mother is very angry at the Jade Emperor. She even officially messaged the Four Direction Emperors to impeach the Jade Emperor.

Ye Zichen was shocked. I didn’t expect so much to have happened with the Heavenly Court just because of the Underworld and Immortal Region.

I didn’t expect the Queen Mother and Jade Emperor to essentially get into such a huge fight.

God of Thunder: No wonder the Jade Emperor’s anxious. So the Queen Mother actually wants to get him impeached. I guess he wants to take over the Underworld and Immortal Region as quick as possible so that his position is safe even if the Four Direction Emperors come over.

Erlang Shen: Focus on the main issue! We shouldn’t think about

whether the Jade Emperor's getting impeached or not. Now that my bro's here, do we mobilize our armies or...

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Yes, yes, yes. That's the proper issue at hand.

God of Thunder: Sky Sovereign, what do you think? Do we move out against the Immortal Region and the Underworld?

Ye Zichen glanced at the white-robed man and saw that the latter was looking back at him. When the white-robed man noticed Ye Zichen's glance, he nodded.

"Tell them to come. We'll rely on these warriors to deal with the demon elites."

Ye Zichen gritted his teeth, then typed out his reply.

"Move out."

God of Thunder: ...

God of Fortune: ...

Erlang Shen: Bro, you're kidding, right? You want us to attack the Immortal Region and Underworld as well?

"Of course not," Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. "I want you guys to come to fight the demons."

...

Inside the wormhole...

The demons were closer and closer to the outer regions of the Immortal Region after several days of sleepless voyage.

"Lord Black Dragon, we'll be arriving outside the Immortal Region's Pool City soon," the bald demon sovereign walked over.

Black Dragon suddenly opened his closed eyes, and a sharp light shot out, "Finally?"

He smirked, while his body trembled in excitement, "It's been several thousand years. I've waited several thousand years for this

chance. The day has finally come!”

“Our elites have all moved out. The Three Realms is in chaos right now with the Immortal Region, Underworld and Heavenly Court locked in an endless fight. We will definitely be able to take over the Three Realms and leave a glorious achievement in your history, sire!” the bald demon sovereign replied in excitement.

The smile on Black Dragon grew even more apparent. “Well said. After this war, the Immortal Region, Underworld and Heavenly Court will be history. Only the Demon Realm’s glory will last forever. Warriors, get ready. Attack!”

Chapter 674 – Chaos has Come

“It looks like you finished telling your gay friends?” the white-shirted man smiled in a playful way the moment Ye Zichen put his phone down.

Ye Zichen glanced at the man. He has been getting more and more annoyed with the guy, and if it wasn't because the guy was stronger than him, Ye Zichen really would have just punched the man.

Wait, no, I have Lorie now!

I'll get her to beat him up real good.

An evil smile surfaced on Ye Zichen's face, while the image of the white-robed man begging for mercy appeared in his mind.

The man clearly noticed Ye Zichen's intention, and shrugged with a wry smile, “This might disappoint you, but I don't think that girlie beside you can beat me.”

...

This guy is definitely a mind reader!

Ye Zichen couldn't help but retort in his mind. Then he let out a long sigh, “I've done as you asked. What should I do now?”

The white-robed man sighed, then turned around and looked to the sky, “Nothing really. The demons have already come. Prepare for combat!”

“What!?” Ye Zichen looked up suddenly, but saw that the sky was still calm without any hints of disturbance. “Where are the demons?”

“Inside,” the white-robed man's eyes glistened as he seemed to see through the sky.

...

“How’s the situation outside?” Within the wormhole, Black Dragon looked intently at the demon scout he sent out to survey the situation.

“My lord, the Immortal Region has stationed their elites outside Maple City. A lot of them are wounded. They looked to have fought with someone just now. However, the Immortal Region’s higher ups have not appeared, nor did I see the Underworld’s troops.”

“Hmmm?” Black Dragon squinted his eyes and pondered. “Scout again.”

“Understood!” the demon scout nodded, then left the wormhole.

The bald demon sovereign walked over with a frown, “My lord, what are you worried about?”

“Everyone was mobilized this time. We must succeed. Any bit of failure will cause us to be completely annihilated. Although we have received news of the Underworld and Immortal Region’s combat, I’m still worried that it’s a trap without seeing it with my own eyes.” Black Dragon replied with a frown.

...

“I really did underestimate this Black Dragon,” the white-robed man smiled outside of the bear cave. “He truly is the leader of the demons. He’s being very careful. The scouts have already been sent out to scout three times. I guess he’s not going to do anything without actually seeing the two armies fight.”

“The demons sent scouts?” Ye Zichen was shocked.

The white-robed man nodded, “It’s the fourth time now that they have. Don’t ask me how I know. You’ll notice if you can calm down and spread out your spiritual consciousness as well.”

Hearing that, ye Zichen closed his eyes and spread out his spiritual consciousness.

It was like the white-robed man said. The moment, Ye Zichen did so, he noticed a suspicious looking person outside Maple City. However, that was not what surprised Ye Zichen. What surprised him was that there were actually a large number of troops outside Maple City.

“You sensed them?” the white-robed man smiled. “I asked Flame Emperor to send those people. I thought that Black Dragon would take the bait just with us pretending a bit, but it seems like a proper fight has to happen for Black Dragon to fall for it.”

With that, a fan appeared in his hand.

Then he spread out the fan, then wrote something down on it, then flung the fan into the air.

“I’m sure you’ll come out now!”

...

“Sire!” a demon scout rushed back into the wormhole and called out loudly. Black Dragon glanced at the scout, then heard the scout’s words. “My lord, the Immortal Region and Underworld are fighting.”

“Are you certain?”

Black Dragon had a nervous expression on his face.

Not long later, another scout return to the wormhole, “Sire, the Immortal Region and the Underworld are already in battle. The Underworld troops is composed of approximately two hundred thousand soldiers, led by the Black and White Impermanence.”

“Good!” Black Dragon smiled. “Scout again!”

...

“Sire, the Immortal Region has suffered grave losses. Great Emperor Qingming arrived, while Ox-Head, Horse-Face and the other ghost generals also joined the fray.”

“Sire, Great Emperor Qingming and the Black and White

Impermanence are all injured.”

“Sire, all four emperors of the Immortal Region have moved out, and are fighting the ten ghost generals of the Underworld.”

Black Dragon’s gaze heated up as more and more reports came in. Right after he sent out the scouts to scout once more, the bald demon sovereign standing beside him couldn’t help but speak up, “My lord, let’s move.”

“Wait a bit more, it is not yet time!” Black Dragon shook his head. He was waiting for a... special opportunity.

...

“Still not attacking? I seriously underestimated him,” the white-robed man looked towards the sky, then turned to Ye Zichen. “Tell Yang Jian and co. to come out and fake an attack on the Underworld.”

“Alright,” with that, Ye Zichen clicked into the chat, then mentioned Yang Jian and co.

“Mobilize your armies, fake an attack on the Underworld.”

Erlang Shen: Got it!

God of Thunder: Understood!

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Alright!

Third Prince Nezha: Hehehe, I’m already prepared.

God of Fortune: Sky Sovereign, what are you doing this for? Can you give us some hints?

“Don’t tell them,” the white-robed man suddenly said. “The Heavenly Court has demon spies amongst them.”

“I know,” Ye Zichen replied, then responded in the group.

“I can’t tell you the reason, just do as I said.”

God of Thunder: We trust Sky Sovereign.

Erlang Shen: Hah, I'll definitely listen to what my bro tells me to do.

Third Prince Nezha: I know I need to listen to Sky Sovereign.

When the other deities in the group also responded in a similar manner, Ye Zichen spoke a bit more to them, then put away his phone and looked towards the white-robed man, "You know who the demon spy is, don't you?"

"Honestly, I don't!" the white-robed man shrugged. "How long did they say they'll take?"

"About an hour."

"Then I guess the fight clash will be at dusk," with that, the white-robed man muttered. "Black Dragon, I've done all the show you need. Give me face and just take the bait."

...

As time passed by, Ye Zichen and co. got more and more anxious. However, Black Dragon was even more so.

The demon sovereign beside him has already repeatedly urged him to move out. He wanted them to move out as well, but he was waiting for that one opportunity.

"My lord, what are you waiting for!?"

"I know what I'm doing," Black Dragon frowned.

At that moment, a scout returned and gave his report, 'Sire, the Heavenly Court's Yang Jian, Li Jing and the other divine generals have moved their armies to Maple City. They are already clashing with the Underworld and the Immortal Region!'

Creak!

Black Dragon, who was frowning until then, smile, "Move out!"

"Finally," the white-robed man suddenly smiled softly when he saw the night approach.

At the same time, the orangey sky suddenly turned pitch dark. However, it was not the work of rainclouds...

It was countless figures.

No matter where one looked, all anyone could see in the sky was black figures.

It was clear that the demons were absolutely determined to take over the Three Realms using this chaotic moment, so they even brought every single one of their elites.

As the normal civilians outside the Immortal Region revealed showed expressions, the chess boards or other special items of hidden masters shattered.

When they looked up into the sky...

“Chaos has come.”

Chapter 675 – Your King Has Returned!

Black Dragon had a dark look on his face as he exited the wormhole. He stood high up in the sky and watched the insect-like people on the ground reveal looks of fright. It was an inexplicable sense of enjoyment for him.

...

Actually, there was constantly a story of how the Lower Three Realms were actually the territory of the Upper Three Realm's Demon Realm several hundred thousand years ago.

Back then, the Demon Emperor was beyond strong, and the demons were the strongest out of the Gods, Demons, and Yaos.

However, the demons were savage. The inhabitants of the God Realm and the Yao Realm were sick of getting conquered as their territories shook.

So, in order to protect themselves, the higher ups of the God Realm and the Yao Realm secretly contacted the Lich Race, who are outside of the Three Realms, and used countless resources in exchange for them to promise to aid the alliance of the yaos, led by the dragons; alongside the God Realm's inhabitants to fight a catastrophic war against the demons.

Both the God Realm's and Yao Realm's inhabitants left some of their people behind before attacking the Demon Realm, and conquered the Lower Three Realms, which had originally belonged to the demons. That was how the land became the Lower Three Realms.

...

The demon sovereigns couldn't help but be affected the feeling of joy Black Dragon radiated out.

They looked plainly down at the insect-like beings underneath them with indifference. All of them knew that the land belonged to

the demons.

Why did we, the demons, have to live in that pitiful subdimension!?

It's time for us to take back the Three Realms!

"My lord, please give us your next order," the bald demon sovereign prompted.

Black Dragon looked at him with a smile, then glanced afar, "I guess our appearance must have scared those arrogant people. Heh, infighting? They're having fun!"

He paused for a moment, then called out with a stern look, "Twelve Demon Sovereigns!"

"Present!"

The ten demon sovereigns who have come with the army stood forth. Black Dragon swept his gaze over them, then said with cold savageness, "Lead a group each, and take down all of the Immortal Region's outer region's cities!"

"Understood," the demon sovereigns all disappeared.

At the same time, Black Dragon squinted his eyes and gaze at the orange setting sun. "I, Black Dragon, will take back the land belonging to the demons the same way you took it away from us! Immortal Region, you shall be the sacrifice to honor the return of the demons!"

Then, he smiled savagely. For some reason, the setting sun seemed to turn a chilling blood red...

After five minutes, Black Dragon stood through the air with his unnerving smile. He calmed himself down, then replaced his expression with a respectful smile before turning towards Qiu Hai, who came with him. "Senior, I wonder if you are interested to come with me to where it is livelier?"

Black Dragon indicated towards the south.

Qiu Hai smiled, “Sure!”

...

“Those guys in the skies are the demons?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, but underneath his calm demeanor, his heart was filled with unspeakable shock.

There were at least a million of them!

I really didn’t expect the Demon Realm, which was supposed to have lost the war back then, to be able to bring out so many troops!

Can the Three Realms really defend themselves in face of such menacing demons?

“Who else can it be if not the demons?” the white-robed man’s tone showed a hint of carefreeness. “This is Black Dragon’s ultimatum. I’m certain that he has less than three thousands soldiers left in the Demon Realm.”

At that moment, the demon army in the sky split into several forces and moved in different directions.

They’ve already prepared the targets of their attacks. Ye Zichen frowned, “What are you just commenting here for? Black Dragon’s troops have already moved out. Just start whatever plan you have in place. Or do you want to take the chance to attack his base and force him into a dire spot? If you are, then hurry up!”

“Young man, calm down,” the white-robed man answered calmly. Then he did another action that made Ye Zichen even more angry. He actually leisurely strolled over to the huge boulder outside of the cave to sit down and start smoking.

“I...” Ye Zichen clenched his teeth and stared at the man. Then, he held Lorie’s hand. “If you’re not going to do anything, then I’ll solve this my way. Okay!?”

“Stop!” the white-robed man on the boulder shouted. Ye Zichen tried to disregard his words and continue forth, but noticed that

the space round him was already sealed off. “What are you getting nervous for? I arranged everything already. It’s just the demons. The Three Realms beat the living shit out of them back then, so they can do it now. What? Do you think that the power of the entire Three Realms cannot deal with the puny demons?”

“Then you...” Ye Zichen stuttered.

“Think about it, Black Dragon made his scouts scout so many times before mobilizing his army. If the Three Realms immediately send out their troops to counterattack, do you think that he would fight us?” the white-robed man shook his head repeatedly. “Youngsters are truly young. We’re luring him into a trap here... You’re making him run before he even jumped in? Then didn’t our entire magnificent plan go to waste!?”

“Don’t worry. Hurry up and send a message to your friends in the Heavenly Court. Tell them to fight the guys from the Immortal Region and the Underworld. Also, tell the heavenly soldiers to stop watching the show like idiots, even a fool can tell that they’re just acting.”

“You have been watching...” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

The white-robed man cursed. “No shit. I’m smoking to concentrate. Just take a look at yourself. Hurry up and send the message. If Black Dragon’s people arrive before that, we’re screwed.”

...

“Yang Jian, you...”

Xie Bi’an coughed up a mouthful of blood and fell onto the ground where the three realms were fighting outside Maple City. Yang Jian stood in front of him with the former’s lance at his throat.

Great Emperor Qingming also looked at [Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King](#) with bloodshot eyes. His comrade had been

absorbed into the Seven Treasure Pagoda

“Heavenly Court, the Immortal Region is not done with you!” Great Emperor Qingming screamed.

Leizhenzi looked at Great Emperor Qingming mockingly with his hammer in hand. “Is not done with us? You guys? The Jade Emperor has decreed that if the Immortal Region and Underworld bows down to us, we can let you go. Otherwise... Do not fault us for being merciless. Listen to my advice and surrender. Your realms have already been hurt greatly by the war, foolishly resisting will only cause your realm to be destroyed. The Demon Realm was the living example of that. If you don’t want...”

“Shameless words!”

Boom.

Just as Leizhenzi was about to continue, he flew back several hundred meters and coughed up a mouthful of blood as he was attacked at his chest.

The soldiers of the Immortal Region, Underworld and the Heavenly Court were all shocked. When they looked up, they saw Black Dragon smiling meaningfully with Qiu Hai beside him.

“The Demon Realm is the example of what? I’m telling you guys. Your king has returned!”

This is the Pagoda Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li carries around and got his title from.

Chapter 676 – Changing Sides and Betrayal

“You...”

Yang Jian’s eyes were filled with a clear shock. God of Thunder and everyone else also came over and stared straight in front of them at Black Dragon, who was looking at them with a meaningful smile.

“Demon scum, I didn’t think that you would actually dare to appear in the Three Realms in broad daylight!”

“Why wouldn’t we? This is the land that was originally belonging to the demons!” Black Dragon’s purple cape fluttered in the air, causing his every word to emit the feeling of greatness. “Back then, the Gods and Yaos set up a plan to harm we demons. Although we have stayed silent for several hundred thousand years, did you really think that we had lost!?”

“Homeless dogs actually dared to speak such outrageous things!? Your Grandpa Yang Jian will teach you properly!”

With that, Yang Jian’s lance glowed with a silvery light. Meanwhile, Heavenly King Li, the God of Thunder, and Nezha stood on the side and watched the show without any intention of helping.

Yang Jian used eighty percent of his strength as he thrust his lance forward.

Black Dragon remained still and raised his scaly arm.

“Die!”

The lance clashed against Black Dragon’s arm, causing sparks to fly up. Yang Jian then spun around and pierced again, but the lance was still unable to injure his opponent. Thus, he could only force himself to stop, then retreat a dozen meters back.

Immediately right after he did that, the plains began to burn with

a purple flame.

Black Dragon snickered, “Not bad!”

“Black Dragon,” at that moment, Great Emperor Qingming clenched his teeth and stood up with bloodshot eyes.

“What is it?” Black Dragon looked over with a hint of mockery in his eyes.

Great Emperor kneeled down, “We, the Immortal Region, took no part in stealing the land of the demons. Of course, I can’t deny that the Immortal Region did originally split off from the God Realm, but it has been so long already. The Immortal Region is completely different from the God Realm now. We are different from the Heavenly Court. I beg of you, please only massacre the Heavenly Court’s people. I can represent the Immortal Region and become the Demon Realm’s vassal, then hand over our land!”

“It is the same for the Underworld!” Xie Bi’an looked towards the Heavenly Court deities with a furious look. “The Underworld is willing to serve the Demon Realm, and obey your every command. We ask only that... they die!”

“Xie Bi’an, Great Emperor Qingming!” God of Thunder said angrily. “How could you...”

“Shut up,” Great Emperor Qingming shouted. “Becoming the vassal of the Demon Realm is far better than letting your cruel and savage Heavenly Court take charge. Heavenly Court grandsons, you were trying to act like the mantis stalking the cicada, but you didn’t expect the oriole behind you, did you!?”

“You madmen!” Leizhenzi clenched his teeth and roared in anger.

Meanwhile, Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li and Nezha looked towards Black Dragon and Qiu Hai vigilantly.

“Zezeze, what a terrible scene!” Black Dragon watched the situation unfold in mockery, but didn’t suspect anything at all.

Both him and Qiu Hai had hidden in the surroundings and watched the Three Realms battle since an hour ago. He would not have revealed himself if he wasn't sure that they were truly fighting.

He did believe Great Emperor Qingming, since he saw Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li absorb the his brothers into the tower.

If there was anything he didn't believe, then that would be how they said they represented their realms. Black Dragon knew that they would not easily give up their territories unless they were faced with absolute might.

But Xie Bi'an and Great Emperor Qingming are truly infuriated. Even if I disregard the lands, taking them as my subordinates wouldn't be too bad.

As for the actual land, we have a million elites...

Dealing with the damaged Immortal Region, Underworld and Heavenly Court was just a trivial matter.

"Senior Qiu Hai," Black Dragon bowed.

Qiu Hai nodded with a smile, "I know what you want to say. You want to ask whether we should kill them or capture them, right?"

"I shall do as you recommend. Of course, I personally think that leaving them alive is the best choice for now. We have very little information about the Heavenly Court, so getting information from them would be a good idea." Black Dragon answered casually, then looked towards Xie Bi'an and Great Emperor Qingming. "Since we demons have all come here, we are determined to take over the Three Realms. But let's not talk about vassalage for now. I only ask you to remember this favor."

"As long as you can grant our request, I, Qingming, swear eternal allegiance."

"Eternal allegiance!" The Underworld and Immortal Region troops all called out.

Black Dragon nodded in satisfaction and took a step back, “Senior, I’ll be troubling you.”

“Heh, taking back the Three Realms is part of my duty, so it is no trouble at all. Little kids of the Heavenly Court, if you surrender now, then I might have mercy on you due to my love for talented people. Cultivation isn’t easy, so consider your situation carefully!” Qiu Hai smiled.

Yang Jian snorted, “Shitty geezer, don’t speak so shamelessly here. You’re nearly dead anyways, so stop speaking nonsense. It’s time for your Grandpa Yang to send you off. I wonder if your family put aside a grave for you or not!”

Zing.

Yang Jian opened his third eye. Leizhenzi also flapped his wings and flew into the air. The sky instantly became covered in thunder clouds, while intense lightning and thunder seemed to radiate in the sky.

Heavenly King Li and Nezha also brought out their natal artifacts and glared menacingly at Qiu Hai.

“So foolish,” Qiu Hai let out a long sigh. His hunch-backed body instantly stood up straight.

A faint aura radiated out from his body. Both Yang Jian and the Heavenly Court deities, and Great Emperor Qingming and Xie Bi’an, who kneeled on the floor, all revealed shocked expressions.

This...

They only had one thought in their minds...

How is he so strong?

“Come over here,” Qiu Hai didn’t move from where he stood, and merely crooked his fingers at Yang Jian and co.

The lance in Yang Jian’s hand trembled, and the spirit of the lance tried to leave his hand in depression.

“Stay still,” Yang Jian gripped the lance in his hand tightly, then charged forward.

Yet...

“Retreat!”

Heavenly King Li took the lead and begun to run with Leizhenzi, Nezha and the other deities. Yang Jian could only watch his comrades flee in confusion...

“You’re trying to leave?” Qiu Hai grabbed towards them.

Heavenly King Li seemed to sense the shapeless hand. He kicked Nezha back, “Hurry!”

“Father!” Nezha’s eyes were filled with shock from the sudden betrayal.

As Yang Jian watched Heavenly King Li and Leizhenzi gradually disappear into a distance, he gripped his lance tightly and cursed, “What great brothers!”

His teeth creaked as he clenched them tightly, then looked towards Nezha, who was already captured.

“Even if I die, I’m taking one of them down with me,” Yang Jian kicked into the air, then charged towards Qiu Hai like a madman. “Die!”

“Such ignorance!”

Dong.

Yang Jian suddenly fell onto the ground and coughed up mouthfuls of blood as if a boulder weight over several tons dropped onto him.

“I can’t accept this!” Yang Jian looked up at Qiu Hai with bloodshot eyes, then tightened his fists, before his eyes finally closed.

Chapter 677 – They Are Unworthy

All of the Heavenly Court's soldiers had been captured on the smoky battlefield.

They were already unable to muster up any strength to resist after going through such defeat and betrayal. Due to the situation, they couldn't help but put down their blades, then reluctantly become the hateful demons' prisoners.

"Master," Xie Bi'an and Great Emperor Qingming both kneeled down on one knee and prostrated themselves before Black Dragon.

"Why did you leave me behind..." Nezha murmured lifelessly in Qiu Hai's control. His expression revealed just how pained he felt from the betrayal of his closest kin.

His father had pushed him into the abyss at the very last moment in order to escape.

"What a lowly scene," Black Dragon swept his gaze across the battlefield in mockery.

Changing sides!

Betrayal!

Those leaders of the Three Realms the peasants had believed in showed the most contemptible side of humans when their companions and subordinates needed them most.

They are unworthy of the Demon Realm's land!

They are unworthy of the worship they receive!

They are unworthy...

They are unworthy!

Black Dragon's expression grew even darker. He walked in front of everyone with a cold look on his face. Both leaders and mere soldiers bowed meekly and did not dare to meet his gaze.

“Three Realms... Heh...” He laughed meaningfully.

Great Emperor Qingming licked his lips and looked up, “Lord Black Dragon. I, Qingming, am willing to serve Lord Black Dragon as a mere hound. May this lowly one return to the Immortal Region and discuss with the other higher ups about becoming the vassal of the Demon Realm and company my lord to remove the Heavenly Court from existence?”

“Oh?” Black Dragon glanced indifferently at him.

“Lord Black Dragon!” Qingming quickly lowered his head.

“Don’t worry,” Black Dragon patted Qingming’s shoulders with a smile. “No need to talk about vassalage right now. I said it already. I hold no good will towards those of the Heavenly Court, that’s why I acted. You are still someone of the Immortal Region. And Xie Bi’an. You are still of the Underworld.”

“Yes, yes, yes.” Great Emperor Qingming and Xie Bi’an answered frantically.

“The two of you can lead your subordinates back. Also, help me by telling your masters that I’m not a cold-blooded person. I hate war. War will cause people to bleed, and those normal civilians are innocent. I don’t want to see the Three Realms burnt to the ground. As for territory... We can have a good chat about that. Am I right?” A smile surfaced on Black Dragon’s face.

Great Emperor Qingming and Xie Bi’an frantically nodded, “Of course. We will relay your words.”

“That’s for the best. Then take your people and leave. Oh yeah, I will be taking over this city in the Immortal Region’s outer region. We do need a place to rest after all.”

“Naturally,” Great Emperor Qingming repeatedly nodded with a smile, then bowed. “Lord Black Dragon, then we will be reporting back now.”

“Go,” Black Dragon nodded with a smile.

Not long later, Xie Bi'an and Great Emperor Qingming led their troops and disappeared from the battlefield outside Maple City.

Qiu Hai raised his eyebrows when he saw them leave, "You're letting them go just like that? Are you not worried that they were merely buying time?"

"So what? Who can match you in all of the Three Realms? What's more, we have a million of our soldiers here. If they are smart, then they will consider my words thoroughly," Black Dragon smiled, then glanced at the unconscious Yang Jian and despairing Nezha. "They, the Heavenly Court, are the main targets for us."

...

"What is this place?" Ye Zichen looked at the countless people in front of him as well as the normal people, who continuously walked in from a portal.

From the looks of it, they all seemed to be the civilians from the different cities in the Immortal Region's outer region. There were also many people comforting the civilians and handing out resources, while organizing a place to stay for them.

"This is naturally a subdimension that I cut off from the Three Realms. It's to take in the civilians in the outer regions of the Immortal Region," the white-robed man replied plainly.

At that moment, Ye Zichen saw a few familiar figures hurry over to him, "Brother Ye, you really are alright!"

"Old Xue, Stone! Ruan Qingtian, you're here too!" Ye Zichen opened his eyes in surprise.

Ruan Qingtian chuckled, "Why can't I be here? Everyone from the cities in the Immortal Region's outer regions are here, so why can't I be here!?"

"Doesn't that mean..."

“Ye Zichen.” The moment Ye Zichen thought of a person, he saw Zuo Mo run over to him with red eyes. She leaped into his arms without any hesitation and hammered down on his chest. “Where did you go! Why didn’t you tell me you were alright!?”

“Zezeze, what a sudden display of affection,” Ruan Qingtian teased with a mix of envy and jealousy. At the same time, Ye Zichen felt a sharp gaze at him. When he turned around, he saw Li Jiayi holding a sword and looking coldly towards him.

Ye Zichen scratched his head in slight awkwardness. He waved to wave towards Li Jiayi, but before he could do so, Li Jiayi snorted, then left.

Zuo Mo raised his eyebrows, then put her hands on her hips, “What’s her relationship with you? I thought there was something going on between the two of you!”

“Ahem... Old Xue, let’s go and give out the stuff,” Stone coughed.

Xue Qi quickly nodded when he noticed Li Jiayi standing at a distance.

Ruan Qingtian also chuckled dryly, “Wait up, I’m coming as well.”

“Hey... You guys, don’t leave me!” Ye Zichen could only curse them silently for being so disloyal when they went off.

Fortunately, the white-robed man walked over with a smile, “Lady Zuo, Ye Zichen and I have some important matters to discuss. Can you please lend him to me?”

“Oh, please do,” Zuo Mo immediately calmed down, then went elsewhere to help give out the supplies. However, whether coincidentally or not, she seemed to have gone over to where Li Jiayi was, and judging from how the two girls acted, they seemed to be competing silently.

“You’re a good bro,” Ye Zichen gave the white-robed man a thumbs-up.

The man chuckled with a shrug, “I wasn’t helping you. I’m seriously busy, and have no time to care about the relationships between you youngsters.”

“I...” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly, then glanced towards Zuo Mo and Li Jiayi, only to notice that the two of them were both looking at him.

What made him more speechless was that both of them smiled softly at him, then glared at each other fiercely.

“Being young is so good,” the white-robed man couldn’t help but comment.

Ye Zichen sighed helplessly, “Stop making fun of me. Didn’t you say that you have important matters to discuss?”

“We’re waiting for everyone to arrive.”

At that moment, a few more people appeared forth from the portal.

The white-robed man chuckled, “Oh, they’re here!”

Chapter 678 – A Slight Problem with the Script

“How was my acting just then? It was extremely moving, right?” Great Emperor Qingming raised his eyebrows at Xie Bi’an, while God of Thunder and Heavenly King Li stood beside them. There was no hints of depression on their faces at all as they joked around.

“If we’re talking about best acting, then it should be me. Even I felt pained when I kicked Nezha down,” Heavenly King Li raised his eyebrows.

God of Thunder nodded and gave him a thumb up, “That kick was amazing.”

“You’ve arrived,” the white-robed man walked over with a smile. Ye Zichen also followed behind him.

Xie Bi’an and Great Emperor Qingming stopped laughing, and cupped their hands towards the white-robed man. “Sir.”

“Sky Sovereign, we completed our mission,” God of Thunder and Heavenly King Li pursed their lips with a smile.

Xie Bi’an and Great Emperor Qingming turned towards Ye Zichen and smiled meaningfully, but didn’t say anything.

“I’ve troubled you guys,” the white-robed man smiled, then led everyone to a place near the portal. He tapped on the ground and conjured up a table and several chairs, before signaling everyone to sit. “How’s the situation over there?”

“Sir, everyone is acting according to your plan,” Great Emperor Qingming smiled. “Judging from the situation just now, Black Dragon completely believes that the Three Realms is infighting.”

“We have already completed Sky Sovereign’s orders. Yang Jian and Nezha are left with the enemies,” Heavenly King Li said.

The reason they had left Yang Jian and Nezha behind was because they were essentially the strongest amongst the actors.

They would be able to protect themselves even if any surprise incidents come up.

At the same time, there were also other considerations such as Yang Jian's stubbornness.

They had no idea whether he would end up forgetting his mission when facing the demons, and just directly fight them without saying anything.

"That's good," the white-robed man nodded in satisfaction.

Xie Bi'an couldn't help but frown, "Sir, what should we do next? The demons are already attacking the cities in the outer regions of the Immortal Region. His next target will definitely be the Immortal Region itself or the Underworld, we..."

"We're in no hurry," the white-robed man waved his hand, stood up from the chair and stretched lazily. Then, he looked afar at the civilians who came to take refuge. "Even if the demons are attacking the cities, all they got right now is an empty city. We shall discuss about the subsequent matters when the various city lords arrive later."

Then, before he finished, there was a flash at the teleportation point.

Some civilians walked out in confusion followed by the various city lords from the outer regions of the Immortal Region.

"City Lord Lin," the white-robed man greeted one of them.

Before Ye Zichen could follow, he saw Lin Xiyue open her eyes wide as she looked at him as if she was staring at a monster.

"You..." Lin Xiyue covered her mouth in surprise and stuttered for a while without being able to say anything.

"You said that you didn't have a choice in the Modern Realm, so I

thought you were from a military family or something. But I guess your background is even more shocking. Mhmm, this sort of feminine look does suit you.”

Lin Xiyue, who stood beside City Lord Lin, was wearing a long pale blue silk dress. She looked rather gentle without her police uniform.

When Ye Zichen greeted her with a familiar tone, Lin Xiyue couldn't help but exclaim, “It really is you. Why are you here...”

“Why are you still around like a shitty ghost?” At that moment, a clearly hostile voice was heard from the side.

“Zhao Ziming!”

Enemies would get mad when they see each other, and that was especially the case when one treated the other as love rivals.

“Ziming, watch your language!” The moment Zhao Ziming spoke up, the armored young man beside him yanked Zhao Ziming a little, then said. “Chief Ye, you might have had some issues with my humble little brother in the Modern Realm, but no matter what, we are on the same side now. I hope you don't take his offense to heart.”

The one who spoke was Zhao Ziming's elder brother, Zhao Zizhao.

He was the strongest general under Lin Xiyi's command and was also of the late-stage Sky Immortal level. The Lin family and Zhao family have always been on good terms, and their relationship had lasted for tens of thousands of years.

The Zhao family has always been the generals for the Lin family, and the engagement between Lin Xiyue and Zhao Ziming was set by their parents.

“I'm not that petty, but we are all reputed people here. Honestly, Zhao Ziming doesn't have the right to act out of line here. I hope General Zhao will keep your little brother in check properly,” Ye

Zichen said with a false smile.

Everyone else immediately felt the strangeness in the atmosphere.

Lin Xiyi quickly tried to smoothen out the situation, “There’s no need to be like this when we’re on the same side. Ziming, go over there with Xiyue. We have important matters to discuss right now.”

Zhao Ziming nodded, then locked his hand firmly around Lin Xiyue’s, as if he was deliberately showing off in front of Ye Zichen.

Lin Xiyue could only be unwillingly dragged away by Zhao Ziming.

After they left, Ye Zichen chuckled, “Why don’t I see the City Lords of Maple City and Pool City?”

“They are further away from the portal, so they might come later,” said Flame City’s City Lord.

Lin Xiyi also agreed with a nod, “Indeed. But our civilians have all come over here. Sir, thank you for providing us with this sub dimension. Otherwise, we really wouldn’t know what to do about the civilians when the war breaks out.”

“It’s what I should do,” the white-robed man smiled. “Since the rest of the cities’ people have arrived, I think Pool City and Maple City will soon follow. Let’s wait for them here.”

“We will do as Sir has said.”

Thus, the various city lords begun their wait in front of the portal.

Approximately five minutes later, the portal flashed again.

Luo Wei walked out with a dark expression, while Luo Yang repeatedly comforted him.

“What happened?” Ye Zichen frowned.

Luo Wei was slightly surprised when he saw Ye Zichen.

Luo Yang exclaimed in joy, “Brother Ye, you really are alright.”

“Don’t mind me. Why is City Lord Luo’s expression so dark? Did something go wrong?” Ye Zichen asked in a testing manner.

Luo Wei immediately cursed, “Of course!”

“What happened? Be concise!” the white-robed man said solemnly.

Luo Wei glanced around, “Are the Pool City people here?”

“No. Could it be related to Pool City?” the white-robed man asked.

“Heh, I knew they wouldn’t be able to come over,” Luo Wei snorted, then smiled wryly. “I can’t say that it’s related to Pool City. A problem arose with Maple City as well!”

“Then say it!” Lin Xiyi was rather frustrated since Luo Wei still didn’t get to the issue.

“A clown come out from nowhere and actually started fighting with the demons. The same thing seemed to happen with Pool City. I sensed spiritual energy fluctuation from Pool City when I entered the portal. The fight seemed rather intense!”

Chapter 679 – The Two Clowns

In front of Qiu Yuan's bedroom in the Pool City's City Lord's manor.

City Lord Qiu had already knocked on Qiu Yuan's door multiple times, but his room was still shut tight.

Creak.

City Lord Qiu pushed the door open and entered the room with a frown. Before he could say anything, he noticed that Qiu Yuan's room was in a complete mess. "What are you doing?"

"Didn't you say that a war is going to break out soon and we can't defend Pool City anymore? These are treasures used so much effort to get. I can't just throw them away," Qiu Yuan said as he sat on the floor and arranged the toys like remote-controlled planes and cars in front of him. As he did so, he continuously muttered. "The spatial ring is too small, but I don't want to leave them behind. Just which ones should I bring with me?"

City Lord Qiu nearly coughed up blood when he heard that. He walked up to the pile and kicked it, causing the toys that Qiu Yuan had spent a lot of time to arrange to scatter across the floor. "Can you let me worry less? These trash..."

"Dad, what are you doing!?" Qiu Yuan glared as Immortal King leveled spiritual energy subconsciously flowed out from his body.

The truth was that City Lord Qiu had already gotten used to beating Qiu Yuan. However, his son was completely different now. The strength of an Immortal King was not just for show.

He really felt a bit worried when he felt his son's terrifying spiritual pressure.

"I spent so much effort in arranging them together, now that you kicked it, I have to do it all again."

“All of the people in all the outer region’s cities have left, we’re the only ones remaining, and you actually still have time for this trash. I...”

“Hey, please don’t get angry. How about this? You didn’t use too much of the space in your special ring, right? Give it to me now so I can pack my treasures,” Qiu Yuan replied cheekily.

City Lord Qiu glared at him angrily with a snort, “Don’t even think about it!”

An hour later...

“Wouldn’t it be fine if you just gave me the ring from the get go? You forced me to take it from you. Seriously...” Qiu Yuan squatted on the floor and put away the toys on the floor into a spatial ring.

As for City Lord Qiu...

He was being tied up on a chair with his spiritual energy sealed.

“Shitty brat, hurry up and release me!” City Lord Qiu shouted from the chair.

At that moment, some footsteps rang out outside the room.

“It’s not an empty city, there’s someone inside!”

“That’s great. Go in and take a look, then capture them. That way, we can report back to Lord Black Dragon!”

With that, the room was kicked open.

“There really are scums remaining!”

A hook appeared in the thin demon’s hand, which he reached towards Qiu Yuan’s back. However, before he got too close...

Crack.

A clear crack sounded out underneath his feet.

Qiu Yuan turned around, then watched as his toys get stomped to pieces.

“Heh. Heh heh heh...”

“You dare to laugh? Die!” The demon kicked the shattered toys to pieces.

Qiu Yuan squinted his eyes, while a raging aura radiated out from his body, “You ruined my treasures. You actually dare to ruin my treasures!”

Gulp.

The demon gulped and didn’t even notice his hook hit the ground. He smiled dryly and retreated slowly, “It’s a misunderstanding, a misunderstanding!”

“Stay here and compensate with your life for my treasures!”

Bang.

Hearing the huge commotion, the bald demon sovereign instantly hurried over.

That was when he saw Qiu Yuan step into the air in battle armor, while holding a flaming staff in one hand and the demon soldiers, who had been burnt to charcoal in his other.

“He is your guy, right? COMPENSATE! MY! REMOTE! CONTROL! AIRPLANE!”

.....

“City Lord Luo, don’t worry,” the white-robed man patted the city lord’s shoulder with a smile. “Qiu Yuan, the Chosen One, is over at Pool City. Although it isn’t quite the same as our plans, it won’t have too big of an impact on it. It might even be more beneficial for us.”

“What do you mean by that?” Great Emperor Qingming asked in confusion.

“The demons think that they are the oriole behind the mantis! But if all of the cities they attack are empty, they really might get suspicious. Having someone remaining in Pool City would actually

make sense for a careful one like Black Dragon,” the white-robed man replied with a smile. The rest nodded, only to hear him speak up once more. “Qiu Yuan’s in Pool City, but Maple City...”

...

“Demon scum, let your Grandpa Gou Gou go if you dare. I’m going to fight you solo!”

A young man in beggar like clothes and a strand of hair sticking up above his head was forced to kneel onto the ground by several demon soldiers in front of the luxurious City Lord manor’s meeting room.

Despite that, the beggar young man still had a hostile look on his face as he glared fiercely at Black Dragon, who sat in front of him.

“Engulf the World... What is your relationship to the Spiritual Monkeys of the Endless Beast Region?” Black Dragon had a cup of tea in his mouth. After he finished asking the question, he muttered to himself. “The people of the Three Realms really know how to enjoy themselves. I didn’t notice they have such a nice treasure when I came here last time.”

“You country bumpkin who has never even drunk tea before,” the beggar teenager couldn’t help but snicker. “You are already so happy with a jasmine tea bag that costs a mere two yuan? My Boss Ye has treated me to [Da Hong Pao](#) before. Do you know what that is? It’s even more expensive than lollipops!”

“Bumpkin?” Black Dragon put down his cup of tea on the table and stood up, then walked towards the young man.

“What do you want to do? Hit me? I’m telling you, I’m afraid of a lot of things, but I’m not afraid of getting beaten up,” said the young man.

“Brat, answer honestly when I’m still in a good mood. Just what is your relationship with the spiritual monkeys!?”

“Why should I tell you?” the young man twitched his mouth. “I

suggest you let me go now. Otherwise, if my boss finds out that you captured me, you'll be in for a treat."

"Boss? Who is the boss you're talking about?"

"Heh, I'll scared you to death," the young man snorted. "I'm telling you, my boss is the chief of Leisure House. Ye Zichen, Chief Ye! Now, if you know what you're doing, then hurry up and..."

"What? Ye Zichen?" Black Dragon raised his eyebrows and smiled. "Interesting!"

...

"Luo Wei, describe to me what the person in Maple City who started fighting the demons looked like," Ye Zichen stared at Luo Wei nervously.

Luo Wei looked at him in confusion. He did not understand why Ye Zichen acted so. "I didn't pay much attention to him, but he was rather special. He had a strand of hair sticking up on his head, and was holding something called a lollipop in his mouth. He was so fierce. No matter how many demons there were, he merely charged in with a stick, while shouting something like... Err... 'Boss, I'm coming to save you'!"

"It really is him!" Ye Zichen couldn't help but face palm and sigh.

The white-robed man also smiled wryly, "That clown..."

Da Hong Pao (大红袍) is a type of very expensive tea.

Chapter 680 – Traitor

“Black Dragon, I don’t understand your actions,” Qiu Hai said as he watched as Black Dragon asked his people to respectfully take the teenage beggar away.

He had even told his people to treat the young man well, and not to use violence against the young man.

An old demon like Qiu Hai, who placed no value on human life, could not comprehend Black Dragon’s actions at all.

“Senior you might not know,” Black Dragon smiled, and asked Qiu Hai to sit down. “I’m not sure if I mentioned to you, but the Yellow Emperor hid the ley line.”

“You did speak about it briefly,” Qiu Hai nodded.

“Ye Zichen definitely knows where the ley line is as the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor. That kid from just now is Ye Zichen’s friend. I think we should start from him in order to gain the knowledge of the location of the ley line. Even if he isn’t very important for Ye Zichen and the negotiation fails, we can still kill him then. That doesn’t really affect us, right?” Black Dragon crossed his legs. At that moment, a messenger walked into the hall. “How is it?”

“My Lord, aside from Pool City, the other eight cities of the outer regions of the Immortal Regions have been conquered,” the messenger kneeled on one knee and replied.

Black Dragon squinted his eyes with a nod, “Is there a need for reinforcements at Pool City?”

“We have not received any requests for it.”

“Alright. If there’s nothing else then take your leave.”

“There is indeed more to report,” the messenger frowned. “According to what we have heard, all of the cities were already

completely empty. I am worried that there might be...”

“Empty?” Black Dragon raised his eyebrows. “That’s understandable. The Immortal Region and the Underworld were in an intense war, they would naturally tell the common people in the outer regions to evacuate. There is no need to mind that.”

“Understood!” the messenger stood up and left.

At that moment, Black Dragon noticed a frown on Qiu Hai’s face.

“Senior, do you have concerns about all this?”

“All the cities being empty are slightly concerning, but since you are in charge of this, I shall let you determine the situation,” Qiu Hai looked at Black Dragon, then stood up. “I am a bit tired. If there’s no other matters, then I’m going to rest.”

“Senior, please take care,” Black Dragon watched Qiu Hai leave with a smile. Then, the moment Qiu Hai disappeared from his sight, his smile turned into a look of menace.

“Lord Black Dragon, since you don’t like him, then why not...” A chubby man in plain clothes appeared in the hall. It was clear from his attire that he was not of the Demon Realm.

The man was also looking at where Qiu Hai departed from, and he sliced his hand across his neck to indicate what he was trying to say.

“The old guy’s not simple at all. I do want to get rid of him, but I need an opportunity. Under these sorts of situations, he’s still useful, so it’s fine to leave him around for now,” Black Dragon answered casually, then pointed to a chair and indicated for the man to sit down. “Why are you here? Didn’t we agree not to take any reckless actions before it is complete? Oh, try this, we don’t have it in the Demon Realm. That’s why, you people of the Three Realms really know how to enjoy yourselves on the land which originally belonged to we demons... Heh...”

“Winner takes all. You demons did indeed lose back then,” the

chubby man snickered in response.

“Yonghe, you...” the moment Black Dragon spoke, he saw the man on the chair frown.

“Watch what you say.”

“Alright, fine. It was my mistake. But, you are right. Winner takes all. We demons did lose back then, but this time... I, Black Dragon, will win for sure,” Black Dragon nodded, then took a sip of the cheap jasmine tea and revealed a look of enjoyment. “Don’t worry so much. This is already my territory. The demons are not like those people of the Immortal Region. Am I right?”

“I really wouldn’t want to work with you if I wasn’t forced by the situation,” the chubby man revealed a dark look. “Also, don’t get so full of yourself to think that you’ll win for sure. It’s still too early.”

“Please tell me more!” Black Dragon made a please gesture.

“I just came to tell you not to let down your guard. Do you really think that the Immortal Region and the Underworld where fighting? Also, why do you think that the cities in the outer regions are empty?”

“What do you mean? You told me that you had succeeded. That’s why I mobilized all my forces,” Black Dragon’s expression turned dark and intense pressure filled the room. At the same time, one could also see a faint figure of a black dragon appear behind him. “If you don’t give me a reasonable explanation, then I feel like we won’t be on good terms anymore.”

“Retract your spiritual pressure. Don’t you find this pointless? The chubby man asked him. “Now that we’re like locusts tied to one rope, do you think that I will be some kind of double agent?”

“Heh,” Black Dragon did not deny the man’s words, but he still maintained his spiritual pressure.

He had already completely locked onto the man. As long as Black

Dragon willed it, he could take the chubby man's life instantly.

Of course, that was assuming if the chubby man had no backup plans.

"Alright, in order to make sure that our misunderstanding does not deepen, I'll waste some time to explain it to you," the chubby man shrugged.

Black Dragon said darkly, "I hope your answer will satisfy me."

"When I sent you the message, the Immortal Region and the Underworld were already in an intense war. Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens appeared and suppressed all the higher ups of the Immortal Region by himself. That was when I messaged you to tell you to mobilize your army... But then, a man suddenly appeared between the two realms," the chubby man stood up from his seat. "That man mediated the relationships of the Immortal Region and Underworld all by himself, and set up a plan using your wishes. I wanted to inform you, but that person seemed to suspect me, so I could only stay put. I couldn't help but to take the risk of coming to see you when I saw that you are slowly stepping into his trap."

"..." Black Dragon frowned. His eyebrows locked together, while his eyes revealed a bit of hesitation. "Should I believe you?"

"Your choice. I've done my part coming here. I have to hurry back now so that they won't notice and become even more suspicious of me," the chubby man stood up and begun to walk out. "Let me advise you. If you have no backup plan, then you better cancel your next course of action. Otherwise, you will definitely end up in a pitiful state."

Then, the chubby man left as suddenly as he appeared.

After he left, Black Dragon snorted with a smirk, "Backup plan? How could I not have one? Luring me into a trap with my own thinking, right? Let me do the same!"

Chapter 681 – Bi'an

The night fell.

After all the civilians were evacuated, the outer regions of the Immortal Region seemed extremely cold, but there seemed to be an extra layer of meaning to the cold.

When one looked around, they would be able to see demon cavalry patrolling around the cities on single horned oxen.

The normal demon soldiers also stood with their backs straight and guarded the cities diligently.

“Why didn’t you finish your words just now?” Ye Zichen looked at the white-robed man in confusion as they stood in the sky.

Ye Zichen clearly felt that the white-robed man only spoke about a small portion of his plans in the subdimension. It was as if he was being wary of someone so he was unwilling to explain everything.

“There are some things that I can’t explain clearly about,” the white-robed man looked down at Maple City. “Not everyone around us is on our side. You have to realize that this is wartime, so both sides would be making moves.”

“But you still talked about the approximate plans. Were you... scattering bait?”

“You’re sure smart today,” the white-robed man pursed his lips with a smile. “What I said was to lure the snake out of its hole. Fortunately, that guy really couldn’t stand it anymore, and chose to take the risk of meeting Black Dragon.”

Ye Zichen was shocked. He thought that he was careful enough, but he still didn’t notice that someone had actually left.

“Who? Great Emperor Yonghe?”

“Mhmm,” the white-robed man shrugged casually, and pointed down at Maple City. “Great Emperor Yonghe just entered the city.”

“So that guy’s words were true!” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but exclaim softly.

The white-robed man glanced at him and raised his eyebrows, “What? Did someone tell you to pay attention to Yonghe?”

“Yeah,” Ye Zichen nodded. “Do you remember when I found you and told you about what had happened when I went to the Immortal Region? Didn’t you tell me to pay attention to Yonghe? Actually, a friend from the God Realm also told me the same before you.”

The white-robed man put on a listening face.

Ye Zichen continued with a frown, “But I thought that Yonghe was just contacting the God Realm, because the people in Yonghe temple were frightened to see Cui Twelve. I didn’t expect that he was actually linked to Black Dragon.”

“Ha...” the white-robed man shook his head with a smile, then looked forward thoughtfully. “There are some things I can’t tell you right now. There are laws in this dimension limiting my existence. You’ll know in the future why he knows the people from the Four Direction Palace and is linked to Black Dragon as well!”

“You...”

“Shhh,” the white-robed man reached out and pointed above their heads. “Someone’s watching us up there. Don’t say anything too reckless, got it?”

“But just now, you...”

“I was just saying random stuff. It was just a joke. I didn’t expect you to take me seriously. His Majesty of the Four Direction Palace is an unparalleled existence in the God Realm. He’s my idol, I won’t let you tarnish his name!” the white-robed man grabbed Ye Zichen’s collar with a chuckle. Then a smirk appeared on his face. “Stop blanking out here. We’ve got a mission, remember?”

...

A middle-aged man in a golden dragon robe stood in front of a waterfall that seemed to begin from above the sky. The waterfall remained completely still, while a scene was played on the waterfall. The people in the scene was Ye Zichen and the white-robed man.

At that moment, an elder who looked like the Turtle Chancellor of the East Sea.

“Your Majesty, her Seventeenth Highness has come out of closed cultivation.”

Whoosh.

The scene shattered, and the waterfall begun to flow once more.

“Seventeen’s out now?”

The middle-aged man had a very grand voice, and carried a majestic aura.

When he turned around, anyone who looked at him would feel that one was unable to actually pay attention to his appearance. All anyone would be able to pay attention to were his amber colored eyes.

When a person saw that pair of eyes, they can’t help but feel respect, submissiveness or even terror.

This man was the majesty of the God Realm’s Four Direction Palace.

He was one of the three heavyweights of the God Realm – Bi’an!

“She came out three days earlier than I expected,” Bi’an smiled, then raised his eyebrows. “Where is she now?”

“Her seventeenth highness went directly to his twelfth highness’s room. It isn’t surprising since they have always been close, but what made me surprised was that his ninth highness also went over. Out of all of them, the ninth highness has the worst relationship with the two,” the turtle chancellor played with his

moustache and his light shone with an intelligent light. “There might some tricks at play here.”

“There aren’t too many tricks between children. It’s good that Old Nine can get on better terms with Seventeen. You have no need to worry about that!”

“I spoke too much. I request for Your Majesty’s punishment,” the turtle chancellor repeatedly slapped his mouth, while cold sweat dripped down his face. His already hunched back bent even lower as he shuddered.

“No need to mind,” Bi’an smiled, then transferred a slither of spiritual energy into the turtle chancellor’s body by putting his hand onto the latter’s shoulder. “You are actually sweating cold sweat on such a nice day. You have to get yourself checked out by a doctor.”

“Your Majesty, thank you for your concern,” the turtle chancellor replied with a tremble.

Bi’an nodded, then turned around, “Since you’re here, I do have something I would like to trouble you about.”

“Your Majesty, please.”

“I noticed two interesting fellows in the Lower Three Realms. One of them is not from our dimension. I don’t know how he is defying nature’s law and suppressing his own strength to around that of a Sky Supreme.”

“Your Majesty, you said not from our dimension?”

“Indeed, I don’t know where he came from. His real strength shouldn’t be much weaker than me. He might even be stronger,” Bi’an smiled indifferently.

However, the news was shocking for the turtle chancellor.

Even stronger than His Majesty!

Bi’an is already a peak existence in the God Realm, if that other

person is stronger than him...

“Your Majesty, what would you like me to do?” the turtle chancellor wasn’t confident at all. He was merely at the Earth Supreme level. A being stronger than His Majesty could kill him with a sneeze.

“I want you to investigate into his origins. Although he has suppressed his strength at the level of a Supreme, he is still destroying the balance of the Lower Three Realms. If it is possible, please advise him to leave.”

Gulp.

The turtle chancellor couldn’t help but gulp. He really is making me do...

“What is it? Do you not want to complete the task I handed you? If you feel like it is too difficult, I can always ask...”

“I’ll go!” the turtle chancellor quickly straightened his back as much as possible and shouted loudly.

Bi’an revealed a satisfied look. “I’ll be troubling you. Oh yeah, go and call Seventeen over. I want to see her!”

Chapter 682 – Sky Supreme Liu Qing

Bi'an still stood in front of the waterfall that seemed to begin from above the sky. There were now a few more chairs near the river underneath the waterfall than there were when Bi'an was conversing with the turtle chancellor.

Bi'an faced the river and watched the surging water silently.

A sound of footsteps on pebbles covered the sound of gushing water. Liu Qing was wearing a violet robe with a faint design of flames that shimmered lightly

Cui Twelve, who had just returned from the Immortal Region, stood beside her, while Bian Tianrui, whose face was covered in a force smiled, deliberately stood slightly behind the two.

Golden robe!

Liu Qing's eyes opened wide when she saw the robe Bi'an was wearing.

Cui Twelve and Bian Tianrui were surprised as well. His Majesty had only worn the golden robe with a dragon on it once in the past ten thousand years.

That time, it was during his final battle against [Taotie](#)!

The golden robe definitely had a special meaning for Bi'an, but he actually wore it when calling for them...

"Your Majesty, you were looking for me?" Liu Qing's tone was slightly cold. She stopped in her tracks when she was about ten meters behind Bi'an, then cupped her hands.

"Take a look at that boulder."

Bi'an pointed towards a boulder that weighed at least several tons beneath the waterfall. The boulder had been underneath the waterfall for countless years.

Its age there had long surpassed the majority of the people in the

God Realm.

Creak.

Creak.

Creak.

A crack appeared in the boulder underneath the waterfall the moment Bi'an finished speaking. As the water fell on it, the crack only became larger and larger...

Until...

Boom.

The entire boulder shattered into pieces, and the current became even more violent.

The smithereens of the boulder were washed away savagely by the water. Bi'an also turned around and looked at the two people who were uninvited, but still came with Liu Qing. "Take a seat."

"Yes."

The trio sat down. The scene of the boulder being destroyed was still fresh in their minds.

They did not understand why Bi'an showed them that scene.

"Seventeen, I am very sad that you actually didn't come to find me after you came out of closed cultivation," Bi'an smiled. However, there was no hint of him actually reprimanding her.

Liu Qing smiled, and Bi'an continued, "You broke through into the Sky Supreme level?"

"I was fortunate enough to break through into the first rank," Liu Qing instantly stood up.

Bi'an indicated for her to sit down, then turned to Cui Twelve and Bian Tianrui, "Look, Seventeen is the youngest amongst all of you, and was the latest here, yet she has already broken through into the Sky Supreme level. Now look at you!"

“Little Sister Seventeen is shockingly talented. Only His Second Highness and Six Highness can match her,” Cui Twelve replied with a smile.

“Big Brother Twelve is right,” Bian Tianrui also nodded.

“Old Nine,” Bi’an sighed softly.

Bian Tianrui immediately stood up when he noticed the gaze and gulped, “Here, Your Majesty.”

“How was Immortal Region’s Mount Supreme?”

“Your Majesty, please forgive me.”

Bian Tianrui immediately prostrated onto the ground and kowtowed repeatedly.

“Do you remember the pledge you made that day?” Bi’an did not even look at Bian Tianrui.

Meanwhile, even though Bian Tianrui’s head was already bleeding from all the kowtows, his expression did not change at all. “Forgive me Your Majesty. This...”

“This what? Everyone in the Upper Three Realms knows that I only care about the results,” Bi’an looked coldly at Bian Tianrui. “Old Nine, tell me, did you get anything?”

“Your Majesty! Your Majesty!” Bian Tianrui trembled as he pled for mercy.

Bi’an answered softly, then slowly lifted his hand...

“Your Majesty, please let Ninth Brother go,” at that moment, Liu Qing suddenly stood up from her chair and knelt beside Bian Tianrui, then looked at Bi’an intently. “The senior at Mount Supreme had already decreed that everything inside it was to be left for the Chosen One. Ninth Brother ran into the Chosen One when he went to Mount Supreme. He did not intend for that to happen.”

“Seventeen, are you asking for mercy on his behalf?” Bi’an stood

up and walked beside Liu Qing, while his golden robe seemed ever more blinding underneath the sunlight.

Liu Qing bit her lips and lowered her head, “Your Majesty, please forgive him.”

Bi'an raised his hand once more.

Liu Qing, Bian Tianrui and also Cui Twelve, who was watching on the side, opened their eyes wide.

“Your...”

“Haha, get up. Little Seventeen. You know that I spoil you, so you intentionally made it hard for me, right? Alright, since you asked, then Old Nine can live, but he cannot avoid punishment,” Bi'an helped Liu Qing up, then looked towards Bian Tianrui. “The merchant department is lacking some people recently. Go and experience life there for a while.”

“Your Majesty, thank you for your mercy,” Bian Tianrui's clothes were already drenched in cold sweat. His face was already stark white. He continued to kowtow while trembling.

Bi'an snorted, “If you're going to thank anyone, thank Seventeen. If she didn't ask for mercy on your behalf, do you think I would have left a piece of trash like you alive?”

“Seventeen, tha...”

“You can't even speak clearly. Ugh! Move!”

Bang.

Bi'an sent Bian Tianrui flying for a hundred meters with his palm. Then, he put away his menacing look and smiled towards Cui Twelve. “Twelve, you called me just now?”

“Ahem, Your Majesty, this one has already visited the Immortal Region's Yonghe Temple. I did not see Great Emperor Yonghe, but this one was still able to tell from the people there that they harbor unparalleled respect for you,” Cui Twelve answered simplistically.

Bi'an nodded with a smile, "Anything else?"

"Yes," Cui Twelve nodded. "When this one was returning from the Immortal Region, the chaos spread through the Lower Three Realms, and they seemed to be fighting amongst themselves. Your Majesty, should we..."

"Heh, what does that have to do with me? Twelve, although the information you offered was pointless, the fact that you still helped me get information during your break is worthy of a reward. Here is a Fortune Pill, it will aid you in breaking through to the fifth rank of the Earth Supreme level," Bi'an chuckled a delicate vial into Cui Twelve's hand.

Cui Twelve thanked Bi'an, then put the vial away, "Then this one will stop disturbing Your Majesty and Little Sister Seventeen. This one shall take his leave now."

Bi'an watched Cui Twelve leave with a smile, then shook his head and looked back to Liu Qing, before touching Liu Qing's mark of flames on her forehead. "The fire spiritual techniques are truly suitable for you. You actually managed to cultivate your own natal fire already. Your talent for this is comparable to your Second and Sixth Brother."

Liu Qing smiled, "I still have a long way to go to reach Second Brother and Sixth Brother's level."

"Humility is a virtue, but too much of it is not," Bi'an scolded in a caring manner. "Alright, you've suffered quite a bit during this closed cultivation. Tell me, what reward do you want? I will satisfy any wish that I can grant you."

"Your Majesty, Seventeen does have one request!"

"Tell me!"

"I want to descend!"

Taotie (饕餮) is a mythical Chinese beast with a ram's body, a person's face, a tiger's fangs, a human's hands, and eyes in its

armpits. It is a beast usually said to be very gluttonous.

Chapter 683 – Think up a plan

Timed seemed to stop. Even the surging waterfall stepped moving, and the falling leaves of the willow tree next to the river also stopped in mid-air.

The entire space seemed to stop following the laws of physics and the cause of all that...

“Sorry, but I must refuse.”

Bi'an stepped onto the pebbles and walked next to Liu Qing.

“I cannot grant this request of yours. Go and think of a new one. Come and find me here after you have done so.”

“Your Majesty...”

However, Bi'an lifted his hand before Liu Qing finished.

Liu Qing didn't move, but she was sent further and further from Bi'an until she completely disappeared from his sights. Only then did the area begin to follow the laws of physics once more.

“It's been ten thousand years, ten thousand years that nobody has dared to bargain with me. Did I spoil her too much?” Bi'an let out a long sigh, then he looked at the surging waterfall and shook his head. “But you are too alike. If you are here, Qing Yao, you would be surprise too, right?”

“Y-Your Majesty,” at that moment, a timid call rang out behind Bi'an.

Bi'an turned around and saw a nervous and meek looking girl standing behind him. “How goes the investigation of Yellow Emperor Xuan-Yuan?”

The girl was clearly slightly hesitant.

She bit her lips, then shook her head and bowed, “No news.”

“Is that so?” Bi'an smiled in a seemingly casual manner. “You

have to understand that the hope of the Nine Li's rest on your shoulders."

"I know," the girl sobbed.

"That's good. I have to remind you that my patience is limited. Bring me the Yellow Emperor Xuan-Yuan's information. Not only will I help you fuse the second soul in your body with you, I can release your clan. It'll be good for you and good for me. Got it?" With that, he turned back towards the waterfall. "Keep doing what you should be doing."

...

Liu Qing only stopped moving after being sent a kilometer away. All this time, she didn't move her feet at all.

She was no longer looking at a waterfall. Instead, countless mountains fell into her eyes. She was at the foot of a mountain, where manors stood beside each other. She could also see servants cleaning the white brick floor around her feet.

"Your Highness," all the servants greeted Liu Qing respectfully when they saw her.

At the same time, Cui Twelve and Bian Tianrui, who left earlier, walked towards her.

Bian Tianrui's wounds were mostly healed up. He had no need to worry about medical treatment as one of the Highness of the Four Direction Palace.

"How was it? Did His Majesty agree?"

Liu Qing shook her head with a dejected look on her face.

"Don't get too worried," Cui Twelve comforted.

"Uhm, actually, there is a way even if you aren't allowed to descend," Bian Tianrui said.

Liu Qing stared at him, "Go on?"

“Actually...”

When Bian Tianrui finished what he suggested, Cui Twelve and Liu Qing couldn't help but opened their eyes wide in surprise.

“Are you telling the truth?” Liu Qing squinted her eyes as she continued to stare at Bian Tianrui.

“I'm not so sure,” Bian Tianrui answered carefully.

Liu Qing frowned, “Then where did you get the information?”

“I cannot say,” Bian Tianrui shook his head.

Liu Qing stared at him meaningfully one last time before waving his hand. “Alright, I know it now. Go.”

After they sent Bian Tianrui away, Cui Twelve couldn't help but ask, “You believe what he said?”

“I rather believe what he said is true. Big Brother Twelve, help me pay more attention over there in the near future. Tell me immediately if anything changes.”

“Seriously, I couldn't tell what's so special about that kid to make you act like this,” Cui Twelve shook his head, then whispered in her ear. “His Majesty knows about his existence, but doesn't know that he is the reincarnation of the yellow Emperor. You have to know that the people His Majesty set his eyes on never ends up well. Be careful. Make sure His Majesty doesn't get angry at you because of Ye Zichen.”

“I know all that. Big Brother Twelve, I'll be relying on you for news,” Liu Qing cupped her hands towards Cui Twelve, then walked into a courtyard without looking back.

Cui Twelve could only shake his head with a wry smile and a shrug, “I really have a tough life.”

...

“Didn't Liu Wei said that Pool City's fighting with the demons? This is too quiet, and I can't sense any demonic aura in the

surroundings. Was he just messing with us?” Ye Zichen and the white-robed man stood in the sky and looked down upon Pool City.

The white-robed man knocked Ye Zichen’s head, “You’re supposed to be a bright guy, why did you ask that? No demons here mean that they have already fought. Conquering cities will be their first priority with all their armies here. Every single city is being guarded by demons except Pool City. It’s pretty clear that Qiu Yuan defeated them.”

“Defeated?”

“Don’t underestimate the strength of an Immortal King. You’ll get it when you reach that level,” the white-robed man replied softly.

At that moment, something shot through the sky. Qiu Yuan stood above the city lord manor in his armor, while holding his sword. “You still dare to come? You itching for beating again!?”

“Uhm, that’s...” City Lord Qiu stood beside Qiu Yuan and took a look at the newcomers. Then he smacked Qiu Yuan on the head. “Put your weapon down.”

With that, City Lord Qiu hurried over to welcome the white-robed man, “Sir.”

“How has Elder Qiu been?” the white-robed man replied with a smile.

City Lord Qiu quickly nodded, “I’ve been alright, but my rebellious son refused to listen to my words and ruined Sir’s plans...”

“No worries, this is better.”

“As long as he didn’t ruin Sir’s plans,” City Lord Qiu let out a sigh.

Qiu Yuan hurried over and couldn’t help but roll his eyes. “Dad, who’s he? He has some mosaic blocks on his face. Tsk, always

hiding! Brother Ye, why are you here as well?”

“Watch your language!” City Lord Qiu frowned as he scolded his son.

Qiu Yuan shrunk his neck. Although he was far stronger than City Lord Qiu, he had been under City Lord Qiu’s authority for so long that he only reacted habitually.

What’s more, he did actually care about the traditional virtues!

Respect your elders, love your juniors! Respect your teachers, salute your seniors! Filial piety towards your parents!

That was something he could not ignore!

“It is Qiu Yuan’s first time meeting me, but we have come into contact before. For example, the armor you’re wearing is something I once used.”

“What the f*ck, you never gave me anything nice,” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but mutter.

“I’ll take it off and give it to you,” Qiu Yuan got ready to take off his armor without thinking.

The white-robed man quickly stopped him, “That armor’s for you. He has his own.”

“Yeah, just keep it. An armor used by Sir is definitely no ordinary item. Why did I give birth to such a dumb son,” City Lord Qiu rolled his eyes, then turned towards the white-robed man with a smile. “Sir, I wonder...”

“I came to think up a plan with you!”

How would Cui Twelve act?

Chapter 684 – Qiu Yuan's story

City Lord Qiu brewed up pot of tea himself, then respectfully poured a cup for the white-robed man, "Please."

"Thank you," the white-robed man received it.

At that moment, the city lord manor was in shambles. There were signs of fighting everywhere one looked.

"It seems like the fight earlier was really intense."

"Intense? Nu-uh. It was just a one sided beating," Qiu Yuan twitched his mouth and ate a piece of snack. "Those damn grandsons actually broke my dearest remote control airplane, so I beat them up. They did send quite a few helpers in a middle, but I defeated all of them."

Qiu Yuan got more and more excited as he spoke. He pointed at the old pagoda tree in the courtyard, "You see that old pagoda tree? Those demon grandsons knocked it down. Seriously, I don't get why we have to run. They don't seem strong. Just directly fight them!"

Slap.

City Lord Qiu smacked Qiu Yuan's head.

Qiu Yuan complained in confusion, "Why did you hit me again? Isn't what I said true? I was alone and I beat up all of those demons."

"Seriously?" the old city lord trembled in anger. "If you weren't messing with your pile of trash, we would have gotten to Sir's sub dimension already. Would all this trouble have happened? It was fortunate that you didn't ruin the plans, otherwise, even your death wouldn't help with anything!"

"What trash? Those are my treasures," Qiu Yuan was rather unhappy that his father caused his prized possessions trash.

“City Lord Qiu, don’t fault Qiu Yuan anymore,” the white-robed man smiled, then turned to Qiu Yuan. “Perhaps the demon soldiers are very weak for you, but for the civilians inside your city or the villages outside your city, they are beings that the civilians need to look up to. Evacuating the civilians inside and outside the city is to protect them. What’s more, Qiu Yuan, be honest. If it wasn’t for them breaking your treasure, would you have done anything about them? I think not.”

The white-robed man said in a very calm tone. Qiu Yuan hesitated for a moment, but in the end he couldn’t deny what the man said.

Indeed, his strength had rocketed up massively through Senior Duan’s aid to the point that he could look down on the entire Three Realms.

But he bore no love for battle.

When the demons entered the city, he already sensed them the moment they stepped past the city gate. However, he had no desire to actually fight them.

He only wanted to put his treasures away, then run away with his father.

His hostility towards the demons was not due to some sort of grand belief like protecting his country. It was only because they broke his toys.

These sorts of rage would overcome him quickly, but would also dispel quickly.

It was very possible that he would just go back to ignoring the demons after a few hours.

The white-robed man knew that was Qiu Yuan’s personality, so he gave Ye Zichen a cue.

Ye Zichen stood up from his chair, “Let’s go out and chat.”

With that, he walked out the door.

Qiu Yuan hesitated for a moment, then followed Ye Zichen.

“Sir, do you think Chief Ye can succeed? City Lord Qiu had already lived a long life, he naturally understood what Ye Zichen called Qiu Yuan out for.

City Lord Qiu not only did not oppose the idea of getting Qiu Yuan to participate in the way, he actually full-heartedly supported it.

In City Lord Qiu’s perspective, protecting one’s home was what everyone should do. Since Qiu Yuan has the ability to change the tides of battle, he should naturally do something.

“City Lord Qiu why are you asking? Don’t you know what your son is like?” the white-robed man looked at the pair outside the door with a smile. “Ye Zichen will. He will convince Qiu Yuan.”

...

“I didn’t get to congratulate you on inheriting Senior Duan’s inheritance and breaking through to the Immortal King level,” Ye Zichen smiled.

Qiu Yuan also smiled, then chuckled wryly, “What’s there to congratulate me about? More power meant more responsibility. I wish I was just like before and am of the weak spiritual body level. That way, no matter what happens, I can be the one who can stay calm and relax. They say that the tall guy will do something when the sky collapses, but now... I’m the tall guy.”

Qiu Yuan walked forward with a sigh, then sat on a rock and looked up at the cloudy moon. “I know what Brother Ye wants to talk to me about. You want me to help out, right?”

Ye Zichen nodded, “I do want you to help, but it’s not a must. I can’t use a righteous reason to force you to join in. I’ll be honest, I’m rather close with the white-robed man. Although he has been acting in a more casual manner, I did notice that he often sighs. It’s

clear that he is rather troubled by the demons' actions."

"Of course, a million demon threats are here. All of them are elites, even the Three Realms together might not be able to truly oppose them," Qiu Yuan let out a sigh. "Although I am an Immortal King, I only just reached that level. The demons have Black Dragon of the Immortal King level, but since they have been resting for so long, do they only have that one Immortal King?"

"Qiu Yuan, you are truly making me see you in different light," Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile. He had originally thought Qiu Yuan to be merely a dandy, but Qiu Yuan's words made him change his mind.

"Hah, do you know why my father have such high expectation of me? Back when my older brother was still around, I have always looked up to him and used him as my idol. I studied military tactics and formations since I was a child. I began to cultivate my body when I was four years old, and possessed spiritual energy when I was six. It could be said that my talent was no worse than Ruan Qingtian's."

"Then..."

"It was an age of war then. My older brother was always fighting outside. I focused on trying to cultivate as much as possible so that I can one day go with my older brother share his burden. Then one day... only my father came back. I asked him where my older brother was, and he told me my older brother would come back later. That's why I worked even harder and wanted my older brother to see just how strong I got when he comes back. But... I heard the gossip between the maids. My older brother died in battle," Qiu Yuan's eyes teared up ,while his tone also became more depressed. "I didn't ask my father anything else after hearing that. From that day onwards, I detested warfare. I detested everything that causes a war. Military tactics, formations and cultivation were all things I hated."

“I don’t want to die on the battlefield like my older brother. I don’t want my corpse to go missing. Father never let a single tear from, and the soldier gradually forgot about my older brother. They all forgotten the fact that they were able to walk away from the battlefield because my older brother gave up his life in exchange! That’s why they can come back, get married and have kids. That’s why they can get promoted!”

“I felt like my older brother’s death wasn’t worth it. Say, in this sort of situation, if I join in and died in battle... I feel like it would be pointless!”

Chapter 685 – Going to Pool City

Black Dragon sat cross-legged on a bed in a dark room, while his body was illuminated with a faint gray light.

Without the ley lines, he was stuck at the ninth rank of the Immortal King level. Yet, despite being so, he never forgot about the basics, and would always find time to cultivate a bit each day in order to ensure that his strength stayed solidified.

After a round of cycling energy through his body, he let out a mouthful of impure energy, then slowly climbed off the bed and opened the room door. Li Min'e was already standing outside and waiting for him.

“What happened?”

“My Lord, Tennyson was injured. He is in the meeting halls right now, and Senior Qiu Hai is treating him,” Li Min'e replied calmly.

Black Dragon nodded, “Let's go take a look.”

The lights in the meeting halls were completely lit. Some of the demon sovereigns stood on the side of the meeting hall, while the bald demon sovereign laid injured in the middle with a drained expression on his face and countless chilling wounds.

Qiu Hai was repeatedly transferring spiritual energy into his body.

Judging from the bald demon sovereign's weak aura, the he might have already passed away if not for Qiu Hai using spiritual energy in order to keep him alive.

“Lord Black Dragon,” all the demon sovereigns greeted as they saw Black Dragon.

“Such grave wounds?” Black Dragon walked in front of the bald demon sovereign.

Qiu Hai also subconsciously moved his hand away.

Without the transfer of spiritual energy, the demon sovereign was like a person in critical condition without an oxygen mask, while his face was filled with a suffering look.

“Someone destroyed his qi ocean,” Black Dragon shook his head with a sigh after checking the bald demon sovereign’s wounds. “He’ll be useless even after getting treated. Tennyson, son you have worked with me for so long, I shall give you a swift end.”

Tennyson’s desire for survival made him shake his head intensely after understanding what Black Dragon was about to do. However, Black Dragon did not hesitate a single bit.

Bang.

Black Dragon smacked his fist down on Tennyson’s face.

The bald demon sovereign died instantly. The other demon sovereigns in the meeting hall also raise their eyebrows, but none dared to show their disagreement.

“My heart aches after ending my old friend,” although Black Dragon said that, he did not show any hints of that on his face at all. The bald demon sovereign’s body was merely left in the center of the meeting hall without anyone to care for it.

Black Dragon sat down on a chair and looked at the other demon higher ups, “Tennyson went over to Pool City, right?”

“Indeed,” an androgynous man stepped forward. He was the leader of the demon sovereigns. “Pool City has an Immortal King level expert. We have lost more than a thousand soldiers, and nearly ten thousand others are injured.

Black Dragon frowned and looked at the androgynous man with squinted eyes. “Are you sure that it was an Immortal King?”

“This subordinate...” the androgynous man clearly felt a lot less confident when faced with Black Dragon’s question.

On the other hand, Qiu Yuan spoke up, “Tennyson was of the

complete stage of the Sky Immortal level. Whoever it is definitely has the strength of an Immortal King since he destroyed Tennyson's qi ocean without Tennyson being capable of doing anything."

"Why didn't I know that the Three Realms had gained another Immortal King? Didn't the Yellow Emperor hide the ley line? Sky Immortals and Immortal Kings shouldn't be able to break through. Did the Yellow Emperor tell them where the ley line is?" Black Dragon's expression turned darker.

Qiu Hai glanced at him. "We don't know whether or not the ley line has surfaced again. What's important is that the Immortal Region has another Immortal King and killed one of our demon sovereign. You... the leader, need to take care of this."

"Heh..."

Black Dragon smiled while he endured his urge to rip the old demon in front of him apart.

I am the leader of the Demon Realm of the Lower Three Realms. Ever since this old demon appeared, he has been challenging my authority over and over again.

If it wasn't because this geezer being slightly useful...

Black Dragon relaxed his fist, while the dark look on his face seemed to disappear. He smiled at the rest with a warm smile, "Senior Qiu Yuan is right. We cannot just let Tennyson's death go like this. Demon Sovereigns, what do you think we should do?"

"Tennyson is our kin, we must take revenge!"

"Yes, so what if he is an Immortal King? He will die under the might of our army!"

"Revenge!"

"Yes, let's take revenge!"

The demon sovereigns in the meeting hall all called out. The only

ones who didn't speak were the two females amongst the demon sovereigns.

“Hua Kui, Min'e, you...”

“I will naturally follow Lord Black Dragon's order,” Hua Kui smiled, and shook her hips flirtatiously. Her seductive look caused even the demon sovereigns who have already worked with her for many years to feel their lust rise.

“I wasn't very close with Tennyson, but if Lord Black Dragon wants me to go, then I can go,” Li Min'e's expression continued to be indifferent.

The other demon sovereigns all revealed looks of anger. “Li Min'e, you...”

“What?” Li Min'e looked at them coldly. “You got a problem with that?”

She released a faint aura from her body, silencing the other demon sovereigns. Li Min'e was half way into the Immortal King level and she achieved that purely without the presence of the ley line.

With her talent, she might have already broken through into the immortal King level if the ley line had not been hidden.

In a way, Black Dragon should be thankful that the ley line was hidden. He had reached his level for a long time and was already at the Immortal King level before the ley line disappeared. However, ever since the ley line was hidden, the demon realm had plenty of talented people. He might not be the strongest of the demons if the ley line was still around.

If any one of those talented people were ambitious, then Black Dragon might not even still be the leader.

“Alright now. Min'e, if you don't want to go, then you don't have to,” Black Dragon smiled. “We need someone guarding our base as well. But at the same time, we must take revenge for Tennyson. So,

Hua Kui and Min'e will guard Maple City. The rest of you, go back and stand guard at your cities. Senior Qiu Hai and I will go to Pool City."

With that, Black Dragon asked in a suggestive manner to Qiu Hai, "Senior?"

"Since you need this old man, then this old man will naturally not refuse," Qiu Hai answered in a magnanimous manner.

Black Dragon smiled thankfully, while feeling more grudgeful towards Qiu Yuan.

Black Dragon knew very clearly what sort of person Qiu Yuan was. Qiu Yuan was clearly acting in a magnanimous manner so that the former's subordinates saw that.

Your life's crappy in the upper demon realm, so you want to enjoy your life here? My position is not so easily stolen away! Black Dragon continued to curse in his mind, while he maintained the warm smile.

After giving the necessary orders, Black Dragon bowed towards Qiu Yuan and made a please gesture. "Senior, please!"

Chapter 686 – Personal Feelings and Greater Good

The atmosphere in the courtyard became strangely suppressing rather dark after Qiu Yuan finished.

Ye Zichen let out a soft sigh. He could fully understand Qiu Yuan's point of view. When looking at everything from the perspective of a friend, he didn't want Qiu Yuan to get involved.

However, he didn't have the luxury of looking at it from a friend's point of view.

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth, then took out a cigarette and put it in his mouth. As smoke began to rise up towards the moon, Qiu Yuan clenched his teeth and sat down.

Neither of them spoke, and the only thing that could be heard in the courtyard was their breath.

“Not worth it. It really isn't,” Ye Zichen shook his head with a wry chuckle.

Qiu Yuan couldn't help but to try to explain when he heard the chuckle. “Boss Ye, it's not because of you, it's just that...”

“I get it,” Ye Zichen raised his hand to stop Qiu Yuan. He put down the cigarette and stood like a statue underneath the sky. “I won't force you. Since you feel like it's not worth it, then it's not.”

That was what Ye Zichen decided upon after thinking about it for a long time. He had actually come up with a lot of self-righteous words to say.

It being worth it or not was not something simple to weigh. What's more, some things were not a matter of if it was worth it, or if you should do it.

Instead, there were times when you must do something. You wouldn't have time to consider. As for the results...

Who cares if it's worth it or not.

One example was Qiu Yuan's older brother. Qiu Yuan felt like his brother's death was not worth it, but his older brother felt like it was clearly worth it.

Qiu Yuan's older brother had no regrets dying in a battle to protect his beloved little brother and family.

That was well worth it.

In the end, whether something was worth it or not was based on a person's values. If a person felt like something was important, even if ten thousand people claim that that thing was pointless, it was still important to that one person.

That was the way of humans.

Since Qiu Yuan felt like joining in the demon-eradicating war was not worth it, then what else could Ye Zichen do?

If he felt like it's worth it, then it would be. If he felt like it wasn't, then it wouldn't be.

Ye Zichen dropped his cigarette, then stomped it out before turning back to the City Lord's manner with a sad look on his face.

Meanwhile, Qiu Yuan stayed where he had sat down with a dazed look on his face. Although his lips were moving, he did not utter a single word.

"You failed?" the white-robed man smiled the moment Ye Zichen entered the room.

Ye Zichen nodded, then sat back in the chair in a sad manner.

City Lord Qiu was slightly surprised by their conversation. He couldn't help but ask, "Sir, didn't you say that my son will definitely..."

"Seriously, what sort of father are you!?" Ye Zichen shouted before the City Lord could finish. "Why are you forcing Qiu Yuan to participate when he doesn't want to? Shouldn't a father protect

his children? He is your only son, what will you do if he dies!?”

“Our Qiu family has protected the Immortal Region for generations regardless of the cost, we will continue to do it even if it cost us our lives or the destruction of our family!” City Lord Qiu’s expression was filled with righteousness.

However, that was merely ridiculous in Ye Zichen’s eyes.

People were all selfish, and that was especially true in this age of chaos...

Who are you trying to put on the show for?

“Wow, regardless of the cost. Then stop forcing Qiu Yuan into battle. How about you set an example?”

“Why not?” City Lord Qiu’s expression did not change.

Ye Zichen paused for a moment, then smiled wryly.

I guess we do need ‘idiots’ like City Lord Qiu right now.

Otherwise, if everybody only cared for themselves, and nobody wanted to take the lead, how could we possibly guard the Three Realms?

Ye Zichen did not mock City Lord Qiu.

The white-robed man also smiled and apologized to City Lord Qiu, “Ye Zichen might have spoken too much. Please do not take it to heart.”

“No, no, in this age of chaos, it’s hard to find an idiot like me,” City Lord Qiu smiled in self-mockery. “But I do care about Qiu Yuan. I’ll be honest, if I personally don’t want him to go to war like his older brother. I want to burden myself with it all so that he can stay away from the battle. I don’t want to send my child off after what happened with his older brother. If the situation isn’t so dire, then I want Qiu Yuan to stay a dandy. However... His strength is needed right now.”

City Lord Qiu showed a struggling expression. It was clear that he

was still rather conflicted.

In times like this, one always had to make the choice between personal feelings and the greater good. He always chose to discard his personal feelings in the countless struggles in his mind.

Although his heart ached, he still stood firmly by his choice.

“Let him decide himself,” the white-robed man smiled, then signaled City Lord Qiu to calm down, before standing up from the chair.

Qiu Yuan, who was hiding outside, left frantically, while the white-robed man raised his eyebrows and looked towards the sky with a smile, “We’ve got guests.”

...

Black Dragon and Qiu Hai stood in the sky.

“Qiu Hai, how is it?” Black Dragon looked over.

Qiu Hai squinted his eyes with a frown, “A very suppressing aura. I guess it is normal for your subordinate to have gotten injured like that.”

“There are four people in the city. The complete stage and mid-stage Sky Immortals are of no threat, but what makes me wary are the other two,” Black Dragon frowned. He had reached his current strength a long time ago.

A person who made him feel pressured was no ordinary person.

“One of the other two should be the newly ascended Immortal King.”

“Newly ascended?” Black Dragon’s pupils contracted. “How could a newly ascended Immortal King release such pressure? He feels like an Immortal King of the later ranks. At least the seventh rank I would say.”

“The power was forced into him,” Qiu Hai smiled. “Didn’t Mount Supreme appear in the Immortal Region recently? That’s the

inheritance of the God Realm's Duan Gu. Duan Gu was rather strong back then, and was quite famous in all of the Upper Three Realms. The young man should have gotten his inheritance. He really is fortunate. Duan Gu has died for several thousand years, and countless people from both the God Realm and Yao Realm wanted to gain his inheritance. I can't believe that it ended up with this young man."

"I see, then, the other..." Black Dragon nodded, then asked with a frown.

"You should have met the other one before."

"I have?" Black Dragon was confused. When did I meet such an expert before? I can barely breathe due to the pressure radiating out from him.

Just as he was wondering when he had met such a master, three figures flew out from Pool City.

The one in the lead was the white-robed man in a snow white robe. He smiled softly, "Long time no see!"

Chapter 687 – The Fall of Qiu Hai

Black Dragon felt a chill when he heard the casual greeting. I actually didn't detect anyone coming towards me!?

I can even detect it if it was Qiu Hai.

Just who is that person? How did he get around my senses? Why is he giving me so much pressure?

Black Dragon raised his eyebrows and glanced forward. When he saw the person, his pupils contracted.

The trap.

It must have been all planned by him.

"I apologize for not greeting you sooner when you visited. I wonder what did you come to Pool City for? Why don't you come and have a chat with us in the halls?" the white-robed man made a please gesture.

Qiu Hai couldn't help but purse his lips and smiled, "So you didn't return to the Upper Realms yet. Are those God Realm fellows provoking the existence of the Laws?"

"Listen to yourself. You didn't return yet, so why should I?" a hint of laughter could be seen in the white-robed man's eyes as he replied indifferently.

Qiu Hai's expression shifted for a moment when he saw the look the white-robed man gave him, then snorted, "The cowardly small fry back then actually dares to act like this in front of me? I guess I really do have to make you remember what happened then."

Good, fight. I'll reap the benefits. Oh, the Yellow Emperor's reincarnation is here too. This really will be killing two birds with one stone. Black Dragon thought to himself.

The white-robed man shrugged, "I merely wanted to let the injured get treated quicker. Cowardly small fry? That's a bit

arrogant. I'll be honest, I really don't want us to fight right now, but since this is the case, then it can't be helped."

A gust of wind blew past, causing their robes to flutter in the sky.

The white-robed man smiled, then put on Huang Feihong's signature pose, while spiritual energy started to spiral around him...

The seemingly meager spiritual instantly soared out like a surging torrent and pressed down towards Black Dragon and Qiu Hai.

It was a suffocating feeling, and the moment the pressure appeared, Black Dragon's eyes were filled with an unbelievable shock.

The pressure he felt was more than ten times stronger than what he felt when he had arrived in the city's territory.

Even Qiu Hai's eyes twitched. Although he was a Sky Supreme, he still felt a chilling pressure and a hint of danger.

It was something he had only felt from the Demon Emperor.

"Ye Zichen, be careful later. This geezer is no weakling. I might not be able to protect you while I'm fighting with him."

The white-robed man reminded Ye Zichen through his sea of consciousness.

Ye Zichen nodded towards the man, then slowly backed off.

They were finally going to fight!

Qiu Hai laughed coldly. Pressure did not mean everything. He would only know the man's true strength after they fought. What's more, the Lower Three Realm's Law limited things so that the highest level of strength that could be used was that of a first ranked Sky Supreme's. Qiu Hai did not believe that he would be the weaker amongst the two when that's the case.

"Heh, puny small fry!"

Boom.

With that, Qiu Hai also released a powerful surge of spiritual energy from his body, which glittered with a purple light. The mirage of a demon holding two hammers seemed to be mixed amongst the energy, which glared at the white-robed man.

At that moment, the white-robed man stopped holding back. He released a powerful pale blue aura around him. Then a giant image of a sea god holding a trident appeared and stared at the opposing demon mirage.

A lion should use its full strength even against a rabbit. The white-robed man was not about to overestimate himself and get destroyed for that.

“Let me tell you this first. I don’t have a good impression of you demons. If I wound you gravely or kill you, please understand that.”

The sea god behind him rose its trident high, while water attribute spiritual energy gathered towards the weapon.

The demon behind Qiu Hai did the same. It crossed its hammers and began to let marks appear on them.

“Heh.”

Qiu Hai began to feel more and more pressure from the white-robed man, and this pressure also ate away at his fighting spirit. When Qiu Hai finally couldn’t take it anymore, he chose to attack.

“What a shame, he lost.”

Meanwhile, the turtle chancellor shook his head with a sigh in a corner outside Pool City.

“That demon geezer’s avatar is a primordial demon... What a talented person. I wonder if the demons will be outraged when he dies here,” then he shrugged and continued his mutterings. “But so what. The best thing that’ll happen is if all the demons die. As for

the guy he's facing. He should be the one His Majesty was talking about. A primordial sea god avatar... That's clearly not the strength a Sky Supreme should have. Oh my, His Majesty is clearly just making things difficult for me!"

At the same time, Qiu Hai's demon avatar swung its hammer towards the white-robed man. Yet, it was like the turtle chancellor said.

He lost!

The white-robed man suddenly opened his eyes, while the sea god behind him pointed towards the demon avatar.

Then...

A hole ripped through the demon avatar.

Boom.

The demon avatar crumbled, while Qiu Hai also knelt down in the sky and spat out a mouthful of blood.

He opened his eyes wide in shock and glanced at the shimmering avatar.

"How's this possible!?"

His avatar was a primordial demon, and that made him a rarity even in the Demon Realm. That was something he had gotten from Black Dragon by chance when he descended, it was supposed to turn his life around...

But how!?

I lost.

My primordial demon actually lost to this wave-riding person with a crown on its head and scales on its arm!

"Impossible!" Qiu Hai roared with bloodshot eyes. He struggled to stand up and resummoned his avatar.

"Stop trying. The sea god is a primordial god. Your avatar has

already been shattered,” the white-robed man slowly walked towards Qiu Hai, while the avatar behind him began to disperse. At the same time, the man’s robe begun to turn blue, a crown appeared on his head, and the sea god’s trident appeared in his hand.

“H-How do you know this, that’s...”

“You understand now?” the white-robed man smirked and lifted the trident high. “Yes, it is as you said. Do you feel like it is a reasonable death now?”

“No, I can’t die! My ambition...” Qiu Hai scuttled back frantically.

The white-robed man sighed, then through the trident out like a spear and pierced it through Qiu Hai. “I told you already. I don’t like demons.”

Qiu Hai stopped breathing and fell on the ground.

The white-robed man dispelled his own condition, then glanced down at a place outside Pool City.

He noticed me!

The turtle chancellor gulped, then ran. I definitely won’t be able to complete the mission now. His Majesty didn’t give me a time limit, so let’s just wait and see.

“Hah...” the white-robed man smirked, then looked towards Black Dragon, who was preparing to run. “You want to run? Why leave so quickly when you’re already here?”

Chapter 688 – Let the game begin!

A gust of wind blew against Black Dragon's face.

It should have brought a hint of coolness for him in the heated night, but he felt like he fell into a deep hole of ice.

He did not find the white-robed man's 'kind' invitation very nice. He had wanted to be the person who benefits from the fight between Qiu Hai and the white-robed man by capturing Ye Zichen.

Then, he was supposed to kill both of them when they were locked in combat.

His wish was grand, but reality was...

Savage.

The old guy from the Demon Realm, who has always acted as if he was better than anyone, failed to even stand up against one of his foe's strike and directly died.

Does that mean nobody in the Lower Three Realms can match up to him?

All Black Dragon could think of was that he placed too much trust into Qiu Hai's strength. He even wanted to curse out loud...

F*cking hell!

"What? Are you not going to give me face?" the grim reaper like voice sounded out once more.

The truth was that Black Dragon didn't want to give him face, but in the current situation...

Black Dragon let out a soft sigh, then turned back and raised his eyebrows, "How could I not? I cannot reject your invitation no matter what."

"Then, please!" the white-robed man pointed the way to the meeting hall.

Black Dragon gripped his fists tightly, then relaxed it, before slowly walking past the white-robed man nervously.

...

Inside the meeting halls of the Pool City's City Lord's manor.

The hall was terrifyingly silent in the serene night. A faint fragrance of tea flowed out from it.

The white-robed man sat opposite Black Dragon and sipped his tea, "Lord Black Dragon, why aren't you moving?"

"I don't have much interest in all this," Black Dragon smiled, while still being nervous. He couldn't help but act like that, after all...

The white robed man sat opposite him. The Pool City's City Lord sat beside him.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen, the weakest and the one he wanted to target, was protected by the white-robed man's spiritual energy.

Black Dragon was in a dire position.

"Is that so? But I seem to have heard that Lord Black Dragon really likes tea. Don't worry, I won't do anything with it," the white-robed man pursed his lips with a smile.

Black Dragon picked up the tea cup awkwardly and took a symbolic sip before putting it down again, "I wonder what Sire would like to discuss with me?"

"You should know better than me, right?" the white-robed man directly returned the question to Black Dragon.

Black Dragon licked his lips, then shook his head, "If you want to use me to threaten my subordinates, then you will be making a fatal mistake."

"Oh?"

"People of your level definitely understand how demons are. We

never care about relationships. The only reason I became the master of the Demon Realm was through plain strength which deters them. They do hold a grudge against how much I took from them. They rather I die, since that would let them select a new master.”

“Then you mean capturing me is useless?” the white-robed man seemed to show a moved expression.

Black Dragon quickly held on to the chance, “You can say that. But it’s not completely useless. Since you captured me, then my life is in your hands. I want to discuss some terms in exchange for my life.”

“What is it?”

Black Dragon let out a long sigh, then tried his best to think of the words that can be used to convince the white-robed man.

“Hurry up, I don’t have so much time to waste,” the white-robed man said coldly, while a suffocating aura begun to fill up the hall.

“Actually, you would just want to see the Three Realms remain the Three Realms. I promise you that I will lead all the demons back to our sub dimension. I will assure you that I will not touch even a single strand of grass from the Three Realms within the next thousand years!”

“Thousand years?”

“Ten thousand years!” Black Dragon immediately changed the date. When he noticed that the white-robed man was still dissatisfied, he spoke once more. “I swear that I will never attack the Three Realms again... If you don’t believe me, then I can swear on my heart demon and let the Laws bear witness.”

Black Dragon gazed hopefully towards the white-robed man, but noticed that the latter didn’t seem satisfied. “What do you actually want me to do?”

The rise of the demons, conquering the Three Realms...

None of that mattered compared to living on.

He already decided that worst come to worst, he will just hide in the sub dimension a bit longer. The Yellow Emperor's reincarnation will become a Supreme one day, and when that happens, Black Dragon himself can just ascend to the Demon Realm and ignore everything down here.

"I thought you would be an ambitious one," the white-robed man snickered, then slowly stood up and stretched lazily. "I am rather happy with what you said just now, especially about the swearing it by your heart demon."

"Then I will immediately..."

"But I refuse," the white-robed man interrupted Black Dragon mercilessly, then chuckled. "I said it when I dealt with Qiu Hai earlier. I have bear no good feelings about demons."

"Actually, I'm not a demon, I'm a dragon."

"It is the same towards the dragons," the white-robed man's expression turned sullen. "I only have respect for just a few of the dragons. I have no good impression of the rest. And you are not one of the few. Alright, I made it very clear already. I can only apologize to you. I really didn't expect everything to end so simply when I made such a refined plan."

His white robe turned pale blue, while the gold trident appeared in his hands once more.

After seeing what had happened earlier, they knew that he had used that form to kill the Sky Supreme Qiu Hai in one hit.

Normally speaking, Black Dragon should already be afraid. He should be kneeling on his knees and begging for mercy.

However, everyone in the room could see that he was smiling.

Indeed, he was smiling.

"I underestimated you just now. You are kind of brave. Seeing as

you can laugh in the face of death, then I will give you a swift end,” the white-robed man lifted his trident high.

Black Dragon smiled and looked at him fearlessly, “Are you sure that you want to kill me? If you kill me, then everything you planned will go to waste?”

“Hmm?”

“You know this, right?” Black Dragon opened his palm and revealed a jade tablet for communication.

“I really did underestimate you,” the white-robed man’s tone turned cold.

Black Dragon shrugged, and the fear he showed earlier completely disappeared. He pushed himself up from the chair and pushed the white-robed man’s trident aside. “Let the game begin!”

Chapter 689 – Master Yao

Great Emperor Yonghe sat on his bed and looked at the jade tablet shimmering with red light on the shelf.

It was given to him by Black Dragon for communication.

Although the two normally would not communicate, if Great Emperor Yonghe remembered correctly, then red meant that it was time.

It's time to move out!

“It's earlier than I predicted!”

Great Emperor Yonghe smiled craftily in the dark room. He reached out to grab his jacket which seemed to have lost its color, then left the room with the jade table in his hand.

...

The night was incomparably silent.

Yet, the many things seemed to be happening in the white-robed man's subdimension, disturbing its serenity.

“I can't believe it, the Immortal Region has so many ungrateful people.”

A group of experts gathered in front of what was supposed to be a cliff without anyone there. If anyone paid attention, they definitely would find it rather weird, because all of them were reputed people in the Three Realms.

The one who spoke was the sect master of the Fire Cloud Gate. He remained in closed cultivation even during the earlier battles. His fire-like hair also symbolized that he had already cultivated the fire attribute techniques to the extreme.

“Old Fire Monster, the Five Sovereigns treat you well, but you're here too, aren't you?”

The one who spoke was the pavilion head of the Firmament Pavilion. They never got along with the Fire Cloud Gate, and both of them being there was truly a twist of fate.

“I didn’t expect to see an old geezer like you here,” the Fire Cloud Gate sect master glanced at him sullenly, then snorted. “You better act properly. Otherwise, I don’t mind ending you here and now.”

“Anyone can brag. End me? Why don’t you try?”

Neither old man gave in to another, while flames seemed to shoot out from their eyes.

“Since you’re both here, then we’re all on the same side. Fighting amongst ourselves before solving the external issue isn’t a good idea, is it?” At that moment, an elegant looking man holding a fan appeared between the two and separated them.

The surrounding people were all slightly confused. They couldn’t remember who the man was.

After a while, someone finally exclaimed, “Master Yao, that’s Master Yao!”

The Mu family head of the outer regions has two sons. One of them, Mu Chengtian, was from the family head’s current wife, but he has always been plagued with sickness, and was famous amongst the outer regions of the Immortal Region for that.

However, the Mu family head did have another wife before the previous one.

She was from the Xiao family of the outer regions. Her family wasn’t a very important one, but it wasn’t a normal family either. The Mu family head was accompanied by her the entire time before becoming the family head.

However, during the contest for the family head position, the current Mu family head wasn’t in a very good position. In order to win the position over, he chose to discard his wife back then, and chose to marry the young lady of the famed Tang family of the

outer regions.

Master Yao naturally returned with his mother to their clan and changed his surname to Xiao. The Xiao family also moved to the Hundred Flowers City

Plenty of people felt pity for them when it became more well known.

Part of it was because the Xiao lady was a true woman of the house, while the Tang lady has always been overly arrogant, so the Mu family head's future days would be rather terrible.

The second was because of Xiao Yao.

Xiao Yao was clearly a talented child, and his talent could be said to be amongst the best in the past ten thousand years. If the Mu family head could have endured everything for ten years or so until Xiao Yao came of age, then the Mu family was still his, and they would definitely be greater than ever with Xiao Yao.

However, he didn't.

That was why they were all surprised when the genius young man had appeared.

"So people still actually still recognize me? That's comforting to know," Xiao Yao smiled softly turned to the armored man with a stern face and a longsword in his hand with a mocking laugh. "Actually, everyone here has their own reasons for being here, but this one..."

The sword wielding man looked up and gazed at Xiao Yao with a razor-sharp look.

"General Zhao being here isn't quite right is it? City Lord Lin is very nice to you, so nice that I'm actually kind of jealous," Xiao Yao's expression turned dark, and squinted his eyes like a snake's and gazed at Zhao Zizhao with a vicious look. "You actually want to betray Lin Xiyi when she has treated you so well!?"

“That’s none of your business,” Zhao Zizhao glanced at him plainly. “Stop acting righteously here. You are of the Hundred Flowers City as well. City Lord Zhao is very nice to your Xiao family as well, but you still came.”

“A friend asked me to come. I couldn’t help but be moved by his offer.”

“Then what are you blabbering on for?” Zhao Zizhao answered indifferently.

Xiao Yao glanced at him and shrugged, “Never mind, I don’t want to waste my words with a brute like you.”

“And I don’t want to speak too much to a sissy like you. Oh, let me remind you, Lin Xiyi will never like a sissy like you.”

“Say that again!?” Xiao Yao roared angrily and pointed towards Zhao Zizhao.

Those words touched his sore spot. Xiao Yao was indeed very handsome, but at the same time...

He was slightly feminine.

“So what if I say it ten thousand times? You sissy!”

“You are seeking death!” Xiao Yao’s eyes filled up with blood. He drew his sword out and pointed it at Zhao Zizhao. “I shall help Xiyi clean her subordinates up!”

“I fear you won’t be able to do that,” Zhao Zizhao drew his sword as well, while he radiated a murderous aura like an unsheathed blade.

The surrounding people were rather shocked by the turn of events, and that was especially true for the Fire Cloud sect master and the Pavilion Head of the Firmament Pavilion.

Master Yao just pulled us apart, why is he starting to fight now.

Yet, nobody dared to stop the pair from fighting. Zhao Zizhao is a reputed general, while Xiao Yao is a long reputed genius.

The surrounding people needed to actually think long and hard before even attempting to stop the two.

“Things doesn’t seem quite right here,” Great Emperor Yonghe appeared between the two and pushed them apart just as the two were facing off against each other.

When the surrounding people saw Great Emperor Yonghe, they all bowed, “Great Emperor.”

Yonghe nodded with a smile, “We are all here to do something great. I don’t care what grudges you might have between you guys, but put it aside now. Fight how you like when the future is decided. I definitely will not interfere.”

He swept his gaze over the group. The Fire Cloud Sect Master and Firmament Pavilion Head lowered their heads.

Xiao Yao and Zhao Zizhao both snorted, put their weapons away and stood to one side each.

Seeing that, Great Emperor Yonghe nodded in satisfaction, then stretched lazily with a smile, “Are you ready? No one can turn back after this point!”

Chapter 690 – Qiu Hai is alive again

At the Pool City's City Lord's manor.

Black Dragon wore a carefree smile on his face after he activated the communication jade tablet as he looked towards the people in the meeting hall.

"If there is no surprise, then your place should have been conquered by my people already."

"Aren't you getting relaxed too early? I can still instantly take your life, then go back to the subdimension and remove the spy you left there," the white-robed man squinted his eyes and gripped his lance tighter.

"That's quite the case, but do you know who I left there?"

"Yonghe?"

"I really couldn't hide it from you," Black Dragon did not reveal any shocked or frantic expressions when the white-robed man mentioned who it was. He merely nodded slightly with a smirk. "You are right. Yonghe is the spy I left with you. You can return to the subdimension after you kill me. Even if they already conquered your place, since you created that subdimension, you are naturally invincible there."

"Since you know that, then why are you doing so much as to expose your spy and lose your life," the white-robed man truly did not understand. He could not comprehend why Black Dragon was able to fearlessly chat away after doing so much.

Something was truly wrong.

"I never expected to conquer your place. I merely want to affect the morale of your alliance," Black Dragon gazed to the brightening sky with his hands behind his back. "You rallied the entire Three Realms. I don't know how you did it, but I can't help you admire you for that. I, Black Dragon, am proud, but I am not

arrogant. Although the demon warriors are all elites, I do not deny that I only have a mere fifty percent chance of victory against the entire Three Realms.”

“Fifty percent? You are sure proud!” the white-robed man snorted.

“I definitely have a fifty percent chance, but I won’t tell you why,” Black Dragon looked seriously at the white-robed man, then raised his eyebrows. “But fifty percent is too low, I need a higher chance of success. The way to do that is to cause your alliance to crumble from within.”

“You rallied the Three Realms because they have the confidence in you to deal with the Demon Realm. Then the best way to make them lose their confidence in you is to directly make a move at your base. If someone can’t even defend their home, how are they supposed to attack their enemies. Am I right?” Black Dragon slowly turned around with a proud look on his face.

The truth was that the white-robed man really did not expect that at all. However, since things have already come to it, the best way of salvaging everything was to eliminate the demon general in front of him!

“You truly have some areas where you are spectacular in. You were a bit too humble when you said you won your position by force,” the white-robed man’s trident glittered. Spiritual energy radiated out from the weapon, causing the stones outside the building to vibrate.

“You are praising me too much,” Black Dragon cupped his hands with a smile.

“But you will not be able to escape death,” the trident soared out. Black Dragon crossed his arms and stood still with a soft smile, “You might be wrong on that account.”

With that, a huge flying hammer knocked the trident from its

track.

Everyone looked outwards and saw Qiu Hai, who had been slain by the trident prior to their talk, stand there, alive again.

The primordial demon behind his back had formed once more, and the demonic aura around it seemed purer than before.

“Senior Qiu Hai, you are finally awake,” only then did Black Dragon’s calm expression reveal a hint of franticness as he hurried over to Qiu Hai’s side. “You are five minutes later than the designated time. I was really worried that you wouldn’t be able to wake up.”

“You would like that, wouldn’t you?” Qiu Hai’s blurry eyes seemed to shine with an intelligent light.

Black Dragon’s smile froze on his face, “How could I think that?”

“You know how you think, so I’m not going to waste my breath. Actually, you would have just ran away if you weren’t captured, right? Would you really have bought time for me?” Qiu Hai replied with a soft smile.

He was actually only in a state of false death. And as for why the white-robed man didn’t discover it? That was simple.

He had found another manual when he found the one for the primordial demon avatar. It was one on how to upgrade the avatar. The condition was simple enough. He just needed to take lethal damage.

That’s why he did essentially die once, it was just that he had a slither of life hidden away.

That was why nobody was able to sense that it was only a state of false death.

“Senor, just what are you saying,” Black Dragon chuckled wryly. Old geezer, you are right. If I wasn’t caught, I definitely wouldn’t have been bothered with you. I can’t believe that your bet worked

and you managed to come back to life. But that's good, otherwise, I really wouldn't have anyone to deal with the man in white.

"Hah, never mind. I have no time for you right now. Do what you should do now. There's a wild monkey I need to take care of here," Qiu Hai's silvery hair fluttered up, and he gazed towards the white-robed man like a menacing monster.

"How's he alive again?" Ye Zichen looked at the old man in the sky with a look of confusion. I saw the white-robed guy stab him to death with one hit.

How the heck did he come back to life?

"He probably used some secret technique that I am not aware of. But this makes sense. Since he managed to gain the primordial demon avatar, he might have actually gotten the inheritance some powerful demon left behind. I seriously didn't expect this, so they did one-up us," the white-robed man squinted his eyes and said quietly. "Ye Zichen, leave with City Lord Qiu first and hurry over back to the subdimension. Since Black Dragon is so confident that he can conquer the place, Yonghe might not be the only traitor. Hurry back. You must stop them."

Black Dragon's words did make sense. If their base was conquered, then it would definitely affect the trust the Three Realms alliance placed in the white-robed man.

Then, if someone with ill intention fanned the flames, then the alliance might truly crumble!

"Then you..," Ye Zichen frowned and glanced over at the old demon.

He seems quite a bit stronger after revival!

"Of course I have to stay here. Can't you tell that the geezer has already locked onto me?" the white-robed man smiled. "But don't worry about me. Since I can kill him once, I can kill him again. Hurry up and leave. The situation over there is important."

“Tsk, who’s worried. Whatever,” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. Then City Lord Qiu and Ye Zichen shot out. Yet, before they could make a huge distance, they saw Black Dragon appear in front of them as he cracked his knuckles.

“Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation. Just where are you trying to go?”

Chapter 691 – Qiu Yuan makes a move

If the Black Dragon was facing the white-robed man, the latter might even be able to kill him with a sneeze. However, since the white-robed man was facing Qiu Hai, Black Dragon has now become the most problematic figure around.

“Where are you hurrying off to? Are you trying to go back to your base? Don’t head over, my people have already conquered the place, what can you even do if you manage to return?” Black Dragon smiled faintly as he stared at Ye Zichen, as if he was afraid Ye Zichen would disappear in front of his eyes.

I won’t let the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation run away!

The ley line was hidden by the Yellow Emperor before he entered the cycle of samsara. In several thousand years, nobody was able to find where it was. If there was still anyone who knew where it was located, then it could only be the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation.

I have to find the ley line!

I have to!

Ye Zichen’s expression grew dark as well. The situation was dire.

The white-robed man was stopped by Qiu Hai from helping us, and I don’t think I can match Black Dragon. What’s more, we don’t know the situation at the base...

“What do you want?”

“What do I want?” Black Dragon raised his eyebrows with a smile. “My goal has always been clear. I just want to ask the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation to become an esteemed guest of the Demon Realm and tell me the location of the ley line. That is all.”

“I really don’t know where the ley line is,” Ye Zichen answered expressionlessly, while trouble filled his heart.

He had heard the news of the Yellow Emperor hiding the ley line.

However, even though he was the Yellow Emperor's reincarnation, he never inherited anything about the ley line from his past life.

Or rather, all he inherited was Xuan-Yuan Sword.

Nothing else!

Wait, Xuan-Yuan Sword!

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen saw hope. He had not drawn out Xuan-Yuan Sword even since the white-robed man returned it.

He told me to draw it out in the Immortal Region, but everything that has happened made it impossible for me to do that.

Even though I might attract the attention of those people in the God Realm if I draw it out now...

Right now...

Never mind, I'll endure it for now. I won't draw Xuan-Yuan Sword unless absolutely necessary.

"You still don't want to say it? Do you really think that I won't kill you?" Black Dragon's expression darkened. He had to get the location of the ley line. He was very displeased about Ye Zichen getting in his way multiple times, and his patience had already run out. "Ye Zichen, don't say that I didn't give you any chances. I will ask you one final time. Are you going to say where the ley line is or not!?"

It was clear from his tone that he was truly angry.

The spiritual energy in the surroundings seemed to gather towards Black Dragon. Ye Zichen felt troubled by the pressure.

"Master Ye, I'll stop him for you. Hurry back!" City Lord Qiu tried his best to muster the spiritual energy in the surroundings. However, Ye Zichen knew that City Lord Qiu facing Black Dragon was like hitting a stone with an egg. It was just asking for death.

Ye Zichen shook his head, then touched the phone in his pocket. "I will also reply one final time. I don't know where the ley line is."

Ye Zichen already decided. If Black Dragon was going to attack, then he would draw out Xuan-Yuan Sword. Even if it might catch the attention of those people in the God Realm, but so what.

“Fine. If you want to die, then I’ll grant death to you!”

Whoosh.

Black Dragon pushed off against the ground and reached his hand towards Ye Zichen’s head. During so, Black Dragon already completely locked onto Ye Zichen, so the latter wasn’t able to dodge at all.

Xuan-Yuan Sword, don’t disappoint me. Ye Zichen took a deep breath and took out his phone.

At that very moment, a green light shot in front of him and collided with Black Dragon.

“Do you think I don’t exist?” the newcomer sneered.

Ye Zichen looked up in surprise, then saw Qiu Yuan fully armed in his armor and both swords in his hand.

“Qiu Yuan,” Ye Zichen smiled in surprise.

Qiu Yuan nodded towards him, “Don’t think too much into it. I’m not getting involved, but he wants to bully my dad. I think he’s also the boss of those guys who broke my toys. I have to get even.”

With that, Qiu Yuan turned to glare at Black Dragon.

Black Dragon also smiled when he saw Qiu Yuan. He already sensed Qiu Yuan’s existence when he arrived, but they never met. That’s why Black Dragon was always acting slightly warily, since he was afraid that the person he sensed would suddenly attack him from the shadows.

Now that Qiu Yuan showed himself and was going to clash with him head on...

It was the best news for Black Dragon.

“So you’re the lucky child who inherited everything from a master of the God Realm. A first ranked Immortal King. Zeze, are you sure that you can deal with me?” Black Dragon pursed his lips.

Qiu Yuan smirked, “I don’t dare. I hope I can take three hundred hits from you.”

“Hmm?”

“The fight over there will end in three hundred blows, maximum. Then, the guy in white will naturally come and deal with you himself.”

“Hah, I’ll take your life in less than that!” Black Dragon attacked without any hesitation.

Qiu Yuan locked his eyebrows and prepared for combat, while also shouted towards Ye Zichen and his father. “Go, you’re not needed here!”

“Be careful,” Ye Zichen nodded.

City Lord Qiu couldn’t help but grit his teeth. “Lil’ Yuan, be careful. I... only have you left.”

Qiu Yuan paused for a moment. Then he nodded with a grit of his teeth when he saw City Lord Qiu’s watery eyes. “Don’t worry. I’ll definitely take care of you when you’re old.”

With that, he combined his twin swords into a broadsword that seemed to light the surrounding area with a pale green aura before he charged towards Black Dragon.

The two pairs of foes clashed repeatedly in the surroundings, and even the smallest of residual shocks ruined Pool City.

Ye Zichen took a last glance at the white-robed man and Qiu Yuan, then turned to City Lord Qiu.

Also, City Lord Qiu had always said that he didn’t care, when Qiu Yuan was truly in a life or death situation, City Lord Qiu’s image as a strict father instantly crumbled.

No matter what, Qiu Yuan was his son. He had to care about Qiu Yuan!

“City Lord Qiu,” Ye Zichen called out softly. He didn’t want to disturb City Lord Qiu, but there was no time for the latter to feel sad right then.

“Master Ye,” City Lord Qiu wiped the tears from the corner of his eyes.

“Qiu Yuan will be fine, so please don’t worry. We must hand the battle over to the two of them here. Right now, our job is to hurry back to our base. We have more important matters to take care of there!”

Chapter 692 – Revolts

The lights were completely lit in a simple wooden room.

Great Emperor Qingming, who was wearing plain clothes, was holding an ancient book as he read on and occasionally let out loud sounds of laughter.

Creak.

Great Emperor Qingming put the book in his hand aside when he heard the door open. He looked over and smiled.

“Yonghe, what brings you here?”

The stout Yonghe was frowning, and Great Emperor Qingming could see the worry look on his face, “I have been thinking about something since last night and am still worried.”

“What’s there to worry about?” Qingming smiled as Yonghe entered. He prepared a pot of tea and smiled. “I know what you’re worried about, the demons are attacking fiercely, but we’ll be fine with Sire here.”

Great Emperor Qingming handed Great Emperor Yonghe a steaming hot cup of tea.

“I’m not worried about the demons,” Yonghe shook his head with a dark look and pushed the cup of tea back towards Qingming.

“Then what’s there to worry about? Big Boss Suiren’s guarding the sacred land of the Immortal Region, so that’ll be fine unless the demons launch a full-scale attack on the sacred land, and we won’t possibly let that happen.”

“That’s not what I’m worried about. I’m worried about...” Yonghe replied indifferently, then his expression drastically changed. He gathered spiritual energy in his palm and struck Qingming’s chest. “I’m worried about how to deal with you.”

Great Emperor Yonghe's attack caught Great Emperor Qingming completely off-guard. The two were more or less equal to one another, but the sudden palm strike caused Great Emperor Qingming to be sent back flying, and crashing through the wooden house as he coughed up blood.

"Yonghe, you..."

The palm strike had sealed Qingming's spiritual energy. At that moment, he was no different from a normal person.

In there had to be any difference, it would be that he was a like heavily wounded normal person.

Great Emperor Qingming looked at Great Emperor Yonghe in confusion as he laid on the ground.

Yonghe walked closer towards him with a smirk on his face, "I had always thought you to be a bright person, I didn't think that... Qingming, let me tell it to you straight. I'm working with the demons."

"Yonghe, you traitor!" Great Emperor Qingming's eyes filled up with blood. The white-robed man had reminded him many times to be careful of Great Emperor Yonghe. However, their bond as the emperors caused him to be unable to feel wary towards Yonghe at all.

Until now...

"You traitor!" a heart-wrenching shriek filled the air. But it was merely a fool's scream in Great Emperor Yonghe's eyes.

He shook his head as he watched Great Emperor Qingming to struggle to get up.

"Great Emperor, why are you injured!?" a frantic call sounded out from afar.

"Hurry, Yonghe is a traitor to the Immortal Region. Kill him!" Great Emperor Qingming roared out.

Yet, when he saw the owner of the voice...

He saw that the only of the voice had the head of an elder in his hand. The dead elder's eyes were opened wide, it was clear that the elder did not expect his killer would suddenly kill him.

“Great Emperor, are you alright?” The newcomer was an elder in a red robe. He bent down with a slightly worried expression that seemed to radiate mockery as he looked down at Great Emperor Qingming. “Say, how did you get injured so gravely? With you injured? Who's going to stop us?”

...

Boom.

“Murder!” Civilians scuttled away frantically after a huge explosion. The explosion seemed like a trigger as more traces of battle appeared all over the subdimension.

...

“You guys...” Great Emperor Qingming looked at Great Emperor Yonghe in shock as surprised screams sounded out in their surroundings.

The Fire Cloud Sect Master and Great Emperor Yonghe looked at each other.

Then, the former chuckled, “It seems like you succeeded. Didn't you just say that it'd be difficult?”

“I didn't think it'll go so successfully either,” Great Emperor Yonghe shrugged. “What's with this? Didn't you say that you can convince him to join us?”

“Him?” the Fire Cloud Sect Master threw the head of the elder in his hand to the ground and snorted. “A true fool. I thought he would be the same kind of person as me. I didn't expect him to be rather loyal to the Immortal Region.”

“The Immortal Region doesn't lack these foolishly loyal people,” Great Emperor Yonghe laughed coldly in mockery.

Great Emperor Qingming was going unconscious, but he still roared loudly with all his might. “You traitors! Traitors!”

“Great Emperor, that’s not right,” the Fire Cloud Sect Master shrugged. “We are merely choosing a suitable chance to choose a suitable partner and manner of living. We don’t have faith in this alliance, so we naturally have to find better partners to live on.”

“Traitors. You traitors!”

“You’re so damn annoying. Great Emperor Yonghe, hurry up and finish him. Don’t tell me that you can’t do it. If you can’t, then I can totally do it for you,” the Fire Cloud Sect Master rubbed his hands in anticipation.

“Yonghe.”

“What’s this? Could the high and mighty Great Emperor Qingming be afraid of death?” the Fire Cloud Sect Master laughed hysterically.

“I merely regret not listening to Sir’s words!” Great Emperor Qingming gritted his teeth.

The Fire Cloud Sect Master twitched his mouth and turned towards Yonghe, “These self-righteous people are so annoying.”

“You’re right,” Great Emperor Yonghe shrugged. “You look quite interested in killing him yourself. I will give you the chance.”

“Thank you, Great Emperor Yonghe,” the Fire Cloud Sect Master cupped his hands, then licked his lips and turned to Great Emperor Qingming. “A great emperor of the Immortal Region is a being just below that of the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors. But I am a famous killer of the Immortal Region. It’s no loss for you to die in my hands! But of course, if you beg me...”

“Great on!” Great Emperor Qingming glared at the Fire Cloud Sect Master. If he could still use his spiritual energy, then he would definitely kill the two traitors even if it cost him his life.

“Then alright,” the Fire Cloud Sect Master let out a soft sigh as the area around him begun to glow orange. “Don’t hate me. I was still foolishly loyal towards the Immortal Region just a few days ago as well.”

Great Emperor Qingming didn’t even blink as the fire red palm begun to press down towards his forehead. He merely stared at the two people in front of him. “Traitors! Traitors!”

“Die,” the Fire Cloud Sect Master pressed his palm down quicker. Just as the fiery red aura was about to consume Great Emperor Qingming, two blood red daggers suddenly shot out towards them.

“Who is it!?” Even Great Emperor Yonghe couldn’t help but tense up and looked around.

Not long later, two figures broke through the air. “It looks like we made it in time.”

Chapter 693 – Mental Warfare

Ye Zichen summoned the Swirling Flash Plate the moment he entered the subdimension, and also applied a layer of blood energy on top of it.

It was not the time to hide anything anymore. The sub dimension was facing a revolt. He might die if he was not careful.

And the smoke and chaos he saw only caused him to be more careful...

...

The first thing City Lord Qiu did was bring Great Emperor Qingming beside them and stuff a pill into the latter's mouth.

"You guys hid pretty well," Ye Zichen smirked. He was covered from head to toe in the Swirling Flash Plate, and only revealed a pair of bright eyes that stared at his foes.

Yonghe was still rather wary about Ye Zichen's appearance. However, he was not wary of Ye Zichen. He was wary of the white-robed man who had been with Ye Zichen the entire time.

Yonghe carefully looked around and frowned.

Since Ye Zichen has come back, why didn't I hear anything from Black Dragon?

He touched the jade tablet in his pocket. It had not shattered yet, meaning that Black Dragon was still safe. Yet, even so... Why is Ye Zichen here?

"Great Emperor Yonghe, what's going on?" the Fire Cloud Sect Master had a worried look on his face. He knew just how terrifyingly strong the white-robed man was. A person who could create a sub dimension in the Three Realms had to be at least at the Immortal King level.

If that man returns, then we'll all die.

Yonghe shook his head lightly and merely looked around tensely.

Ye Zichen naturally noticed his nervousness. He also understood that they were being wary of the white-robed man.

“Ye Zichen, since you’re back, Sir has come back as well, right?” Great Emperor Qingming had recovered a little after consuming the pill.

Ye Zichen didn’t answer his question, and merely asked, “Where is Heavenly King Li, God of Thunder and Xie Bi’an? Why don’t I see them around?”

“They went back after you and Sir left,” Great Emperor Qingming replied.

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth. Going back right now instead of any other time? Isn’t this just causing trouble for me?

Great Emperor Qingming noticed the change in Ye Zichen’s expression as well. He opened his eyes wide, “Did...”

“Haha, it looks like that white-robed person didn’t return with you,” at that moment, Great Emperor Yonghe let out a maniacal laughter. He had already searched through the surrounding space, but did not notice the white-robed man.

Of course, Yonghe couldn’t detect that level of existence if the latter didn’t want him to.

However, the white-robed man did not appear yet.

Yonghe and co. were clearly traitors already!

But the white-robed man did not appear to act as the judge, jury, and executioner. Since only Ye Zichen and City Lord Qiu appeared... and the jade tablet didn’t shatter...

Then it’s obvious. The white-robed man was being held back...

He can’t come over!

“Sir really didn’t come back with you?” Great Emperor Qingming’s expression drastically changed.

Ye Zichen nodded, “A small issue came up, so he’s tied down for now.”

“Damnit!” Great Emperor Qingming gritted his teeth and roared angrily.

Yonghe laughed even more maniacally. “Since the guy in white can’t come back, then did you two come to die?”

The Fire Cloud Sect Master also stopped worrying and sneered, “Ye Zichen, I do have a lot of grudges I have to get even for.”

“Don’t get too full of yourselves. Since City Lord Qiu and I could come back, then he will naturally return shortly. How long do you even think Black Dragon can hold him down for?” Ye Zichen smiled.

The Fire Cloud Sect Master’s expression turned strange.

However, Yonghe snorted, “Stop pretending. The sweat in your palms already gave you away.”

When Ye Zichen quickly pulled his hands back into his sleeves, Yonghe laughed coldly, “The situation over there should be rather complicated, right? Trying to scare us? You’re too naïve.”

“Great Emperor Yonghe is right,” the Fire Cloud Sect Master agreed.

“I wonder who is the one pretending here?” Ye Zichen put up a calm smile. “You aren’t that confident either, are you? You are wondering whether Black Dragon can actually hold him back, right?”

Yonghe’s expression stiffened a little. His mouth moved, but wasn’t unable to utter a single word for a while as he looked silently at Ye Zichen. I didn’t expect this child to be so hard to deal with. I can’t deduce any useful information from his expression.

The white-robed man is a bit too powerful, I have no idea how long Black Dragon can tie him down for. If the white-robed man is hurrying back now, then should we retreat?

Ye Zichen's mental warfare did have some effect, and it caused Yonghe to be unsure of what to do.

"I advise you to just surrender now. Since you have contributed a lot to the Three Realms before, he might let you live when he returns," Ye Zichen said with more confidence. He clearly understood just how wary his enemies were of the white-robed man.

Since Ye Zichen didn't have anyone by his side right now, the only thing he could do was attack them mentally and buy time until the white-robed man returns.

"You make it sound so simple. Do you think we can stop right now?" Great Emperor Yonghe pursed his lips as he listened to the explosions in the surroundings. "Even if he lets us off, the people of the Immortal Region will not. We have no way out now."

"How could that be? You should know who I am. I am the reincarnation of the yellow Emperor, the people of the Immortal Region will give me a little bit of face. As long as you stop now, I can ask for mercy on your behalf and ask them to let you live!" Ye Zichen was very nervous.

He could sense that Yonghe was about to give it a shot anyways. And Ye Zichen knew that the situation will become very dire when Yonghe does.

"Yellow Emperor's reincarnation, do you really think you are the Yellow Emperor of the past!? Even the Yellow Emperor was forced to reincarnate because of them back then. Brat, you think too highly of the Immortal Region!" Yonghe gripped his fists tightly and roared. "We have no other choice now. We already lost all other options when we chose this path. The white-robed man might be scary, but at least he has not yet returned!"

Spiritual pressure begun to radiate out from Great Emperor Yonghe. The Fire Cloud Sect Leader also snorted. “Great Emperor Yonghe is right, we have no other choice. The white-robed man is strong, and I will die when he returns, but before that... At least I can rip you apart, brat!”

“Going down the path of no return like that is not going to end well,” Ye Zichen forced himself to keep a calm smile, but his heart began to race.

The Fire Cloud Sect Master stepped forward and a roasting heat wave soared forth. “No return? I’ll rip you apart until there’s no return!”

Chapter 694 – Arrogance!

So we still have to fight in the end.

Ye Zichen let out a long silent sigh.

The strongest fighting forces in the subdimension are only the ones from the Immortal Region. However, Great Emperor Qingming has already been heavily injured, and the various experts and city lords of the outer region of the Immortal Region are probably preoccupied, so they can't spare any effort to come over here to help us.

Ye Zichen originally thought that he could scare his enemies using the white-robed man. However, his enemies were no fool. They were not scared away by his simple words.

“Are you certain? If you truly wish to fight us, then there is no turning back,” Ye Zichen's gaze gradually turned cold as well. Blood energy surged up from his body and a crimson scythe appeared behind his back.

“Yonghe, you still have a chance to right your wrongs if you stop now!” Great Emperor Qingming roared.

“There's no need to speak anymore, we never thought about turning back the moment we decided to turn our backs on the Three Realms,” Yonghe's pea-sized eyes shimmered. He squinted his eyes and swept his gaze over Great Emperor Qingming and Ye Zichen like a poisonous snake. “Don't worry, I won't kill the two of you. You're more useful to me alive.”

With that, Great Emperor Qingming's aura gradually rose to its peak.

Great Emperor Qingming grit his teeth. Then, he made up his mind and stepped forward. However, Ye Zichen pulled him back.

He looked at Ye Zichen in confusion. From his perspective, he was the only one who could actually face Yonghe. Although he was

heavily injured, Yonghe would definitely not be in good shape if he fights with his life on the line.

“Go and tend to your wounds. Leave this to me,” the aura around Ye Zichen became sharper. He forcefully dragged Qingming over to where City Lord Qiu’s side sat. “Take Great Emperor Qingming to get treated. The other city lords are probably in bad situations as well. Go and help them.”

“I can’t accept that!” Great Emperor Qingming frowned. He could sense Ye Zichen’s strength. Facing Yonghe and the Fire Cloud Sect Master was just hitting a rock with an egg.

“Take him away!”

“Understood,” Although City Lord Qiu knew that he was stronger, and that him staying around was better, for some reason, he felt as if Ye Zichen was far stronger than him when he sensed the current changes in Ye Zichen’s aura.

Ye Zichen is merely of the mid-stage Sky Immortal level. How could he make me feel that way?

He took one last long look at Ye Zichen, then carried Great Emperor Qingming on his shoulders.

“You want to face the two of us alone?” Yonghe mocked Ye Zichen with a shake of his head. “Young man, should I say that you’re fearless, or should I say you’re foolish?”

“I’m not that arrogant. If you want, then you can face me one on one. Of course, you can also come at me together if you’re scared,” Ye Zichen ignored Yonghe’s mockery and smiled. He reached behind him and grasped the blood energy scythe. He pointed the scythe towards his two enemies and hook his fingers. “Come.”

Whoosh...

With that, a gust of raging winds blew past them.

Ye Zichen stood in front of Great Emperor Yonghe and the Fire

Cloud Sect Master with the crimson scythe in his hand.

“Such arrogance. One hit is more than enough for me to deal with you!” the Fire Cloud Sect Master shouted, then flapped his hands.

The temperature in the surroundings turned hotter, and a ball of searing flames surged towards Ye Zichen.

He had a grudge against Ye Zichen from the beginning, so he did not hold back at all.

Yet, Ye Zichen didn't even blink. He merely watched silently as the fire approached him.

“What is Ye Zichen thinking!?” Great Emperor Qingming exclaimed. He was truly worried about Ye Zichen, so he made City Lord Qiu stop in his tracks. “The fire geezer already cultivated his fire attribute spiritual energy to the max. Even complete stage Sky Immortal experts don't dare to take his flames head-on.”

“He is the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor. You are one of the Great Emperors of the sacred land of the Immortal Region, do you have no faith in the Yellow Emperor's strength?” City Lord Qiu smiled. His impression of Ye Zichen changed greatly after finding out that Ye Zichen was the Yellow Emperor's reincarnation.

He grew up listening to the Yellow Emperor's tales. He was certain that the Yellow Emperor's reincarnation was definitely spectacular in some ways.

What's more, the aura just now...

“I definitely wouldn't be worried if he was the Yellow Emperor, but...” Great Emperor Qingming hesitated.

City Lord Qiu shook his head with a smile, “He'll definitely be fine. He is the Yellow Emperor.”

Boom.

The wave of flames engulfed Ye Zichen in a split second. The sparks shot up into the sky, dying the night orange.

“Ye Zichen!” Great Emperor Qingming shouted.

City Lord Qiu also frowned, but he didn’t shout and merely worried about Ye Zichen’s safety silently.

As the fire burned with dense smoke, the Fire Cloud Sect Master took a glance at the flames, then turned around with a shake of his head. “Most people who speak arrogantly are weak. Great Emperor Yonghe, let’s go and clear up the battlefield elsewhere.”

“Is this all there is to the sect master of the Fire Cloud Gate, which leads the six gates?” A figure in a silver armor and carrying a huge scythe on his shoulders walked out of the flames.

Great Emperor Qingming revealed a look of joy, while City Lord Qiu relaxed his eyebrows with a smile. “You see that? He is the Yellow Emperor, the real leader of our Immortal Region. Alright, stop watching there. It’ll be fine with little friend Ye here. Let’s hurry up and deal with the others. We can’t let these traitors go!”

With that, City Lord Qiu’s expression darkened.

The Qiu Family has always lived and died for the land. They detested people like these traitors.

“Fire Cloud Sect Master, if this is all you’ve got, then you might as well just give up.”

Ye Zichen’s figure became clearer and clearer, until... the searing flames were all sucked into his scythe.

So this weapon can absorb fire.

Ye Zichen silently gasped. The reason he didn’t dodge the fire was because he wanted to see just how strong the Fire Cloud Sect Master was.

He did not actually know that his scythe could absorb fire. He merely wanted to try and take the attack head-on with his divine

artifact armor and his ‘maxed out’ Unbreakable Body.

He did not expect such a pleasant surprise at all.

The Fire Cloud Sect Master looked at Ye Zichen, who looked down at him, in shock. “Impossible!”

“Nothing’s impossible,” Ye Zichen shrugged, then stretched lazily. “Your fire was quite painful just now. But don’t say that I’m bullying you anymore, I already let you have a free hit. It’s my turn now.”

With that, Ye Zichen stepped forward with a cold look in his eyes. “Die!”

Chapter 695 – King!

A person acting arrogantly needed to have the strength to back it up!

Ye Zichen looked forward indifferently at the Fire Cloud Sect Master, who was shocked, while his own aura had become a lot sharper.

Purely from their cultivation levels, Ye Zichen was truly weak. Everyone around where heavyweights in the Three Realms, and all of them were of the complete stage Sky Immortal level.

Ye Zichen's mid stage Sky Immortal level was not of much use at all in their minds.

However, cultivation levels were not everything, and treasures could be used to make up for their difference.

No matter what, Ye Zichen was someone who has learnt pretty much all of the Heavenly Court's supportive skills, so he was not afraid of the Fire Cloud Sect Master at all.

"Fire Geezer, are you sure you want to face him alone?" Great Emperor Yonghe asked plainly.

"He just caught me off guard just now. I don't need your help to deal with a shitty brat," the Fire Cloud Sect Master squinted his eyes and snorted coldly.

Yonghe nodded, then took a step back. He was already able to identify some of Ye Zichen's weaknesses, but his relationship with the Fire Cloud Sect Master was merely because of the current situation.

He really couldn't care less about whether the Fire Cloud Sect Master died or not.

In fact, it might even be beneficial for him if the Fire Cloud Sect Master died here.

“I don’t mind you asking for help if you aren’t sure,” Ye Zichen dragged the blood scythe along as he looked indifferently at the Fire Cloud Sect Master.

Both he and the Fire Cloud Sect Master were surrounded by a red aura, but...

The Fire Cloud Sect Master’s aura was of fire, while Ye Zichen’s was plentiful blood energy.

“You have a sharp mouth. I hope you can still speak like that later.”

Vroom.

A wave of fire soared forth from the Fire Cloud Sect Master’s hands.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, stabbed his scythe into the ground and quickly formed incantation gestures with his hands.

The blood energy around him surged instantly and formed a barrier with strange sigils flowing around it.

“You’re embarrassing yourself with just that? If you give up now, then I just might spare your shitty life!” Ye Zichen indifferently in front of him.

No matter how strong the Fire Cloud Sect Master’s flames were, it was unable to do anything against Ye Zichen’s barrier.

The Fire Cloud Sect Master’s expression darkened and frowned as he looked carefully at the blood energy around him. This brat shouldn’t be able to block off my flames with his level of strength. It should be due to the blood energy around him.

I have cultivated for more than a thousand years and read plenty of secret manuals in the Immortal Region. But I’ve never heard of anyone cultivating using blood energy. I have to be cautious, yet, since it is blood energy, it should be limited. No matter how much of blood energy he has, he shouldn’t be able to maintain the

barrier forever.

The Fire Cloud Sect Master nodded slightly, then decided on what to do.

He will drag the fight on.

Since he wasn't sure of what the blood energy could do, then he would just wait until it disperses. The barrier may be strong, he never actually saw Ye Zichen's attacks.

He was certain that Ye Zichen's defense was practically indestructible, but at the same time, Ye Zichen should not be able to hurt him due to their difference in strength.

Thinking that, he stopped worrying. He was certain that Ye Zichen was the one who should be feeling anxious.

What should I do?

Ye Zichen's eyebrows locked tightly together within the barrier. It was exactly as the Fire Cloud Sect Master had thought. He could defend against the flames, but he was unable to actually threaten the Fire Cloud Sect Master at all.

As the blood energy was consumed within his body, he knew that he would be the one who would lose if the situation continues.

Unless...

Ye Zichen silently touched the phone in his pocket.

Xuan-Yuan Sword!

He did not draw out Xuan-Yuan Sword ever since the white-robed man had returned the sword to him. However, the white-robed man had reminded him time and time again that he should only draw it out in the sacred land of the Immortal Region, or else the people from the God Realm will take notice of it.

Creak.

Ye Zichen heard a soft creak and saw a crack in his barrier. His

scythe on the ground also seemed to dim a little.

“Brat, you can’t hold on anymore, right?” the Fire Cloud Sect Master sneered, but if one was to observe carefully, his flames seemed to began to waver as well.

“I can’t hold on anymore, but aren’t you the same?”

Blood energy may run out, but spiritual energy was the same.

“Heh, the same?” the Fire Cloud Sect Master’s gaze turned sharper. He reached down and took out a fiery red pill.

Even Great Emperor Yonghe’s eyes twitched when he saw it.

Quenching Pill.

It was a pill unique to the Fire Cloud Gate, and only people at the status of an elder or above could have one.

It was an extremely costly pill to manufacture. After consumption, it was able to increase the purity of the user’s flames and strengthen the user by thirty percent.

However, after the effects wear off, the user’s meridians would break, and his strength would be reduced greatly even after he recovers.

It was a pill that people would only use when facing a fatal threat that they could not deal with.

But...

From the looks of it, it did not seem like Ye Zichen could pose any threat to the Fire Cloud Sect Master.

At that very moment, Great Emperor Yonghe saw the Fire Cloud Sect Master’s eyes. They were bloodshot and filled with rage.

Just what sort of vendetta is there between them? But so what if he takes the pill? It’s none of my business!

Great Emperor Yonghe smiled, then continued to watch the show.

The flames around the Fire Cloud Sect Master shot up into the air and seemed like they would burn the world asunder.

“Die!” the Fire Cloud Sect Mater shouted as the fire from him turned into a fire dragon and tore at Ye Zichen’s barrier.

Creak.

Creak.

Crack.

The crack on the barrier became larger and larger. Soon, the entire barrier became covered in cracks.

Snap.

The barrier shattered.

Ye Zichen coughed up a mouthful of blood. Although it was merely the barrier that shattered, it had hurt him mentally.

His crimson scythe also turned into a sliver of crimson blood energy and dispersed in the air. Ye Zichen kneeled down on the ground on one knee and stared at the howling fire dragon racing towards him.

“Haha. Die. DIE!” the Fire Cloud Sect Master laughed maniacally.

As Ye Zichen watched the fire dragon move towards him...

“Sorry,” Ye Zichen muttered softly. Then, a pillar of golden light shot through the sky.

Purity!

Solemnity!

Sublimity!

All beings in the world couldn’t help but want to submit in face of the pillar of light!

A king cannot be defied!

Whoosh.

A ray of light blew the fire dragon into two like a lightning, sending it flying back behind the Fire Cloud Sect Master.

The fire dragon let out a final wailed and disappeared.

At the same time...

Bang.

The Fire Cloud Sect Master, who still have a melancholic look on the face, fell onto the ground with his eyes wide open.

“Great Emperor Yonghe, it’s your turn now!” Ye Zichen’s voice rang out in the pillar of golden light like the call of the abyss. It was deep, dark, and undefiable!

At that very moment, Ye Zichen was king.

A king like the Yellow Emperor of the past!

Chapter 696 – Secret

The golden light from Xuan-Yuan Sword illuminated the entire subdimension, and people felt like they wanted to submit.

“What is this feeling?” Everyone fighting felt a moment of hesitation. The moment the golden light shot up into the air, for some reason, they all wanted to kneel onto the ground to display their submission.

City Lord Qiu, who brought Great Emperor Qingming to a safe location to heal, looked towards the source of the gold light...

“As expected of the Yellow Emperor.”

“Did he finally awaken?” Great Emperor Qingming’s eyes teared up. Before he had grown to power, he grew up listening to stories of the Yellow Emperor, but he has actually never seen the Yellow Emperor at the height of his glory.

He felt like that was his greatest regret... Until Ye Zichen appeared...

When Ye Zichen appeared, Great Emperor Qingming paid a lot of attention to him, and because Great Emperor knew some secrets of the Immortal Region, he had tried his best to protect the former.

Everything, was for this very day.

Great Emperor Qingming smiled in satisfaction and excitement, then his expression suddenly changed.

“What happened?” City Lord Qiu naturally noticed Great Emperor Qingming’s expression fill up with nervousness and fear.

“No, not now. It isn’t time yet...” Great Emperor Qingming struggled to get up, but City Lord Qiu pressed him down.

“You can’t afford to move around right now. It’s not time yet? What do you mean?”

“I said it’s not time yet! It’s not time yet! Hurry over to where Ye

Zichen is! He's in danger!"

...

Several Immortal Region heavyweights sat on top of straw cushions within an ancestral hall in the sacred land of the Immortal Region.

"This..."

Suiren, the eldest one in the hall, suddenly revealed a shocked expression.

The shoulders of the Flame Emperor, who was dressed in white, trembled. "Brother Yellow Emperor!"

The Flame Emperor stood up, and powerful spiritual pressure radiated out from his body.

He glared at the other sin the hall with a chilling look, "I know some of you are getting ideas, but don't try to do anything in front of me. Brother Yellow Emperor was forced into the cycle of samsara by some of you. That was because I wasn't here! This time, I, Flame Emperor, will fight with my life on the line to take your life if you even dared to do anything to Brother Yellow Emperor."

He locked onto everyone in the ancestral hall as he spoke, then slowly paced to the door.

The ancestral hall was silent.

After a while, Suiren finally spoke up, "Flame Emperor, you are overreacting. The incident back then has passed, so let us not mention it anymore. Brother Yellow Emperor awakening and drawing out Xuan-Yuan Sword will definitely cause a situation. Our primary concern right now is protecting Brother Yellow Emperor."

"Heh, I think some people here must know whether I am overreacting or not." Flame Emperor's white robe fluttered as

spiritual energy spiraled around him. He gazed at the other sin the hall and smiled indifferently. “Not doing anything to you for what happened back then was already my bottom line. Don’t say that I didn’t warn you. Don’t let me catch your tail.”

“Flame Emperor!” One person shouted out in the ancestral hall with a frown.

Flame Emperor merely glanced indifferently towards him and sneered, “Don’t let me catch you.”

With that, Flame Emperor disappeared in a flash of light.

“Brother Suiren, Flame Emperor was a bit too outrageous,” a person couldn’t help but swear after Flame Emperor left.

Suiren merely looked indifferently towards the people who had grown angry and snorted, “You know very clearly why Flame Emperor acted so. I will say it here as well, since the Yellow Emperor’s nine reincarnated lives has passed, and he reincarnated as you wished back then, if any of you dare to cause trouble for him, then these old bones will... Heh.”

The meaning behind Suiren’s cold snort was clear.

...

Yet, the reactions weren’t only felt in the Immortal Region.

The Heavenly Court and the Underworld also sensed the appearance of the aura.

“As expected of Brother Yellow Emperor, nine reincarnated lives are so dangerous, yet he still succeeded,” the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens shook his head with a soft smile. “Now this is getting interesting. It was the Demon Realm’s previous attacks that caused Brother Yellow Emperor to end up in this situation. This time... Alas, such is fate!”

At the same time, the Jade Emperor, who was getting well known as a foolish ruler, also smile softly. It was a smile that did not suit

how he was acting at all.

“That little kid actually succeeded? He’s sure lucky. If I wasn’t enough, then it must be that little fellow. Interesting. Very interesting!” Then, he shook his head, picked up another celestial fruit and took a bite. “Who cares. Call the Seven Fairies over to dance for me!”

As the guards of the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches went to summon the Seven Fairies, there was a special fluctuation within the palace itself.

“You actually spent the effort to come over here?” The Jade Emperor did not appear to be indulging himself at all. Instead, both his tone and expression seemed to show extraordinary wisdom.

“Do you think I actually want to come here?” a black figure appeared. It was the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens.

“You came for him?” the Jade Emperor asked casually. “I can guess why you came. I don’t hold any hostility towards him. We are each the strongest of one of the Three Realms. I won’t deny my ambitions, but I also know that those people up there... Are not easy to deal with.”

“You’re smart!” Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens chuckled.

Jade Emperor squinted his eyes with a shrug, “Let’s not talk about all that. We haven’t met for ten thousand years. How about staying here and watching my daughters dance? They do dance rather well after all.”

“Your act of indulgence does seem rather realistic.”

“I can’t help it, I’ll lose my life if I draw too much attention. Both you and I know very well why he ended up reincarnating,” the Jade Emperor crossed his legs like a rascal and said with a spoke with a hint of disdain. “He ended up like that because he was

shining too brightly. But he is rather pitiful, he did everything for the Immortal Region, but those little ones in the Immortal Region forced him into the cycle of samsara.”

“Heh, they’re just a despicable bunch,” Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens snorted coldly.

Jade Emperor shot up from his sea as if someone had stepped on his tail and quickly formed incantation gestures with his hands to prevent others from detecting what was going on in the palace. “Do you want to die? Even if you do, don’t drag me with you. This is my turf. What if those people up there hear you!?”

“Just look at how scared you are,” Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens mocked, but did not say anything else about the people up there.

He understood very well. The people of the Lower Three Realms...

Were just a bunch of pets being raised by those people above.

“But I’ve got to say, your Heavenly Court did get some talented people. When Brother Yellow Emperor brings out the ley line, you do have a group of people who can go up with you.”

“Perhaps,” A hint of yearning appeared in the Jade Emperor’s eyes. “I’ve stayed here for too long. It’s about time for me to take a look up there.”

“But before that, I do have a question to ask you,” Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven suddenly quieted down and asked a lot more seriously. “If the people from up there wants to do something to him, then... will you lend a hand?”

Chapter 697 – True Strength of the White-Robed Man

“Are you trying to drag me into it?” the Jade Emperor, who was dressed in a dragon robe, smiled helplessly. He glanced forward, then back onto his own fingers.

The atmosphere in the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches seemed to become rather suppressing with the Jade Emperor’s words.

“Ignoring everything else, my Heavenly Court is the realm with the most direct contact with the God Realm out of all three of the Lower Three Realms. You might not know what the situation in the God Realm is like, but I’ll tell you that the Heavenly Court is trying to survive in the middle of a storm.”

“Survive. Do you get it? As the ruler of the Heavenly Court, every word I say, every action I do, will directly affect how the Heavenly Court is going to be.”

“You’re asking me what I will do if those of the God Realm wants to deal with him!? What do you think I’ll do?”

The Jade Emperor had a solemn expression on his face. He rubbed his fingers and looked interrogatively at the black figure sitting in front of him. “I’m not like you. You can completely ignore the Underworld, but do you think I can do the same to the Heavenly Court?”

“What’s more, I never had too much contact with him. Why should I take that risk for him? I have endured everything for several tens of thousands of years. I am on the verge of going through everything safely. Don’t you find it ridiculous when you are suddenly telling me to take such risks?”

The Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven suddenly stood up from his chair. He couldn’t help but shake his head at the Jade

Emperor. “So you’re determined not to do anything about it? Don’t be so much of an idealist. If that truly comes, do you think that you can really stay out of it?”

“At least that day hasn’t come yet,” the Jade Emperor was determined not to budge his stance on the matter.

The Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven nodded plainly, then snorted. “I thought you would have understood after so long. I guess I thought too much.”

With that, the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens turned away.

The Jade Emperor smiled, “You’re not going to stay for a while?”

“There’s no need.”

Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens waved his arm and disappeared from the hall.

The Jade Emperor sighed, then looked forward, “Come in.”

The seals around the palace disappeared with the Jade Emperor’s words. The Seven Fairies also walked into the palace and curtsayed towards their father.

“Begin.” The Jade Emperor began watching his dancing daughters absent-mindedly with the plate of celestial fruits in his hand. Instead, he thought back to what the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heavens had said to him.

At least we cannot tell whether my choice is right or not yet. The God Realm definitely sensed the unsheathing of Xuan-Yuan Sword. The Yellow Emperor did not succeed back then, and he is merely a reincarnation who has just awakened. What can he even do? What we should do now is pray for the God Realm to act slowly, and not attack a rock with an egg.

But... how is that possible? Great and mighty God Realm, am I right?

The Jade Emperor gazed up into the ceiling with a complex look in his eyes as if he was seeing through the ceiling and into the sky.

...

Ugh, he's so annoying, like a piece of gum. The white-robed man was furious after sending Qiu Hai flying back by several dozen meters.

Qiu Hai's strength greatly increased after his revival. He possessed a strength equal to at least a seventh rank Sky Supreme. However, the white-robed man would still only need a split second to deal with Qiu Hai if they were in the God Realm.

However, they were in the Lower Three Realms. The white-robed man did not dare to muster up too much [elysian energy](#) since it would catch the attention of the people above.

Buzz...

A strange fluctuation appeared in the space around them. The white-robed man looked up and saw a blinding pillar of gold light that was quickly spreading out towards its surroundings.

Over there...

The white-robed man squinted his eyes, then felt his eye twitch.

Why is that brat so capable of causing trouble!?

Qiu Hai, Black Dragon and Qiu Yuan all felt the strange fluctuation. They stopped fighting and looked towards its origin.

This feels like... Could it be the number one primordial divine artifact... Qiu Hai was shocked.

The white-robed man's expression darkened when he noticed Qiu Hai's expression.

If it really is, then I have to report back to His Majesty! Qiu Hai ignored the white-robed man in front of him, and conjured up a spiritual formation filled with strange symbols.

“Don’t even think about it!” the white-robed man roared with an angry glare. The avatar of the sea god behind him began to solidify, while several marks appeared on its trident.

An even more powerful pressure was released from the white-robed man’s body.

Both Black Dragon and Qiu Yuan revealed painful expressions underneath the pressure as their bodies fell uncontrollably to the ground.

How is he so strong!?

Black Dragon felt his eyes twitch and his body tremble.

He didn’t want his body to tremble, but his body was already beyond his control. He was unable to deny the fear emerging from the depths of his consciousness under the pressure.

What is this feeling?

Qiu Hai, who was conjuring up the spiritual formation, couldn’t help but look back. At that moment, it finally saw the white-robed man’s face properly.

“How is this possible!?” Qiu Hai roared. That face....

“That spiritual formation... Are you trying to tell them about the news of Xuan-Yuan?” a calm, yet terrifyingly chilling tone sounded out from the white-robed man’s mouth as he stared at Qiu Hai with his ocean blue eyes.

No, those were not the eyes of a human.

The person in front of Qiu Hai was no longer human. Instead, he was a god... A god with a trident in his hand that looked down upon Qiu Hai as if he was looking at an insect.

Sweat flowed down Qiu Hai’s body, drenching his clothes.

The primordial demon avatar writhed on the ground, unable to resist at all, while its hammers were thrown to the side.

“The Law here cannot possibly allow you to use such power!” Qiu Hai scratched his head and roared in extreme terror. “Your face, your aura! Who are you!? You’re not someone who belongs in our dimension!”

“Law? Laws are made to be broken. What can the Law do in front of me?” the white-robed man spoke with disdain. The blue light shone out from the eyes of the humongous avatar behind him, and the surrounding space began to crumble underneath the pressure.

The natural laws of the surroundings became twisted, while Qiu Hai noticed that his connection with the laws of nature seemed to disappear within the shattered space.

“Impossible! This is impossible! The Law cannot be defied! The Law will kill you. Your strength is above that of a Diviner! You can’t possible descend here with such strength. Impossible! This is impossible!” Qiu Hai shook his head and roared in anger. At the same time, he also tried to order his avatar to get up.

However, the avatar seemed to ignore him and continued to writhe on the ground.

“Oh?” the white-robed man pursed his lips.

“You can’t kill me. If you kill me, then the Demon Emperor will not let you go. He will kill you. The Law will kill you. The Law cannot tolerate anyone challenging it. You will die. You will DIE!”

“Is that so? Then I do want to see whether the Demon Emperor you’re talking about will take revenge for you. What’s more, the Law that you believe in so much will not act either.” With that, the sea god avatar behind the white-robed man thrust its trident towards Qiu Hai without any hesitation.

“Mortal, was it you who uttered my name?”

Elysian energy (神力) is basically a greater version of spiritual energy.

Chapter 698 – The Law Appears

As a powerful pressure appeared in the surroundings, the white-robed man, who was about to finish off Qiu Hai put his hand down, and smirked as he gazed into the sky.

“Law?”

With that, the space in the surroundings became even more twisted.

A pair of white hands appeared and tore a crack open in the space.

A swing appeared through the crack, and a young girl who looked to be in her early teens sat on top of the swing.

She had snow white hair and snow-like eyebrows. She was sitting expressionlessly on the swing, while swinging her white legs back and forth.

“I didn’t expect the Master of the Law of these Three Realms to be a loli,” the white-robed man couldn’t help but laugh.

The young girl raised her eyebrows and glanced indifferently at him with her pitch dark eyes, “I am the Law of the Three Realms, a formless existence. This body was only conjured up to see thee.”

“Then you really are a pervert,” the white-robed man stepped forward with a smile. “It really is an honor for me to see the Law descend. Did the Master of the Law come to kill me?”

“The Law cannot be defied. The Law dictates that the strength used hither must be limited to the Sky Supreme Level. Thou hath used the strength of a Monarch in this domain of mine, that is naturally a provocation. Coequal if ‘t be true thee art not of mine dimension, I will still punish thee.”

Ruler.

Qiu Hai felt his eyes twitch once more.

He is actually a of the Monarch level above that of a Diviner!

Cold sweat flowed down his back like a river. I was actually mocking a Monarch level expert just an hour ago!

“That’s great,” the white-robed man smiled. He lifted his right hand, and a trident like the sea god avatar was holding appeared in his hand. “But what a shame. You will be the second Master of the Law who will die by my hand!”

Boom.

Elysian energy radiated out.

The white-robed man no longer paid attention to Qiu Hai. He didn’t dare to act carelessly against a Master of the law.

“The second? I see thou hast slain a Master of the Law ‘ere. That fool truly was useless to have died by the hands of a mortal,” the loli-like girl smiled.

Snap.

The Master of the Law snapped her fingers, and the natural law in the area began to change...

A devastating bolt of lightning crashed down, raging winds began to soar, and rain poured down from a hole in the sky.

The raging winds were suffocating, the pouring rain was blinding,, and an intense pressure pressed down upon the white-robed man’s sea god avatar.

This is a good chance.

Qiu Hai, who was lying on the ground, shot towards Black Dragon. He reached out to grab Black Dragon by the scruff of the latter’s shirt, then began to run away without looking back.

“You want to leave?” the white-robed man reached towards Qiu Hai’s position with the avatar’s hand without any hesitation at a speed far quicker than Qiu Hai was running away.

Bang.

Just as the hand was about to catch Qiu Hai, the hand hit an invisible barrier.

“Master of the Law, thank you for your help,” Qiu Hai bowed deeply towards the young girl.

“Leave,” she said expressionlessly.

Qiu Hai nodded, then raced off.

At the same time, the white-robed man’s expression turned cold. He glared at the young girl, “He isn’t someone who should be in these Three Realms either.”

“But he didn’t break the rules.”

...

Back in the subdimension’s battlefield.

Since Ye Zichen’s sword strike was way too fast, the Fire Cloud Sect Leader’s lifeforce did not disperse after he was chopped in half. As his two halves fell onto the ground, a look of confusion rose on his face.

How...

He screamed out in his mind, but he was unable to utter any sound.

He could only silently feel his life force disperse and gaze grudgingly and helplessly at the young man standing in the gold pillar of light.

Am I going to die?

The thought surfaced in his mind. All of a sudden, long forgotten memories hidden in the depths of his soul seemed to play out in front of his eyes.

He thought back to a thousand years ago before he established the Fire Cloud Gate. He had friends back then. He did not have the

ambition he does now. Back then, he was just like a normal person like any other in the Immortal Region...

He grew up listening to the stories of the Yellow Emperor. He admired the Yellow Emperor as his idol.

However... people will change.

A drop of tear flowed down the corner of his eyes and landed in the pool of blood.

This must be what it feels like to die.

But, for some reason, he wanted to laugh...

Perhaps, dying will be easier.

What's more, at least I died by the hands of the person I admired for half my life.

The Fire Cloud Sect Master's life force fully dispersed with that final thought.

Ye Zichen, who was holding the Xuan-Yuan Sword, looked indifferently at the Fire Cloud Sect Master, whose soul was dispersing, then cast his gaze over to Great Emperor Yonghe.

"Since you worked so hard for the Immortal Region for so many years, I can let you choose how you want to die!"

"I guess you have finally awoken as the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, right?" Great Emperor Yonghe smiled calmly. However, he wasn't actually feeling so calm.

The awakened reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, and the complete Xuan-Yuan Sword...

Even if Ye Zichen had not yet absorbed everything the Yellow Emperor was capable of in the past, it would still be simple for him to squish Great Emperor Yonghe dead like a bug.

"You've got a problem with that?" Ye Zichen replied calmly.

"There must be a lot of terrible memories, right? For example,

when you were forced into the cycle of samsara.”

The sharp edge of Xuan-Yuan Sword trembled slightly. Indeed, the moment he awakened, Ye Zichen found out about the truth behind the Yellow Emperor reincarnating.

Reincarnating so that the Immortal Region could have an Immortal King? That was bullshit.

Great Emperor Yonghe smirked when he noticed the change in Ye Zichen. “Ye Zichen, since you remembered your helplessness back then, then why fight for the Immortal Region? They are a bunch of hypocritical and self-righteous people. They chose to discard you when you were in danger. Did anyone say anything speak up for you? Even the big brother Suiren chose to stay silent.”

“Then what do you think I should do? Work with the Demon Realm and betray the Three Realms?” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but sneer.

“It isn’t betrayal. It is merely a choice for survival. It’s like how they chose to discard you back then for survival. Why not work with us? Although you had a grudge the demons in the past, the grudge should have washed away in time.”

“Work with us. The God Realm definitely noticed the Xuan-Yuan Sword drawn. Do you want the disaster from back then to repeat? It was already difficult for you to successfully reincarnate. Are you going to wait for the ones from the God Realm to descend and get forced into the cycle of samsara by them once again?” Great Emperor Yonghe said with sincerity.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but shake his head with a laugh, “Oh wow. Not bad! I was nearly convinced by you!”

Chapter 699 – Publicizing His Identity

“Foolishness, this is just foolishness!” Great Emperor Yonghe scolded, and cracked the jade tablet he was holding with the hand behind his back.

The situation was already out of his control. He needed backup.

Not long after that, the rest of the traitors all hurried over. When they saw the Fire Cloud Sect Master, who had been hacked in half, they felt their eyes twitch.

“The fire geezer’s dead.”

At the same time, the people they were fighting also hurried over.

Since the traitors had acted way too suddenly, many of the heavyweights of the Immortal Region were severely injured. Despite that, they still held on and continued to fight the traitors.

“You traitors!” the one who felt hurt the most was Lin Xiyi, the City Lord of the Hundred Flowers City. She clenched her fists tightly as she glared at the Xiao Yao, who stood calmly beside Yonghe, with bloodshot eyes.

“Think about how Zizhao and I treated you, as well as your family... You actually treated him so!?”

Tears flowed down from her eyes. Ye Zichen glanced over and saw that Zhao Zizhao had several rather apparent wounds on him. His face was also stark white, and was only standing through Lin Xiyi’s support.

The rest were in a similar state as they glared at the traitors in front of them.

Some of the traitors were even the ones that were closest to them.

“Wow, there’s plenty of you here. I can see that it was an

organized crime,” Ye Zichen smiled, then looked towards Great Emperor Yonghe. “Are you trying to go for a last ditch fight by calling them all over?”

“No,” Great Emperor Yonghe shook his head, then looked up and called loudly. “Everyone’s here. Take us away.”

Someone’s there! Ye Zichen was shocked. He looked up and saw that someone had suddenly ripped through the subdimension. A huge mirage of a gigantic demon appeared and wrapped itself around Yonghe and the other traitors.

“Trying to leave? Don’t even think about it! Freeze!”

Ye Zichen used the Body-Freezing Technique.

The demonic figure suddenly stopped. Qiu Hai, who had come to rescue Yonghe and the rest was confused.

Why did it stop moving?

Since everything happened far too suddenly, he did not immediately use his elysian energy to shatter the strange technique.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen immediately hacked at the giant demon’s arm without any hesitation.

The sword sliced the demon’s arm off very cleanly. It howled loudly, but when Ye Zichen tried to slice it a second time...

It disappeared.

The gigantic demon disappeared. Great Emperor Yonghe and the other traitors also disappeared.

They ran away. Ye Zichen glanced at the crack in space. They should have left from here.

I didn’t expect the Body-Freezing Technique to hold them for long, but that was the complete and proper version of the technique.

I could actually freeze Luo Wei for more than a second. I didn't expect it to be instantly dispelled when I used it on Qiu Hai's avatar.

So it really was because of our difference in strength?

Ye Zichen looked down. The giant demon arm he chopped off was still there. He flew over, but when he touched the arm...

The humongous arm turned into the size of a normal person's.

Qiu Hai's?

Buzz...

At that moment, there was another fluctuation in the area.

Ye Zichen subconsciously gripped Xuan-Yuan Sword tightly, and spread out his spiritual consciousness. "Who is it!?"

"Little friend Ye, how have you been?" a loud chuckle sounded out in the air. Not long later, a middle-aged man wearing a white robe appeared.

His appearance caused many of the onlookers to mutter amongst themselves...

"Don't you feel like he looks awfully familiar?"

"Yeah, he really does."

"Wait, isn't he the sacred land's Flame Emperor?"

"Stop joking around, how could the Flame Emperor..." someone wanted to mock, but immediately stuttered. "He really does l-look like the F-Fl-Flame Emperor!"

"Flame Emperor? It really is the Flame Emperor!"

Just as the civilians were being surprised by the Flame Emperor's appearance, an elder wearing clothes made out of animal skin.

"Congratulations for successfully reincarnating," the elder couldn't help but cup his hands as he walked in front of Ye Zichen.

“Suiren! That is Suiren!”

Whoosh.

As more and more people appeared in the subdimension, they all walked in front of Ye Zichen, causing the onlookers to be completely confused.

These people were the ones who stood at the top of the sacred land of the Immortal Region. Civilians from the outer region would may only see them in several thousand or ten thousand years.

But... so many of them came.

“Why does Brother Ye know so many of them...” Ruan Qingtian was shocked. He never underestimated Ye Zichen, but he never expected Ye Zichen to know so many heavyweights.

“Brother Yellow Emperor, congratulations on your successful reincarnation,” Flame Emperor said sincerely.

“Ahh, I forgot there are others here,” Flame Emperor raised his hand to put up a sound barrier, but it was already too late.

The people around were no normal people, so they naturally heard Flame Emperor’s words.

Yellow Emperor.

Ye Zichen is the Yellow Emperor!

The onlookers couldn’t stay calm anymore, and those who have a good relationship with Ye Zichen like Zuo Mo, Ruan Qingtian and Xue Qi were completely dumbfounded.

“Kid Ye is a-actually...” Stone stuttered as he looked at Ye Zichen, who was surrounded by the higher ups of the Immortal Region. He reached out and yanked Xue Qi. “Did I hear it wrongly? Ye...”

“How would I know?” Xue Qi was confused as well. He could not imagine that he was actually acting like a brother to the Yellow Emperor.

The onlookers all gazed towards Ye Zichen with intent looks!

Yellow Emperor!

That was a person like a legend to them. Everybody in the Immortal Region grew up listening to stories of the Yellow Emperor.

“Alright, stop standing here like idiots,” at that moment, Great Emperor Qingming stood forth. “We were heavily injured by the traitors. This is just the beginning of our war with the demons, more severe problems lay ahead. You guys are all hurt, so hurry up and get yourselves treated.”

“Great Emperor,” someone in the crowds stood forth. Great Emperor Qingming looked towards the person before the person continued. “You are one of the greatest people in the Immortal Region. You should know a bit more. Is Master Ye... truly the Yellow Emperor?”

The other onlookers all looked over intently. Great Emperor Qingming gazed towards Ye Zichen, then nodded with a smile, “Yes.”

There was no point of hiding it any more. Instead of hiding it, it was better to just tell everyone and help improve their morale.

“He really is the Yellow Emperor!”

A lot of the people smiled when they heard the confirmation, and some even started to dance.

“He is the Yellow Emperor. Alright, you guys heard you want to. Now go and get yourselves treated. With the Yellow Emperor here, we will definitely achieve victory in our coming battle with the demons!”

“Victory!”

The crowds cheered.

The Yellow Emperor!

That was who they believed in!

Chapter 700 – Who permitted you to sit?

“The title of the number one primordial divine artifact really wasn’t just for show.” Qiu Hai leaned on a boulder in the outer regions of the Immortal Region. He had really lost his right arm.

“Senior, should we reconsider everything? Our enemy is far too strong, if we still choose to recklessly make a move...” Black Dragon finally realized how ridiculous his plans were after witnessing the white-robed man’s strength. The helplessness he felt earlier was still fresh in his mind, and his body trembled just thinking about it.

“We indeed need to reconsider everything more carefully,” Qiu Hai nodded. “But don’t worry too much. Since the Master of the Law has descended, that is definitely someone he cannot match. As the Xuan-Yuan Sword has finally appeared, I must return to the Demon Realm and report it to our masters. I’ll let you decide how everything will be handled here.”

Black Dragon looked towards the distance...

A series of explosions could be seen. It was clear that the white-robed man was locked in combat with the Master of the Law.

“Time is of the essence. I can’t stay here any longer. The God Realm might have already made a move. I have to hurry back. It will be terrible for us if Xuan-Yuan Sword falls into those hypocritical bastards from the God Realm,” with that, a spiritual formation appeared underneath Qiu Hai before he swiftly disappeared.

“What should we do?” Great Emperor Yonghe and co. couldn’t help but ask when Qiu Hai left. Their act has ended in the failure, now, the entirety of the Three Realms knows that they are traitors, so they could only become closer to Black Dragon’s side.

“We’ll take it a step at a time. You left the spy behind?” Black

Dragon shook his head. Ever since he saw how strong the white-robed man was, his confidence in taking over the Three Realms had once more wavered.

“Yes, since nobody will notice that Zhao Zizhao’s on our side.”

“That’s good. Let’s go back,” Black Dragon shook his hand weakly, then looked towards Pool City again.

Master of the Law, you must win!

...

The sudden internal revolt had caught Ye Zichen and co. completely off guard. Fortunately, they didn’t suffer too many losses.

What’s more, the morale within the subdimension had become far greater after they found out about the return of the Yellow Emperor.

Within a hall in the subdimension...

The higher ups of the Immortal Region sat down, and Ye Zichen sat at the center most position.

He held Xuan-Yuan Sword in his hands as he looked expressionlessly around. The surrounding people all lowered their heads when they felt his gaze.

The truth was that Ye Zichen didn’t have too great of an impression of the Immortal Region to begin with.

In fact, his impression of the Immortal Region couldn’t get any more terrible after remembering the memories of the past.

“I wonder what did you come here for? My humble home isn’t enough to house such great people like you!” Ye Zichen laughed in a slightly mocking manner.

The expressions of the other people in the room immediately stiffened.

Fortunately, Suiren broke the awkwardness, “Brother Yellow Emperor, why do you say that? We naturally came here to congratulate you.”

“Don’t you Yellow Emperor me this, Yellow Emperor me that. I have my own name. It’s Ye Zichen,” Ye Zichen pursed his lips.

“Yellow Emperor, watch your tongue when you speak to Big Brother Suiren,” a man with a hook nose suddenly blurted out.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, “You, who could only stand on the side, has the right to sit now? Were you telling me what to do? Do you think that you have the right to be equal to me just because you were permitted to sit?”

A faint pressure was released from Ye Zichen’s body. The hook nose man wanted to endure it for a while, but in less than a second, he lowered his head and stood up from the chair.

“You, you, you and you... who gave you the right to sit!?”

As Ye Zichen pointed at the group, they all begun to stand up. They are the mightiest existences in the Immortal Region. However, they were merely children in face of the Yellow Emperor.

“This feels more like the past!” Ye Zichen nodded in satisfaction. “Why aren’t Fuxi and my juniors here?”

“Fuxi has not been in the sacred land recently, while Zhuanxu and the others are remaining on guard in the sacred land of the Immortal Region just in case demons attack,” Suiren replied.

“They are still so careful even after so long. It is just like back then,” Ye Zichen smiled mockingly.

Suiren’s expression drastically changed. He understood very well just what Ye Zichen was referring to.

He really remembers everything!

“Brother Yellow Emperor...”

“I will say it one final time. My name is Ye Zichen, and not the Yellow Emperor you keep calling me. Of course, I am not the sort of person to focus on old grudges. Let bygones be bygones. I don’t want to, and can’t be bothered, to deal with you all for that.”

“Brother Yellow Emperor is truly righteous,” Suiren smiled.

“Stop flattering me. Honestly, I have no good impression of the Immortal Region at all. Do you understand that?” Ye Zichen stood up from his chair with a shake of his head, then pointed outside the room. “I allowed you to sit here for a while because I’m giving face to Brother Flame Emperor. Now, you have seen all you need to, and congratulated the one you needed to. Leave!”

“About this...”

“So you want me to walk you out?”

Xuan-Yuan Sword vibrated intensely in its sheath. Seeing that, the surrounding people all shrunk their necks, cupped their hands towards Ye Zichen, then left.

“Although you have awakened as the reincarnation, you are still not the same person,” the white-robed Flame Emperor walked in front of Ye Zichen, and patted Ye Zichen on the shoulder. “I couldn’t stop Brother Yellow Emperor from going into the cycle of reincarnation back then, but during this life, even if I have to use my life, I will protect you. Little Friend Ye, please do not tarnish the name of the Yellow Emperor, and the might of Xuan-Yuan Sword.”

“Don’t worry. I will tell you on behalf of the Yellow Emperor. He has never once regretted becoming your sworn brother.”

Flame Emperor’s eyes teared up.

He nodded heavily, patted Ye Zichen on the shoulder, then left the subdimension without saying anything else.

“Yellow Emperor and Flame Emperor’s relationship was very good back then, but...” Xuan-Yuan Sword’s spirit, Xuan-Yuan

Xiang came out of the sword. Ye Zichen glanced at her and felt a bit nostalgic. They haven't seen each other in quite some time.

“Why are you looking at me like that?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang subconsciously took a step back when she felt Ye Zichen's gaze. “Oh yeah, you should have remembered everything by now, right? I mean, all of the memories of your past lives?”

Ye Zichen nodded.

He did remember. He was able to remember everything now.

Yet, for some reason, the memories only made him turn silent!

Table of Contents

[Red Packet Server](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 601 – Bribery and Threats](#)

[Chapter 602 – Delay](#)

[Chapter 603 – Unable to Withstand Even a Single Blow](#)

[Chapter 604 – Unchangeable History](#)

[Chapter 605 – Escaping from the Demon Realm](#)

[Chapter 606 – A Love-Hate Relationship](#)

[Chapter 607 – The Same Scent](#)

[Chapter 608 – Should I understand?](#)

[Chapter 609 – The Great Sage’s gossip](#)

[Chapter 610 – Leisure House](#)

[Chapter 611 – Zuo Zhencai](#)

[Chapter 612 – The City Lord’s Son](#)

[Chapter 613 – Bloodthirsty Old Man](#)

[Chapter 614 – Battling a Sky Immortal](#)

[Chapter 615 – Blood Zombie](#)

[Chapter 616 – Poisoned](#)

[Chapter 617 – Establishing Dominance](#)

[Chapter 618 – Chancellor of the Grand Secretariat](#)

[Chapter 619 – Red Packet](#)

[Chapter 620 – The System’s Malteser](#)

[Chapter 621 – Must Kill](#)

[Chapter 622 – Three Pairs of Wings](#)

[Chapter 623 – We'll Go Back](#)

[Chapter 624 – The Miraculous Dragon Balls](#)

[Chapter 625 – Divine Stone](#)

[Chapter 626 – Mu Chengtian's Visit](#)

[Chapter 627 – I'm telling you, don't even take a single step forward](#)

[Chapter 628 – Cronyism](#)

[Chapter 629 – God](#)

[Chapter 630 – Apology](#)

[Chapter 631 – Cliché](#)

[Chapter 632 – Battling Youmuu](#)

[Chapter 633 – A Life of a Dream](#)

[Chapter 634 – Shattering the Dream](#)

[Chapter 635 – Liu Qing's Change](#)

[Chapter 636 – Engagement](#)

[Chapter 637 – Yin Xiong's Provocation](#)

[Chapter 638 – One Hit](#)

[Chapter 639 – Going to the Sacred Land](#)

[Chapter 640 – Daoist Temple Disciple](#)

[Chapter 641 – Herb Harvesting](#)

[Chapter 642 – Trial Nulled](#)

[Chapter 643 – Not Quite According to Plan](#)

[Chapter 644 – The Yellow Emperor's Reincarnation has no presence](#)

[Chapter 645 – Cui Twelve's Invitation](#)

[Chapter 646 - Liu Qing's Letter.](#)

[Chapter 647 – Damn Rules](#)

[Chapter 648 – The Great Sacred Emperor comes](#)

[Chapter 649 – Third Fatty Leads an Army](#)

[Chapter 650 – Battle](#)

[Chapter 651 – Rescue](#)

[Chapter 652 – Identity](#)

[Chapter 653 – Completely Messed Up](#)

[Chapter 654 – None of them are commoners](#)

[Chapter 655 – Prediction](#)

[Chapter 656 – Chaos is Coming](#)

[Chapter 657 – Hero](#)

[Chapter 658 – Argument](#)

[Chapter 659 – The Herb Garden Underneath the Cliff](#)

[Chapter 660 – Herbman](#)

[Chapter 661 – The System’s Arrangement](#)

[Chapter 662 – Meeting of the Immortal Region’s Higher Ups](#)

[Chapter 663 – Repeat of History](#)

[Chapter 664 – The Herbman is Mine](#)

[Chapter 665 – Who can do anything to me!?](#)

[Chapter 666 – Two Immortal Kings](#)

[Chapter 667 – Timing](#)

[Chapter 668 – Retreat in order to advance](#)

[Chapter 669 – Qiu Yuan’s Strength](#)

[Chapter 670 – Before the War I](#)

[Chapter 671 – Before the War II](#)

[Chapter 672 – Before the War III](#)

[Chapter 673 – Before the War IV](#)

[Chapter 674 – Chaos has Come](#)

[Chapter 675 – Your King Has Returned!](#)

[Chapter 676 – Changing Sides and Betrayal](#)

[Chapter 677 – They Are Unworthy](#)

[Chapter 678 – A Slight Problem with the Script](#)

[Chapter 679 – The Two Clowns](#)

[Chapter 680 – Traitor](#)

[Chapter 681 – Bi'an](#)

[Chapter 682 – Sky Supreme Liu Qing](#)

[Chapter 683 – Think up a plan](#)

[Chapter 684 – Qiu Yuan's story](#)

[Chapter 685 – Going to Pool City](#)

[Chapter 686 – Personal Feelings and Greater Good](#)

[Chapter 687 – The Fall of Qiu Hai](#)

[Chapter 688 – Let the game begin!](#)

[Chapter 689 – Master Yao](#)

[Chapter 690 – Qiu Hai is alive again](#)

[Chapter 691 – Qiu Yuan makes a move](#)

[Chapter 692 – Revolts](#)

[Chapter 693 – Mental Warfare](#)

[Chapter 694 – Arrogance!](#)

[Chapter 695 – King!](#)

[Chapter 696 – Secret](#)

[Chapter 697 – True Strength of the White-Robed Man](#)

[Chapter 698 – The Law Appears](#)

[Chapter 699 – Publicizing His Identity](#)

[Chapter 700 – Who permitted you to sit?](#)